

**The author(s) shown below used Federal funds provided by the U.S. Department of Justice and prepared the following final report:**

**Document Title:** **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence: Final Technical Report**

**Author(s):** **Mary Ann Dutton ; Lisa Goodman ; R. James Schmidt**

**Document No.:** **214438**

**Date Received:** **June 2006**

**Award Number:** **2001-WT-BX-0503**

**This report has not been published by the U.S. Department of Justice. To provide better customer service, NCJRS has made this Federally-funded grant final report available electronically in addition to traditional paper copies.**

**Opinions or points of view expressed are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the official position or policies of the U.S. Department of Justice.**

**Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure  
for Intimate Partner Violence**

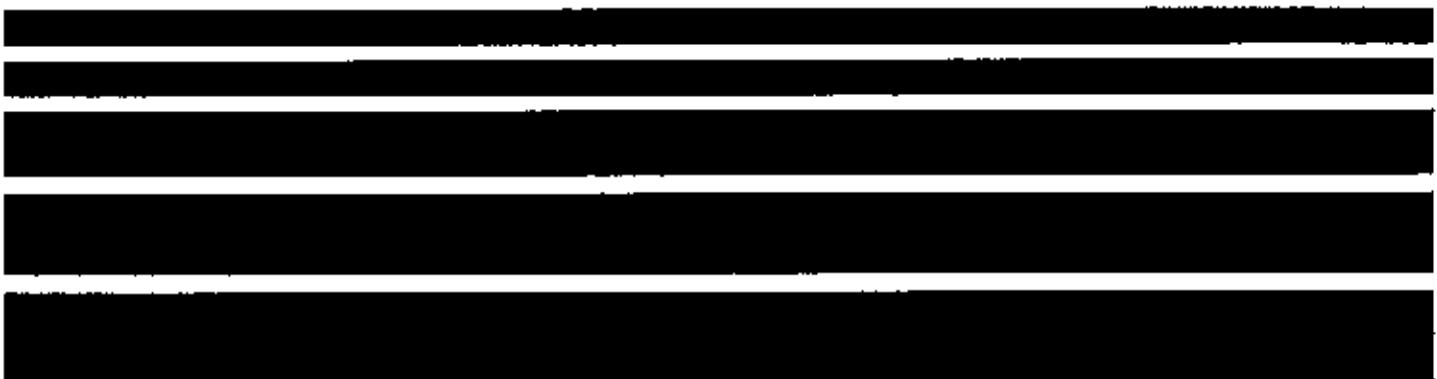
**FINAL TECHNICAL REPORT**

**Mary Ann Dutton  
Lisa Goodman  
R. James Schmidt**

**December 30, 2005**

Prepared for:

**National Institute of Justice  
Office of Justice Programs  
U.S. Department of Justice  
810 Seventh Street, NW  
Washington, DC 20531**

A large rectangular area of the page is completely blacked out with a thick marker, obscuring several lines of text that would normally be present here.

**COSMOS  
CORPORATION**

**Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure  
for Intimate Partner Violence**

**Final Technical Report**

Mary Ann Dutton  
Lisa Goodman  
R. James Schmidt

December 30, 2005

Submitted by:

COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 400  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814

Prepared for:

National Institute of Justice  
Office of Justice Programs  
U.S. Department of Justice  
810 Seventh Street, NW  
Washington, DC 20531

## Acknowledgements

---

The authors wish to thank the following individuals for their support during this study: our National Institute of Justice project monitors, Leora Rosen, Ph.D., M.P.H. and Bernard Auchter; staff of the Violence Against Women Office; and members of our advisory panel—Joyce Chung, M.D., Sarah Cook, Ph.D., Walter DeKeseredy, Ph.D., Ed Gondolf, Ed.D., Michael Johnson, Ph.D., Lucy Laufe, Ph.D., Leslye Orloff, J.D., Sue Osthoff, Rose Pulliam, M.S.W., and Rachel Rodriguez, Ph.D.

The authors gratefully acknowledge the assistance of the many professionals in the field of intimate partner violence who reviewed the study instrument, as well as the hundreds of men and women who shared their personal experiences with coercive control and intimate partner violence with the study team. Their contribution is the cornerstone of this study.

The authors would also like to thank other persons who contributed to the completion of the project and the report—from COSMOS Corporation: Aileen Worrell, Darci Terrell, Oscar Espinosa, Alissa Fujimoto, Katherine Page, Bob Johnson, Nyala Watkins, Maren Nyer, Ada Cruz, and Elizabeth Circo; from Boston College: Rachel Latta, Amanda Bohlig, Sarah Weintraub, Lauren Gentile, Jay Morrison, and Gloria Pearce.

This project was supported by Grant Number 2001-WT-BX-0503 awarded by the National Institute of Justice, Office of Justice Programs, U.S. Department of Justice. Points of view in this document are those of the authors and do not necessarily represent the official position or policies of the U.S. Department of Justice.

## **Note**

---

This is a technical report of the methods and procedures used in the development of the coercive control measure. Scientific reports of findings of the study are currently being submitted to other professional publications.

## CONTENTS

Section	Page
<b>Acknowledgements .....</b>	<b>i</b>
<b>Abstract.....</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>Executive Summary .....</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>1. Introduction to the Study.....</b>	<b>1</b>
1.1 Description of the Problem.....	1
1.2 Conceptualization of Power in Social Relationships .....	3
1.3 Conceptualization and Measurement of Coercion in IPV.....	4
1.4 Description of the Study Goals and Objectives .....	5
<b>2. Study Design and Methodology.....</b>	<b>6</b>
2.1 Study Design .....	6
2.2 Study Phase 1: Development of a Conceptual Model of Coercive Control.....	10
2.2.1 Literature Review .....	10
2.2.2 Initial Development of the Conceptual Model of Coercive Control .....	11
2.2.3 Ethnographic Data Collection.....	12
2.3 Study Phase 2: Development of the Coercive Control Survey .....	15
2.3.1 Development of the Coercive Control Measure .....	15
2.3.2 Consensus Ratings of the Draft Coercive Control Measure .....	16
2.3.3 Development of the Coercive Control Survey .....	20
2.4 Study Phase 3: Testing the New Measure of Coercive Control .....	23
2.4.1 Recruitment and Training for Survey Administrators .....	23
2.4.2 Survey Administration Sites and On-Site Respondent Recruitment .....	24
2.4.3 Administration of the Coercive Control Survey and In-depth Interview Protocol .....	26
2.4.4 Tracking and Processing Completed Survey Materials .....	28
2.4.5 Raffle Procedures.....	28
2.4.6 Electronic Data Scanning.....	30
2.5 Study Phase 4: Data Analysis.....	30
2.5.1 Item Analysis .....	31
2.5.2 Scale Analysis.....	31
<b>3. Results of the Study.....</b>	<b>32</b>
3.1 Development of Coercion Related Measures.....	32
3.1.1 Demands .....	32
3.1.2 Surveillance .....	33
3.1.3 Coercion.....	33
3.1.4 Involvement of Third Party.....	34
3.1.5 Response to Coercion—Respondent .....	34
3.2 Psychometric Validity of Coercion Measure.....	35

3.3 Preliminary Test of Gender and Perpetrator/Victim Differences in Coercion-Related Measures .....	35
3.4 Dissemination .....	35
<b>References.....</b>	<b>36</b>

## **Exhibits**

1-1 Johnson's Typology of IPV.....	3
2-1 Nested Ecological Model of Intimate Partner Violence.....	6
2-2 Coercive Control Survey: Breakdown of Response by Site, Gender, and Victim/Perpetrator Status .....	8
2-3 Respondent Recruitment by Site .....	8
2-4 Sample Characteristics .....	9
2-5 Search Terms Utilized for Literature Search at PyschINFO .....	11
2-6 Description of Ethnographic Interview Participants .....	13
2-7 Number of Interviews with Professionals.....	14
2-8 Sample Screen Shots from the On-line Version of the Consensus Rating Survey: Instruction and Definition Pages .....	19
2-9 Sample Screen Shots from the On-line Version of the Consensus Rating Survey: Section A—Partner's Expectation Or Demands .....	20
2-10 Procedures for Electronically Scanning Survey Data via TeleForm.....	30

## **Appendices**

- A. Advisory Panel and Project Team Members
- B. What The Literature (and Categories of Literature) Tell Us: The In-Depth Overview
- C. Synopsis of Listserv Discussion on the Conceptual Framework for the Development Of a Coercive Control Measure
- D. Materials from the Ethnographic Interviews
- E. Materials from the Interviews with Professionals
- F. Potential Constructs to Assess in Interview
- G. Development of Coercive Control Measure: Conceptual Framework and Model
- H. Materials from the Advisory Panel Meeting
- I. Transmittal E-Mail and Consensus Rating Survey
- J. Coercive Control Survey, In-depth Interview Protocol, and Consent Forms
- K. Training Materials for Survey Administration
- L. Letters to Court Stakeholders
- M. Dissemination Products

## **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence**

### **Abstract**

#### **Project Goals and Objectives**

Two decades of research on intimate partner violence (IPV) have failed to resolve the controversy concerning gender symmetry. Based on the position by advocates and the work of Johnson (2000) and others, it seems clear that the notion of nonviolent coercive control should be included in future work on typologies of IPV. However, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of IPV are hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control; and 2) there exists no adequate measure of “nonviolent coercive control” for IPV.

The overall goal of this project was to address the issues raised above in the development of a measure of nonviolent coercive control for use in the measurement of IPV. Specific objectives were: 1) to develop a conceptual model of coercive control; 2) to develop an ecologically and statistically valid instrument to measure coercive control; 3) to evaluate psychometric properties of the coercive control measure; and 4) to conduct a preliminary test of the usefulness of the measure for validating Johnson’s (2000) typology of IPV.

#### **Research Design and Methodology**

The study team developed a conceptual model of coercive control (Objective 1) by conducting a comprehensive literature review and refining the model through collaboration with a panel of experts. An ecologically and statistically valid measure of nonviolent coercive control was developed (Objective 2) by using ethnographic and classical test theory methodologies to construct the measure. The psychometric properties of the newly developed coercive control measure (Objective 3) were assessed in a total sample ( $n = 757$ ) that included both males ( $n = 302$ ) and females ( $n = 448$ ), those reporting IPV victimization only ( $n = 139$ ), IPV perpetration only ( $n = 39$ ), both IPV victimization and perpetration ( $n = 245$ ), and neither IPV victimization nor perpetration ( $n = 334$ ) (see Exhibit 2-2). Respondents were recruited from community agencies involving identified IPV victims and perpetrators, agencies providing non-IPV services to demographically similar participants, community college settings, and general public community settings. A preliminary test of Johnson’s (2000) typology of IPV (Objective 4) was conducted using data from the validation groups.

#### **Conclusions**

Psychometric analysis of Coercion, Demand, Surveillance, and Response scales found evidence for hypothesized factors. Convergent and predictive validity of the Coercion measure was also found.

#### **Reference**

Johnson, M.P., and Kathleen J. Ferraro, “Research on Domestic Violence in the 1990s: Making Distinctions,” *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, November 2000, 62(4):948-963.

## **Executive Summary**

## **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence**

### **Executive Summary**

#### **Introduction**

For decades now, battered women's advocates have placed the notion of coercive control squarely at the center of their analysis of intimate partner violence (IPV). Indeed, they have defined IPV as a "pattern of coercive control" (Pence and Paymar, 1993) in which the batterer asserts his power over the victim through the use of threats, as well as actual violence. Violence is simply a tool, within this framework, that the perpetrator uses to gain greater power in the relationship in order to deter or trigger specific behaviors, win arguments, or demonstrate dominance (Dobash and Dobash, 1992). Other tools might include isolation, intimidation, threats, withholding of necessary resources such as money or transportation, and abuse of the children, other relatives, or even pets. Explaining the Duluth Model, a widely used batterer treatment program, Pence (1993), one of its founders, wrote that the program "assumes battering is not an individual pathology or mental illness but rather just one part of a system of abusive and violent behaviors to control the victim for the purposes of the abuser" (p. 30). And, in an eloquent description of "battered women's" responses, Stark (1995) wrote:

*Physical violence may not be the most significant factor about most battering relationships. In all probability, the clinical profile revealed by battered women reflects the fact that they have been subjected to an ongoing strategy of intimidation, isolation, and control that extends to all areas of a woman's life, including sexuality; material necessities; relations with family, children, and friends; and work. Sporadic, even severe violence makes this strategy of control effective. But the unique profile of "the battered woman" arises as much from the deprivation of liberty implied by coercion and control as it does from violence-induced trauma (p. 987).*

Yet, despite this common assumption, borne out every day in the horrific stories told by battered women throughout the country, surprisingly little work has been done to conceptualize and measure the key construct of coercive control. In the absence of a clear conceptualization, measures of coercion, usually embedded within broader measures of psychological abuse, are neither comprehensive nor internally consistent. Researchers have variously included behaviors ranging from verbal put-downs to intimidation to kidnapping under the rubric of coercion. For a number of reasons, detailed below, the need for a tighter conceptualization and operationalization of this notion has gained new urgency in recent years.

First, despite over two decades of research on intimate partner violence (IPV), controversy concerning "gender symmetry," or the relative use of violence by men vs. women is more heated than ever. This controversy has come to a head recently, as more and more women are being arrested in cases that police officers perceive as "mutual violence." One tradition of research—mainly conducted by family researchers—has

consistently produced results indicating that women and men use violence at equal rates, and in some cases, women use violence more often (Straus and Gelles, 1990). Another body of research has demonstrated that men use violence, including homicide, against their female partners more often than women use violence against their male partners (Bachman and Saltzman, 1995) and that women's use of violence largely involves self-defense or fighting back (DeKeseredy et al., 1997; Saunders, 1986). Many researchers have pointed out that one reason (among many) for the absence of consensus on the relative use of violence by men vs. women is that measurement of violent acts alone cannot adequately characterize violence in intimate partner relationships (DeKeseredy and Schwartz, 1998; Dutton, 1996; Edleson and Tolman, 1992; Smith, Smith, and Earp, 1999; Yoshihama, 2000). Rather, it is necessary to understand the use of, and response to, IPV in the context of the relationship and the cultural, social, and institutional systems within which the perpetrator and victim live (Dutton, 1996; Edleson and Tolman, 1992). Central to this context is the role of coercion. Greater attention to the role of coercion would enable researchers to sort out gender differences in the very nature of topographically similar acts, as well as their effects on victims' psychological well-being and future behavior.

A second and related reason for the urgent need to conceptualize and measure coercive control in violent relationships is the growing interest in developing subtypes of intimate partner violence, rather than lumping them together under one common rubric. A rubric that would enable us to make better distinctions could be extremely useful in numerous arenas, including batterer treatment, risk assessment, and safety planning for victims. A leader in this effort, Johnson (Johnson and Ferraro, 2000) has noted that:

*Partner violence cannot be understood without acknowledging important distinctions among types of violence, motives of perpetrators, the social locations of both partners, and the cultural contexts in which violence occurs (p. 948).*

Three chief features of Johnson's typology are: 1) his consideration of the couple as the unit of analysis; 2) his inclusion of women's potential use of violence; and, most relevant for this paper, 3) his focus on the broader context of potential coercion and control in intimate partner relationships. Finally, and perhaps most urgently, the role of coercive control in IPV needs to be more thoroughly understood in the legal context. In that context, domestic violence is usually understood as a one-size-fits-all category, based on acts of assault alone without regard to the coercive context in which they occur. That is, the coercion in which an assault is imbedded helps to define its level of severity. Moreover, the role of coercive control in extracting criminal conduct is rarely considered in criminal cases (Colvin et al., 2001).

Much work needs to be done to bring the notion of coercion in IPV into the legal arena. Without attention to this critical element of IPV, legal actors hear only parts of the stories that victims bring them every day in court. A more discriminating understanding of the nature of specific IPV crimes, including the element of coercion, would help secure more appropriate sentencing, as well as treatment, for the perpetrators and more effective

safety planning for victims (Erskine, 1999). In this grant, we applied the social power model (Raven, 1993; Molm, 1997), particularly its characterization of coercion, to the conceptualization and measure development of coercive control in relationships involving intimate partner violence. The hypothesized theoretical model of coercion in intimate partner violence is illustrated in Exhibit 1. Coercive control in intimate partner violence is posited as a dynamic process linking a demand with a credible threatened negative consequence for noncompliance.

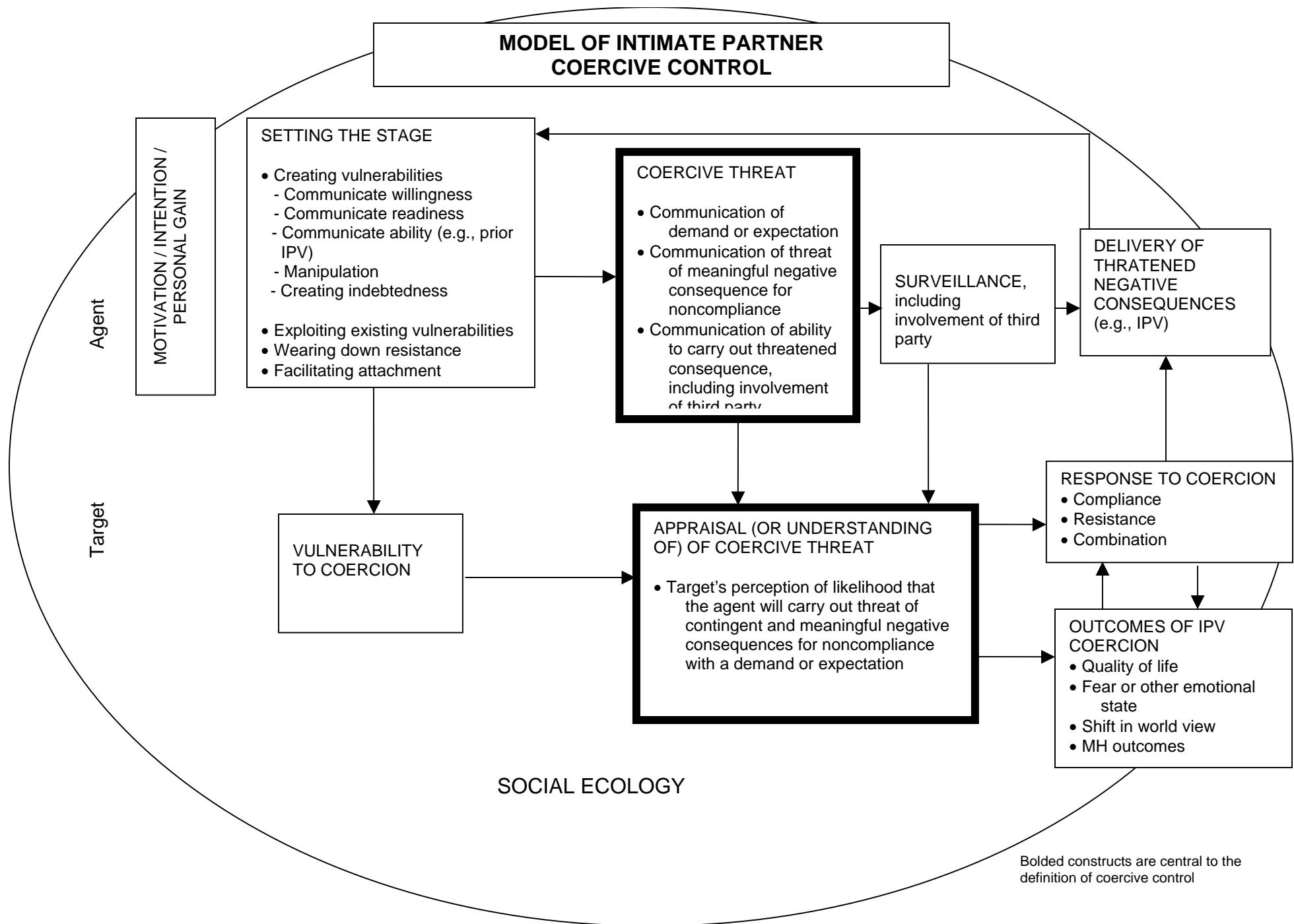
### **Measurement Of Coercion**

A multiple-step process, including ethnographic interviews, interviews with professionals, advisory panel, and expert consensus panel, was used to develop the measure of IPV coercion. The measurement of IPV coercion—consisting of three interrelated scales (demands, coercion, surveillance)—was developed as a set of new measures of coercion in intimate relationships.

Demands made by partner to respondent and demands made by respondent to partner were measured by two separate sets of 48 items. The hypothesized factor structure for demands was supported by confirmatory factor analysis. These factors represent the following nine subscales (see Exhibit 2):

1. Personal activities/Appearance
2. Support/Social life/Family
3. Household
4. Work/Economic/Resources
5. Health
6. Intimate relationship
7. Legal
8. Immigration
9. Children/Parenting

**Exhibit 1**



## Exhibit 2

### DEMAND ITEMS, BY SUBSCALE

Subscales	Demand Items
<b>Personal Activities/Appearance</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Leaving the house (e.g. not want you to leave)</li> <li>• Eating</li> <li>• Sleeping in certain places or at certain times</li> <li>• Wearing certain clothes</li> <li>• Maintaining a certain weight</li> <li>• Using TV, radio, or the internet</li> <li>• Viewing sexually explicit material</li> <li>• Bathing or using the bathroom</li> <li>• Answering the phone</li> <li>• Reading certain things</li> </ul>
<b>Support/Social Life/Family</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Talking on the phone</li> <li>• Spending time with friends or family members</li> <li>• Going to church, school, or other community activities</li> <li>• Talking to a counselor, clergy, or someone else about personal or family matters</li> <li>• Taking care of dependent relatives</li> <li>• Taking care of pets</li> </ul>
<b>Household</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Taking care of the house</li> <li>• Buying or preparing foods</li> <li>• Living in certain places</li> </ul>
<b>Work/Economic/ Resources</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Working</li> <li>• Spending money, using credit cards or bank accounts</li> <li>• Learning another language</li> <li>• Going to school</li> <li>• Using the car or truck</li> </ul>
<b>Health</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Using street drugs</li> <li>• Using alcohol</li> <li>• Going to the doctor</li> <li>• Taking medication or prescriptions drugs</li> </ul>
<b>Intimate Relationship</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Talking to your partner</li> <li>• Spending time with your partner</li> <li>• Separating or leaving the relationship</li> <li>• Having sex</li> <li>• Using birth control/condoms</li> <li>• Doing certain sexual behaviors</li> <li>• Having sex in exchange for money, drugs, or other things</li> <li>• Photographing you nude or while having sex</li> </ul>
<b>Legal</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Talking to police or lawyer</li> <li>• Doing things that are against the law</li> <li>• Carrying a gun or knife</li> <li>• Talking to child protection authorities</li> <li>• Talking to landlord or housing authorities</li> </ul>
<b>Immigration</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Filing citizenship papers</li> <li>• Talking to the immigration authorities</li> <li>• Immigration sponsorship</li> </ul>
<b>Children/Parenting</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Taking care of children</li> <li>• Disciplining the children</li> <li>• Making every day decisions about the children</li> <li>• Making important decisions about the children</li> </ul>

The core measure of IPV coercion, a 31-item coercion scale, consists of three subscales measuring threats contingent on noncompliance with demands made: threat of harm to agent (e.g., kill), threat of harm to self (e.g., suicide), and threat of harm to others (e.g., kidnap a child) (see Exhibit 3). The hypothesized factor structure for coercion was supported by confirmatory factory analysis.

### Exhibit 3

#### COERCION ITEMS, BY SUBSCALE

Subscales	Coercion Items
<b>Harm to You</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Say something mean, embarrassing or humiliating to you</li> <li>• Keep you from seeing or talking to family or friends</li> <li>• Tell someone else personal or private information about you</li> <li>• Keep you from leaving the house</li> <li>• Limit your access to transportation</li> <li>• Physically hurt you</li> <li>• Try to kill you</li> <li>• Scare you</li> <li>• Have sex with someone else</li> <li>• Leave the relationship or get a divorce</li> <li>• Not let you take medication</li> <li>• Put you in a mental hospital</li> <li>• Cause you to lose your job</li> <li>• Keep you from going to work</li> <li>• Cause you to lose your housing</li> <li>• Hurt you financially</li> <li>• Cause you legal trouble</li> <li>• Have you arrested</li> <li>• Threaten to have you deported</li> <li>• Force you to engage in unwanted sex acts</li> <li>• Force you to participate in or observe sex acts with others</li> <li>• Destroy legal papers</li> <li>• Destroy or take something that belongs to you</li> <li>• Physically hurt or kill your pet or other animal</li> <li>• Not let you see your child or take your children from you</li> </ul>
<b>Harm to Partner</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Threaten to commit suicide</li> <li>• Actually attempt to harm or kill himself/herself</li> </ul>
<b>Harm to Others</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Say something mean or hurtful to your friends or family members</li> <li>• Physically hurt a friend or family member</li> <li>• Try to kill a friend or family member</li> <li>• Destroy property of family members or friends</li> </ul>

The 13-item surveillance scale taps behaviors used to determine whether the agent in fact did what was demanded (see Exhibit 4). A hypothesized one-factor model was confirmed by confirmatory factor analysis.

#### **Exhibit 4**

#### **SURVEILLANCE ITEMS**

- Checked or opened your mail or personal papers/journal
- Kept track of telephone/cell phone use
- Called you on the phone
- Told you to carry a cell phone or pager
- Checked your clothing
- Checked the house
- Checked receipts/checkbook/bank statements
- Checked the car (odometer, where parked)
- Asked the children, neighbors, friends, family or coworkers
- Told you to report your behavior to him/her
- Used audio or video tape recorder
- Spied on, followed, or stalked you
- Your partner didn't need to check; your partner just acted like he/she knew

In addition, a response to coercion scale—a measure of behaviors used to respond to coercion (threats of harm) was developed. A hypothesized one-factor model was not supported by confirmatory factor analysis. Rather, two factors (direct response, indirect response) emerged in EFA as the best fitting model (see Exhibit 5).

#### **Exhibit 5**

#### **RESPONSE ITEMS, BY SUBSCALE**

<b>Indirect (n=11)</b>	<b>Direct (n=5)</b>
1 Did what your partner wanted, even though you didn't want to	8 Fought back physically
2 Refused to do what he/she said	9 Used/threatened to use a weapon against him/her
3 Tried to talk your partner out of wanting you to do it	14 Filed for a civil protection order
4 Lied about having done what your partner wanted	15 Called the police
5 Sought help from someone else	16 Tried to get criminal charges filed
6 Tried to distract your partner	
7 Tried to avoid him/her	
10 Left home to get away from him/her	
11 Ended (or tried to end) the relationship	
12 Argued back verbally	
13 Did nothing—just didn't do it	

## Methods

Seven hundred fifty-seven adults were participants in the study. Males and females from the metropolitan Washington, DC and Boston areas were included. Recruitment sites were selected in order to include individuals both who had and had not experienced IPV perpetration and IPV victimization (see Exhibit 6).

Selection criteria included the following: 1) involvement in an intimate partner relationship within the past 12 months, and 2) 18 years of age or older. Respondents were excluded if they exhibited signs of intoxication or other indications of a lack of coherence sufficient to complete the survey. Respondents were samples to maximize diversity. Respondent characteristics are summarized in (see Exhibit 7).

## Exhibit 6

### COERCIVE CONTROL SURVEY: BREAKDOWN OF RESPONSE BY SITE, GENDER, AND VICTIM /PERPETRATOR STATUS

Site	Gender	IPV-Victim	IPV-Perpetrator	Both <sup>1</sup>	Neither <sup>2</sup>	Total
Boston, MA	Male	21	6	36	42	105
	Female	33	7	68	49	157
	Missing	0	0	1	1	2
	Subtotal	<b>54</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>105</b>	<b>92</b>	<b>264</b>
Washington, DC	Male	27	12	57	101	197
	Female	58	13	80	140	291
	Missing	0	1	3	1	5
	Subtotal	<b>85</b>	<b>26</b>	<b>140</b>	<b>242</b>	<b>493</b>
<b>TOTAL</b>		<b>139</b>	<b>39</b>	<b>245</b>	<b>334</b>	<b>757</b>

<sup>1</sup>The respondent noted that they were both a victim and perpetrator of IPV.

<sup>2</sup>The respondent noted that they are neither a victim, nor perpetrator of IPV.

## Exhibit 7

### SAMPLE CHARACTERISTICS

Characteristic	Descriptive Statistics			
	N	%	M	SD
Age Range=17-80 years			31.0	11.4
Race/Ethnicity				
Missing	11	1.5		
African-American	392	51.8		
Caucasian	177	23.4		
Latino/Latina	91	12.0		
Asian-American or Pacific Islander	24	3.2		
American Indian	5	.7		
Other	29	3.8		
Mixed	28	3.7		
Born outside the U.S.	263	34.5		
Years in the U.S. (for those born outside the U.S.)			19.4	14.7
Parents of children				
No	275	37.9		
Number of children			1.6	1.8
Employment				
Full-time	213	28.1		
Part-time	125	16.5		
Unemployed	137	18.1		
Student	87	11.5		
Stay at home	42	5.5		
Retired	14	1.8		
Blank	15	2.0		
More than one category	100	14.0		
Federal or state public assistance				
No	509	71.0		
Education				
Less than 8th grade	26	3.5		
9th grade	21	2.8		
10th grade	47	6.3		
11th grade	55	7.4		
12th grade	189	25.3		
Trade school	43	5.8		
Some (or in) college	240	32.2		
2-yr degree	36	4.8		
4-yr degree	43	5.8		
Post-BA education	46	6.2		
Currently involved with intimate partner	461	62.3		
Relationship status				
Legally married	169	23.2		
Committed relationship	325	44.5		
Dating	131	17.9		
Casual relationship	105	14.4		
Living arrangement				
Living together	253	34.7		
Living together—off and on	74	10.1		
Living separately	403	55.2		

N=number

%=percentage

M=mean

SD=standard deviation

### **Validity Testing**

Data analysis provided strong support for convergent validity of the IPV coercion construct. Relationships between scores on the coercion scale and 1) demands, 2) surveillance, and 3) levels of IPV demonstrated convergent validity. Higher coercion was related to greater number of demands and surveillance tactics. Support for predictive validity was also found, based on associations between coercion scale scores and measures of posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), depression, IPV threat appraisal, and fear. Even when controlling for physical, sexual, and psychological IPV, evidence of predictive validity was maintained for PTSD, IPV threat appraisal, and fear, but not for depression. This provides support for the conclusion that the measure of coercion is specific to IPV, and does not reflect general emotional distress. These findings held when examined for both males and females separately.

## References

- Bachman, R., and L.E. Saltzman, *Violence Against Women: Estimates from the Redesigned Survey*, NCJ 154348, Bureau of Justice Statistics, U.S. Department of Justice, Washington, DC, 1995.
- Colvin, M., F. T. Cullen, and T. Vander Ven, "Coercion, Social Support, and Crime: An Emerging Theoretical Consensus," *Criminology*, 2001, 40(1):19-42.
- DeKeseredy, W.S. and M.D. Schwartz, "Measuring the Extent of Woman Abuse in Intimate Heterosexual Relationships: A Critique of the Conflict Tactics Scales," National Online Resource Center on Violence Against Women, February 1998.
- DeKeseredy, W.S., D.G. Saunders, M.D. Schwartz, and S. Alvi, "The Meanings and Motives for Women's Use of Violence in Canadian College Dating Relationships: Results from a National Survey," *Sociological Spectrum*, 1997, 17:199-222.
- Dobash, R., R. Dobash, M. Wilson, and M. Daly, "The Myth of Sexual Symmetry in Marital Violence," *Social Problems*, 1992, 39:71-91.
- Dutton, M.A., "Battered Women's Strategic Response to Violence: The Role of Context," in J.L. Edleson and Z.C. Eisikovits (eds.), *Future Interventions with Battered Women and Their Families*, Sage Publications, Newbury Park, California, 1996.
- Edelson, J.L., and R.M. Tolman, *Intervention for Men Who Batter: An Ecological Perspective*, Sage Publications, Newbury Park, California, 1992.
- Erskine, J., "If It Quacks Like a Duck: Recharacterizing Domestic Violence as Criminal Coercion," *Brooklyn Law Review*, 1999, 65:1207-1232.
- Johnson, M.P., and Kathleen J. Ferraro, "Research on Domestic Violence in the 1990s: Making Distinctions," *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, November 2000, 62(4):948-963.
- Molm, L. D., *Coercive Poser in Social Exchange*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom, 1997.
- Pence, E., and M. Paymar, *Power and Control: Tactics of Men Who Batter*, Minnesota Program Development, Inc., Duluth, Minnesota, 1986.
- Pence, E., and M. Paymar, *Education Groups for Men Who Batter: The Duluth model*, Springer Publishing Co, New York, NY, 1993.
- Raven, B. H., "The Bases of Power: Origins and Recent Developments, *Journal of Social Psychology*, 1993, 49(4):227-251.

Smith, P.H., J.B. Smith, and J.A. Earp, "Beyond the Measurement Trap: A Reconstructed Conceptualization and Measurement of Woman Battering," *Psychology of Women Quarterly*, 1999, 23(1):177-193.

Stark, E., "Re-Presenting Woman's Battering: From Battered Woman Syndrome to Coercive Control," *Albany Law Review*, 1995, 58:973-1026

Straus, M., and R. Gelles, *Violence in American Families: Risk Factors and Adaptions to Violence in 8,145 Families*, Transaction Publishers, New Brunswick, Canada, 1990.

Yoshihama, M., "Reinterpreting Strength and Safety in a Socio-cultural Context: Dynamics of Domestic Violence and Experiences of Women of Japanese Descent," *Children and Youth Services Review*, 2000, 22(3-4):207-229.

## **Final Technical Report**

## 1. INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY

### 1.1 Description of the Problem

**The Gender Symmetry Debate.** Two decades of research on intimate partner violence (IPV) have failed to resolve the controversy concerning gender symmetry. One tradition of research—mainly conducted by family researchers—has consistently produced results indicating that women and men use violence at equal rates, and in some cases, women use violence more often (Straus and Gelles, 1990). However, the studies of the severity of violent acts and resultant injury, even when the violent acts were topographically similar, have shown women to be the victims of more serious acts and to receive more serious injuries from their intimate partners than men (Cantos, Neidig, and O’Leary, 1994). Another body of research has demonstrated that men use violence, including homicide, against their female partners more often than women use violence against their male partners (Bachman and Saltzman, 1995) and that women’s use of violence largely involves self-defense or fighting back (DeKeseredy et al., 1997; Saunders, 1986).

Some researchers have suggested that methodological considerations, including the context in which questions about violence are constructed and the populations from which samples are selected, account for the differences between the findings (Archer, 2000; Bachman, 1998; Straus, 1999). Advocates and researchers alike have suggested that measurement of violent acts alone cannot adequately characterize IPV violence in intimate partner relationships (Campbell et al., 1998; DeKeseredy and Schwartz, 1998; Dutton, 1996; Edleson and Tolman, 1992; Smith, Smith, and Earp, 1999; Yoshihama, 2000). Rather, it is necessary to understand the use of, and response to, IPV in the context of the relationship and the cultural, social, and institutional systems within which the individual lives (Dutton, 1996; Edleson and Tolman, 1992). In a recent review of women’s use of violence in heterosexual relationships, Das Dasgupta (2001) concluded that to compartmentalize women’s motivations for engaging in IPV as either self-defense or retaliation fails to account for important proximal and distal antecedents as contexts that influence their behavior.

Additionally, Johnson (Johnson and Ferraro, 2000) argued that “partner violence cannot be understood without acknowledging important distinctions among types of violence, motives of perpetrators, the social locations of both partners, and the cultural contexts in which violence occurs.” Finally, a federal interagency workgroup (Saltzman and Fingerhut, 2000) recommended that “study methodologies should account for contextual issues surrounding the violence.”

**Coercion and Control.** With regard to IPV, perhaps the most critical contextual element is the extent of nonviolent coercion and control in the relationship. Historically, advocates have recognized the central role of coercion and control in violent relationships. Indeed, they have defined IPV as a “pattern of coercive control” (Pence and Paymar, 1986). However, the measurement of IPV in research has focused largely on violent and aggressive acts, and not on the coercive relationship context in which they may take place. The development of several measures of psychological abuse has advanced our understanding of the dynamics and impact of

IPV (O'Leary, 1999). However, many of these do not capture the unique characteristics of coercion.

Johnson (2000) proposed a new typology of IPV that may help to clarify and resolve the often-heated debate on gender symmetry in IPV (see Exhibit 1-1). The three chief features of Johnson's typology are:

- 1) The focus on the broader context of potential coercion and control in intimate partner relationships (Salzman and Fingerhut, 2000);
- 2) The consideration of the couple as the unit of analysis; and
- 3) The inclusion of women's potential use of violence.

Johnson's (1995) early typology of intimate terrorism and common couple violence was later expanded to include violent resistance and mutual violent control (Johnson and Ferraro, 2000) (see Exhibit 1-1). Others have focused largely on typologies of batterers (Gondolf, 1988; Hamberger et al., 1996; Holtzworth-Munroe and Stuart, 1994; Saunders, 1992; Waltz et al., 2001). A recent study (Holtzworth-Monroe et al., 2000) found empirical support for three dimensions along which batterers have been characterized in these typologies: 1) severity (and frequency) of violence; 2) generality of violence; and 3) batterer's psychopathology or personality disorders. The dimensional approach to identifying typologies offers promise.

Johnson (2000) has found empirical support for his hypothesized typology based on a secondary analysis of data collected by Frieze in the late 1970s. Using a set of items modeled after the power and control wheel (Pence and Paymar, 1986), Johnson generated a two-cluster solution representing high- and low-control males and females. Combining these clusters with wives' reports of violence, he found the following breakdown: mutual violence (3% of the couples overall; 50% husbands, 50% wives); patriarchal terrorism (29% overall; 97% husbands, 3% wives); violent resistance (23% overall; 4% husbands, 96% wives); and common couple violence (44% overall; 56% husbands, 44% wives). Other researchers have provided additional evidence suggesting that women use violence primarily to defend themselves and that men use violence typically to control their female partners (DeKeseredy et al., 1997; Saunders, 1986).

It seems clear that the notion of nonviolent coercive control should be included in future work on typologies of IPV. However, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of IPV will be hampered by a number of obstacles. First, the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of the nature and function of coercive control. Johnson's model, for example, suggests that it is a "motive to control" that differentiates types of violent couples. Yet the only empirical test of the model (Johnson, 2000) measures control tactics, not motive. Can a behavior be considered "coercively controlling" without the intent? Moreover, can an otherwise benign-appearing behavior be considered controlling if the intent is there? Similarly, the measurement of control tactics alone does not capture the capacity to control or the function of control in relationships. Can the same set of tactics be considered controlling when used by a man or a woman? What kinds of consequences or contingencies should "count" as defining coercive

## Exhibit 1-1

### JOHNSON'S TYPOLOGY OF IPV

<b>Intimate Terrorism</b>	Violence is one tactic in a general pattern of control with a range of severity of violence.
<b>Common Couple Violence</b>	Violence is not connected to a general pattern of control but arises in the context of a specific argument and is more likely to be mutual; the violence does not escalate over time but reflects a range of severity. Typically, it is not severe.
<b>Violent Resistance</b>	Violence consists of fighting back against partner's violence.
<b>Mutual Violent Control</b>	Both partners are controlling and violent. This is a rare occurrence.

control? Should they be different depending on the psychological, physical, or economic vulnerability of the target of control? Should different definitions exist for different purposes, some legal and some not? As elaborated below, theoretical work exists on the concepts of coercion and control; however, few have attempted to integrate this work with the current understanding of violent intimate relationships.

At this point, there exists no adequate measure of the construct “nonviolent coercive control” relevant for IPV. Subscales embedded in larger measures of psychological abuse are neither comprehensive nor based on a clear theoretical framework. A psychometrically valid measure of coercive control would enable researchers to examine differences in violent couples beyond those attributed to levels of violence alone. It also would enable a deeper understanding of the nature of violent relationships, and it would shed light on the question of gender symmetry.

## 1.2 Conceptualization of Power in Social Relationships

French and Raven (1959) defined power in social relationships as the ability of an agent to influence a target. Molm (1997) elaborated on the mechanism of influence by defining power as “the level of potential cost that an actor can impose on another.” The theoretical approach to social power distinguishes *bases* (i.e., ability or potential to control), *processes* (i.e., attempts to control), and *outcomes* of power (i.e., who wins or makes the decision/compliance or resistance) (Cromwell and Olson, 1975). Most theories of social power embrace the view that power is the inevitable currency of social exchange. However, it is the abuse of power that is of concern to IPV advocates, practitioners, policymakers, and researchers, not merely the ability to exert influence on another person.

Coercive power is based on the notion that one can and will punish another for noncompliance (Raven, Center, and Rodriguez, 1975). Recent developments (Raven, 1993) have distinguished force, which involves the lack of volition, from coercion. That is, with enough force there is no discretion regarding compliance. However, coercion involves a contingent outcome: The expectation is that noncompliance leads to, whereas compliance

avoids, a negative consequence. Thus, coercion controls the target through contingent punishment. The opportunity for resistance exists, but at a cost.

Raven (1993) suggested that coercion may require softening the target or “setting the stage,” where it is “important to demonstrate to the target that not only are the means available for coercion, but that the agent is ready and willing to pay the costs that coercion implies.” He further stated that coercion could occur through invoking the power of a third party (e.g., Child Protection Services, police). Molm (1997) defined “coercive power” as the “level of actual power that an actor can impose on another.” She and Raven argue that the use of coercive power is strategic.

The concept of reward power is closely related to coercive power. Raven et al. (1975) defined reward power as based on the belief that the other can and will do something positive in return for compliance. Molm (1997) extended the theory to recognize “reward power” as that which can be used to impose an “opportunity cost” on another—that is, withholding a reward for failing to comply. Both coercive and reward power require surveillance, since the outcome is contingent on failure to comply (Raven, 1993). Thus, the use of both coercive power and reward power define coercion.

Compliance and resistance are possible responses to coercion. Compliance has been shown to increase over time when the probability of contingent punishment is high (Molm, 1997). Greater power to punish and greater likelihood of being punished is predicted to result in both greater compliance and greater resistance (Molm, 1997). Interestingly, retaliation and compliance have been shown to be independent behavioral outcomes; that is, compliant victims do not retaliate less and vice versa (Molm, 1997).

### **1.3 Conceptualization and Measurement of Coercion in IPV**

As a beginning point, coercion will be defined as the credible threat of delivering a negative consequence for noncompliance. Coercion requires having enough power to punish effectively or to withhold a meaningful reward (hereafter both are referred to as “punishment”). Based on social learning theory (Bandura, 1986), the contingent threat of both of these negative consequences increases the likelihood of compliance.

The theory of social power—especially coercive and reward power—has clear implications for a theory of coercive control in IPV:

- Coercion in IPV must address the role of motivation to control. A batterer may attempt to exert coercive control over his partner generally or within a specific situational context or argument. However, theories of coercive control in IPV must consider a context of coercion (Fischer, Vidmar, and Ellis, 1993) arising from previous physical or sexual IPV, where there is no specific overt intent to control in subsequent situations;

- Coercive control requires the actual power or ability to control and expectations that the partner can and will use that perceived power to punish;
- Coercion is a contingent relationship, linking the threat behavior of one partner with the future behavior of the other, and finally, to the actual consequence for noncompliance or the actual cost of compliance. While compliance avoids punishment, it does not come without its own cost (e.g., doing something which is against one's values);
- Surveillance, or the appearance of it, is necessary for coercion to occur; and
- Coercive dynamics can be “hidden” from direct observation. Understanding it requires knowledge of the history of violence and abuse (or other forms of punishment) that contributed to the establishment of coercive power.

#### **1.4 Description of the Study Goals and Objectives**

On October 1, 2001, COSMOS Corporation was awarded a grant to conduct the NIJ-funded study, “Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence,” to examine the issues described above in the development of a measure of nonviolence coercive control for use in the measurement of IPV. The study was led by Dr. Mary Ann Dutton (Principal Investigator), Dr. Lisa Goodman (Co-Principal Investigator), and a team of researchers from COSMOS Corporation, Bethesda, MD, and Boston College (Counseling and Developmental Psychology, School of Education).

Specific objectives of the study were completed in four distinct phases:

- 1) Develop a conceptual model of coercive control (study phase 1);
- 2) Develop an ecologically and statistically valid instrument to measure coercive control (study phase 2);
- 3) Evaluate psychometric properties of the coercive control measure (study phase 3); and
- 4) Conduct a preliminary test of the usefulness of the measure for validating Johnson’s (2000) typology of IPV (study phase 4).

The study objectives are detailed in the next section, Study Design and Methodology.

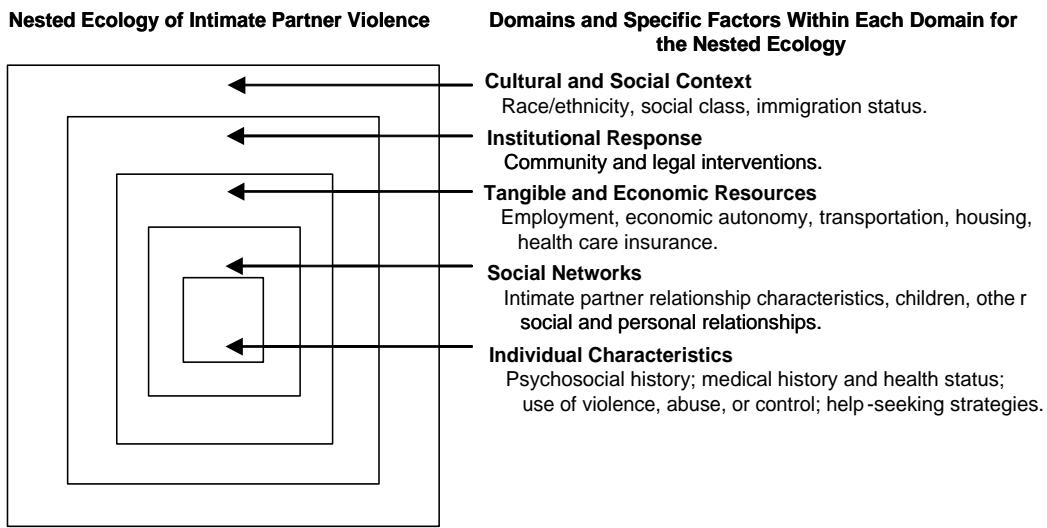
## 2. STUDY DESIGN AND METHODOLOGY

### 2.1 STUDY DESIGN

The study incorporated ethnographic and other qualitative methods into the framework of standard scale development and psychometric evaluation procedures (Clark and Watson, 1995) to adequately capture the experience of nonviolent coercive control in the lives of diverse groups of people whose lives span varied contexts and circumstances. A nested ecological model (Dutton, 1996; Edleson and Tolman, 1992) of IPV, which accounts for variations at the individual, relational, social, cultural, and institutional levels, was used as a framework to guide the conceptualization and measurement of coercive control and its associated features (see Exhibit 2-1). Finally, a dynamic process method of assessment (Steadman et al., 2000) was utilized as a means of incorporating the contingent nature of coercive control in context of antecedents and correlates, in which classification at one stage influences classification at a subsequent level. This is necessary to address the multiple elements required to define coercive control: 1) power or ability to influence; 2) use of control tactics; 3) compliance or resistance; 4) anticipated and actual negative consequences of noncompliance; and 5) anticipated and actual costs of compliance.

**Exhibit 2-1**

### NESTED ECOLOGICAL MODEL<sup>1</sup> OF INTIMATE PARTNER VIOLENCE



<sup>1</sup>Bronfenbrenner (1979), modified by Dutton (1996); Edelson and Tolman(1992)

Using ethnographic methods ensures the ecological validity of the coercive control instrument so that it measures coercive control as it is experienced in the real, day-to-day lives of the men and women involved in IPV. Ecological validity is different from statistical validity. Whereas statistical validity characterizes an instrument that contains items that define a common construct and that are related to other constructs in predictable ways, it does not ensure that the measure is relevant to the sample for which it is intended to be used. Ecological validity characterizes a measure that has been constructed using multiple ethnographic methods; the instrument is built from the narratives of the lives of people for whom it is intended to be used. Further, using the nested ecological model provided the team with a framework to organize information about the social context of the men and women from whose experience the measure was constructed.

The study team developed a conceptual model of coercive control (Objective 1) by conducting a comprehensive literature review and refining the model through collaboration with an Advisory Panel comprised of experts ( $n = 16$ ) in the field of IPV research and a consensus panel of experts ( $n = 100$ ). An ecologically and statistically valid measure of nonviolent coercive control was developed (Objective 2) by using ethnographic and classical test theory methodologies to construct the measure. The psychometric properties of the newly developed coercive control measure (Objective 3) were assessed in a total sample ( $n = 757$ ) that included both males ( $n = 302$ ) and females ( $n = 448$ ), those reporting IPV victimization only ( $n = 139$ ), IPV perpetration only ( $n = 39$ ), both IPV victimization and perpetration ( $n = 245$ ), and neither IPV victimization nor perpetration ( $n = 334$ ) (see Exhibit 2-2). Respondents were recruited from community agencies involving identified IPV victims and perpetrators, agencies providing non-IPV services to demographically similar participants, community college settings, and general public community settings, e.g., fast food restaurants (see Exhibit 2-3). The sample was a convenience, not a representative, sample. Selection criteria included the following: 1) involvement in an intimate partner relationship within the past 12 months, and 2) 18 years of age or older. Respondents were excluded if they exhibited signs of intoxication or other indications of a lack of coherence sufficient to complete the survey. Demographic characteristics of the sample are described in Exhibit 2-4.

The study team then conducted a preliminary test of Johnson's (2000) typology of IPV (Objective 4) using data from the validation groups. A detailed description of the study methodology is provided in the remainder of Section 2, and is presented by study phase. Section 3 of the report contains a brief summary of the results of the study, including a description of the new measures. These include measures of demands, coercion, surveillance, and response to coercion.

### Exhibit 2-2

#### COERCIVE CONTROL SURVEY: BREAKDOWN OF RESPONSE BY SITE, GENDER, AND VICTIM /PERPETRATOR STATUS

Site	Gender	IPV-Victim	IPV-Perpetrator	Both <sup>1</sup>	Neither <sup>2</sup>	Total
Boston, MA	Male	21	6	36	42	105
	Female	33	7	68	49	157
	Missing	0	0	1	1	2
	Subtotal	<b>54</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>105</b>	<b>92</b>	<b>264</b>
Washington, DC	Male	27	12	57	101	197
	Female	58	13	80	140	291
	Missing	0	1	3	1	5
	Subtotal	<b>85</b>	<b>26</b>	<b>140</b>	<b>242</b>	<b>493</b>
<b>TOTAL</b>		<b>139</b>	<b>39</b>	<b>245</b>	<b>334</b>	<b>757</b>

<sup>1</sup>The respondent noted that they were both a victim and perpetrator of IPV.

<sup>2</sup>The respondent noted that they are neither a victim, nor perpetrator of IPV.

### Exhibit 2-3

#### RESPONDENT RECRUITMENT BY SITE

Site	Number of Respondents	Percent of Total Respondents
<b>Washington, DC</b>		
Homestretch (transitional living facility)	64	8.5
Montgomery College	215	28.4
District of Columbia Superior Court—Family Court Division	123	16.2
District of Columbia Superior Court—Domestic Violence Division	61	8.1
<b>Boston, MA</b>		
Emerge (batterer treatment program)	41	5.4
Community Sample (recruitment occurred at a fast food restaurant)	253	33.4
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>757</b>	<b>100.0</b>

## Exhibit 2-4

### SAMPLE CHARACTERISTICS

Characteristic	Descriptive Statistics			
	N	%	M	SD
Age Range=17-80 years			31.0	11.4
Race/Ethnicity				
Missing	11	1.5		
African-American	392	51.8		
Caucasian	177	23.4		
Latino/Latina	91	12.0		
Asian-American or Pacific Islander	24	3.2		
American Indian	5	.7		
Other	29	3.8		
Mixed	28	3.7		
Born outside the U.S.	263	34.5		
Years in the U.S. (for those born outside the U.S.)			19.4	14.7
Parents of children				
No	275	37.9		
Number of children			1.6	1.8
Employment				
Full-time	213	28.1		
Part-time	125	16.5		
Unemployed	137	18.1		
Student	87	11.5		
Stay at home	42	5.5		
Retired	14	1.8		
Blank	15	2.0		
More than one category	100	14.0		
Federal or state public assistance				
No	509	71.0		
Education				
Less than 8th grade	26	3.5		
9th grade	21	2.8		
10th grade	47	6.3		
11th grade	55	7.4		
12th grade	189	25.3		
Trade school	43	5.8		
Some (or in) college	240	32.2		
2-yr degree	36	4.8		
4-yr degree	43	5.8		
Post-BA education	46	6.2		
Currently involved with intimate partner	461	62.3		
Relationship status				
Legally married	169	23.2		
Committed relationship	325	44.5		
Dating	131	17.9		
Casual relationship	105	14.4		
Living arrangement				
Living together	253	34.7		
Living together – off and on	74	10.1		
Living separately	403	55.2		

N=number

%=percentage

M=mean

SD=standard deviation

## **2.2 STUDY PHASE 1: DEVELOPMENT OF A CONCEPTUAL MODEL OF COERCIVE CONTROL**

### **2.2.1 Literature Review**

A comprehensive review of the literature concerning the theory and measurement of coercion, social power, control, and psychological abuse in intimate partner violence was conducted in order to guide the development of a conceptual framework for the model of coercive control. The search for relevant literature was conducted within two on-line databases: PsychINFO (operated by the American Psychological Association) and LexisNexis. In addition, the project's Advisory Panel members<sup>1</sup> were invited to submit relevant literature (see Appendix A for a list of Advisory Panel members and brief biographical sketches for each member). The search at PsychINFO was limited to the years 1967 to 2000, and the search was performed using specific terms (see Exhibit 2-5) as listed in the article titles (i.e., a title search). In order to select the most relevant articles, the review of the title search results focused on articles with information on the definition of coercion, manifestations of coercion, studies which might describe or provide sample items from a scale related to coercion, information on motivation or goals of coercive behavior, and correlates of coercion.

The broad scope and fewer number of search terms utilized in the search of LexisNexis reflect the broad content of that archive. Search terms utilized at LexisNexis included:

1) coercion, 2) power and control, and 3) Duluth model.

An in-depth literature overview was created based on the results of the on-line search for relevant and targeted literature and the literature provided by the Advisory Panel members, and included brief information for each, including author(s), publication year, publication source, and abstract (Appendix B). This document categorized the selected literature into specific categories to inform the development of the conceptual model of coercive control. The literature categories included:

- Causes and correlates—General;
- Causes and correlates—Cross-cultural;
- Causes and correlates—Implications for relationship dynamics;
- Causes and correlates—Societal dynamics;
- Causes and correlates—Batterer dynamics;
- Causes and correlates—Childhood;
- Causes and correlates—Victim dynamics;
- Coercive/Reward power;

---

<sup>1</sup> The Advisory Panel members were selected and agreements to participate were acquired during the grant proposal phase.

## Exhibit 2-5

### **SEARCH TERMS UTILIZED FOR LITERATURE SEARCH AT PSYCHINFO**

#### **Search Terms Utilized in “Title Search” at PsychINFO**

- 
1. Coercion
  2. Duress
  3. Social power (only through 1984)
  4. Power and relationships
  5. Dominance and relationships
  6. Control and relationships (only through 1984)
  7. Authoritarian and relationships
  8. Control and psychological (emotional) abuse
  9. Threat (threaten) and relationships
  10. Restrict (restriction; restrictiveness) and relationships
  11. Controlling behavior
  12. Coercive and behavior
  13. Coercive and relationships
  14. Conflict tactics
  15. Conflict behavior (only through 1984)
  16. Conflict and behavior (only through 1991)
  17. Conflict and tactics
  18. Controlling and behavior
  19. Coercive and power
  20. Coercive power
  21. Reward power
  22. Motivation to control
  23. Duluth and model (title and keyword search)
  24. Power and control
  25. Dominance and control (through 1984)

- Goals/motivation;
- Measurement;
- Elaboration of coercion concept;
- Theory—General;
- Theory—Cultural differences;
- Female perpetrators; and
- Lesbian, gay, bisexual, and transgender issues.

#### **2.2.2 Initial Development of the Conceptual Model of Coercive Control**

Based on the findings of the literature review and the investigators’ previous research, the study team developed the initial conceptual model coercive control. The draft model included the following components:

- 1) Underlying Assumption/Hypotheses
- 2) Working Definition of Coercion
- 3) Purpose of Developing a Measure of Coercive Control
- 4) Six Elements of Coercive Control in Intimate Relationships

***Initial Discussions of the Conceptual Model with the Advisory Panel.*** The study team set up a project listserv<sup>2</sup> for the purpose of discussing the draft model among the study team and Advisory Panel members. In early May 2002, the study team mailed copies of the draft model and conceptual framework to the Advisory Panel members, and on May 14, 2002, the study team issued an invitation to the Advisory Panel members via the listserv to initiate the listserv discussion. The Advisory Panel members were invited to comment on the draft and on others' comments as well. In addition to reviewing the draft model, the Advisory Panel members were asked to respond to the following outstanding issues:

- 1) Does the model make sense?
- 2) Should a distinction be made in types and levels of coercion?
- 3) How should justifiable coercion be distinguished from coercive control that is associated with intimate partner violence?
- 4) How should everyday or normative coercion that is part of normal social discourse be distinguished from coercive control that is associated with intimate partner violence?

The listserv discussion concluded in July 2002, and a synopsis of the discussion was developed and provided to the Advisory Panel members (see Appendix C).

Based on the feedback provided during the listserv discussion, the model was revised to expand and refine the concept of coercive control. The next step in enhancing the conceptual model was to collect ethnographic data in order to incorporate "real world" context, and thus ensure the ecological validity of the coercive control measure that would be based on the model.

### **2.2.3 Ethnographic Data Collection**

In order to ensure the development of an ecologically valid instrument, the team employed ethnographic methods in order to capture the experience of coercive control in the lives of a diverse group of people whose lives span varied contexts and circumstances. The methods included: 1) ethnographic interviews with individuals who had recent personal experience with IPV, 2) participant observation in institutional IPV-related settings such as support groups, and 3) interviews with people who work with IPV in their professional roles. The data collection strategies employed for each of these methods is described below.

---

<sup>2</sup> A listserv is a public or private electronic mailing list. A listserv can be used to send an e-mail to many different people on many different computer systems, and is a popular method of quickly disseminating and sharing information via the Internet. For this project, the study team utilized the free service offered by Yahoo (<http://groups.yahoo.com>).

**Ethnographic Interviews.** In-depth, open-ended interviews were conducted with 18 individuals (male and female) to gather specific examples or experiences of nonviolent coercive control (Exhibit 2-6 provides a breakdown by gender, ethnicity, and victim/batterer status). A structured interview protocol was developed by the study team and was used to guide the interview process and standardize the data collection. The protocol was intended to explore the participants' experience with coercive control and document how their experience supported or contradicted the draft framework and model. The participants were required to sign a consent form in order to participate and received a \$20 incentive fee for completion of the interview. The sole inclusion criterion was that participants had been involved in a violent intimate relationship at some point within the previous 12 months. The interviews were conducted during the period November 2002–February 2003, at the following sites:

- Washington, DC—Total Interviews = 7  
Sites: Hannah House (n=6), a transitional housing program for women Ayuda (n=1), an advocacy organization for low-income Latino and other immigrant communities
- Boston, MA—Total Interviews = 9  
Site: Emerge (n=9), batterer intervention program
- Pine Ridge Indian Reservation, SD—Total Interviews = 2  
Sites: Cangleska (n=2), domestic violence prevention and intervention program

Copies of the interview protocol, consent form, and summary of findings can be found in Appendix D.

## Exhibit 2-6

### DESCRIPTION OF ETHNOGRAPHIC INTERVIEW PARTICIPANTS

	Female victims	Female batterers	Male batterers	Totals
<b>African-American</b>	4 (DC)	1 (DC)	1 (MA) *	6
<b>Gay &amp; Lesbian</b>	1 (DC)	0	3 (MA)	4
<b>Latina/Latino</b>	1 (DC)	0	3 (MA)	4
<b>Native American</b>	2 (SD)	0	0	2
<b>White</b>	0	1 (MA)	1 (MA) *	2
<b>Totals</b>	8	2	8	18

\* Multiethnic: Latino/African American and Latino/White

Key for Location of Interviews (shown in parentheses)

DC – Washington, DC

MA – Boston, MA

SD – Pine Ridge Indian Reservation

**Interviews with Professionals.** To gather additional examples of coercive control in various contexts and settings, interviews were conducted with six individuals who work with IPV in their professional roles (Exhibit 2-7 provides a breakdown of the individuals interviewed by the populations they serve and the types of services they provide). A structured interview protocol was developed by the study team and utilized to guide the interview process and standardize the data collection. The protocol was intended to explore the professionals' observations of coercive control as experienced by their clients and how these observations supported or contradicted the draft framework and model. The professionals were required to sign a consent form in order to participate and received a \$20 incentive fee for completion of the interview. The interviews were conducted during the period October-December 2002 at the following sites:

- Boston, MA—Total Interviews = 1  
Site: Emerge (n=1), batterer intervention program
- Pine Ridge Indian Reservation, SD—Total Interviews = 5  
Sites: Cangleska (n=5), domestic violence prevention and intervention program

Copies of the interview protocol, consent form, and summary of findings can be found in Appendix E.

### **Exhibit 2-7**

#### **NUMBER OF INTERVIEWS WITH PROFESSIONALS**

Populations Served	Professions		Totals
	Service Provider	Consultant	
<b>Gay &amp; Lesbian</b>	1 (MA)	0	1
<b>Native American</b>	2 (SD)	1 (SD)	3
<b>White</b>	2 (SD)	0	2
<b>Totals</b>	5	1	6

Key for Location of Interviews (shown in parentheses)

MA – Boston, MA

SD – Pine Ridge Indian Reservation

**Review of Archival Data.** The study team gathered further examples of coercive control in various contexts and settings via the review of relevant archival data, including 1) police reports of incidents of IPV, and 2) transcripts of in-depth interviews with female batterers. The police report data were provided by Dr. Ellen Pence, a member of the study's Advisory Panel, and included summaries of suspect and victim accounts of incidents, and separately, descriptions of violence within reported incidents of IPV. The study team also reviewed transcripts of in-depth interviews with 32 women who were self- or court-referred to treatment groups due to their use of violence against their male partners. These women were selected nationally and represent a diverse group of African-Americans, Native Americans, Asians, Latinas, and Anglos. The

transcripts were provided by Dr. Shamita Das Dasgupta, also a member of the study's Advisory Panel.

***Review of the Ethnographic Data.*** The ethnographic methods described above were implemented in order to capture the experience of coercive control in the lives of a diverse group of people whose lives span varied contexts and circumstances. The study team reviewed the data from the ethnographic interviews, interviews with professionals, and the archival data to document the following:

- What implications do the data have on the conceptual model of coercive control in intimate partner relationships? Do the data support or contradict the model?
- Do the data provide examples of the six elements of coercive control in intimate relationships, as defined in the model at the time of the ethnographic data collection:
  - 1) Agent's communication of demand, request, or expectation;
  - 2) Agent's communication of the threat of a meaningful negative consequence;
  - 3) Agent's surveillance of the target's response;
  - 4) Agent's setting the stage for social influence;
  - 5) Target's response to the demand, request, or expectation; and
  - 6) Relational context surrounding the coercion?

The final conceptual development of the coercive control framework was presented in an article published in *Sex Roles*, Vol. 52, June 2005.

## **2.3 STUDY PHASE 2: DEVELOPMENT OF THE COERCIVE CONTROL SURVEY**

### **2.3.1 Development of the Coercive Control Measure**

The development of a draft measure of coercive control began with the creation of an outline of ten potential constructs of coercive control to assess in the measure (see Appendix F). The outline also included imbedded constructs, potential questionnaire items and suggested scales. The ten constructs presented in the outline represent an expansion of the six elements of coercive control described in earlier versions of the conceptual model (and described above). The ten potential constructs included:

- 1) Communication of demand or expectation;
- 2) Communication of threat of meaningful negative consequences;
- 3) Perceived threat of contingent meaningful negative consequences for noncompliance with a demand, request or expectation;
- 4) Compliance or resistance;
- 5) Other effects of coercive control process;
- 6) Surveillance;
- 7) Setting the state for coercive control;

- 8) Social ecology;
- 9) Increased vulnerability; and
- 10) Motivation, intention, and personal gain.

Based on this outline, the study team developed a measure containing a broad and comprehensive pool of items that reflected each of the constructs. The study team considered the following issues in developing the measure:

- The array of items to be included;
- The wording of the individual items;
- The form or scale used to assess each item;
- The sequence of items within the measure;
- Instructions to the respondents; and
- Method of administration.

All items were repeated in order to assess both the respondent's coercive control *against* and *from* their partner.

***Advisory Panel Review of the Revised Conceptual Model and the Draft Measure.*** On March 13-14, 2003, the project Advisory Panel was convened to review the work completed on the project and, specifically, to focus on the revised conceptual model of coercive control and the draft measure. The feedback provided by the Advisory Panel members was incorporated into the conceptual model, and the model was finalized (the final model is provided in Appendix G). The feedback on the draft measure was utilized to refine and expand the questionnaire items, and the study team then began the work of preparing to share the draft measure among professionals working in the field of IPV. Copies of materials from the Advisory Panel meeting, including the agenda, participant list, and summary, are provided in Appendix H.

### **2.3.2 Consensus Ratings of the Draft Coercive Control Measure**

Prior to finalizing the draft measure of coercive control, the team provided the draft measure to 220 professionals who work with IPV in their professional roles to rate the extent to which the items on the measure tap the construct of coercive control. The draft measure was provided to the targeted professionals via e-mail as the Consensus Rating Survey (Appendix I), and they were given the opportunity to submit the questionnaire in one of three different ways: 1) on-line via the Web, 2) by reply e-mail, or 3) via hard copy, by fax or regular mail. Details about development of the list of targeted professionals and development of the survey are described below.

In April 2003, the members of the Advisory Panel were requested to nominate 5-10 IPV professionals to rate the draft measure, and the Panel members provided names and e-mail addresses for a total of 220 professionals. The names and e-mail addresses of the targeted

professionals were loaded into a Microsoft Access database (the other functions of this database are described below) and merged into the e-mail cover letter (a copy of the e-mail letter also is provided in Appendix I).

The COSMOS Web development team worked in conjunction with the study team and the Advisory Panel to develop an instrument capable of multimedia presentation and submission, including paper, interactive e-mail, and Web-based. Development of the questionnaire involved ensuring compliance with Section 508 of the U.S. Rehabilitation Act,<sup>3</sup> and consideration of varying browser and e-mail client capabilities. The Microsoft Access database described above was expanded to include tables for data receipt, cleaning, and reporting.

As noted above, the respondents submitted the questionnaire in one of three ways: 1) on-line via Web, 2), by reply e-mail, or 3) via hard copy, by fax or regular mail. Each of these three presentations required separate formatting of the questionnaire, though the draft measure of coercive control containing in the questionnaire, which was being rated by the respondents, remained the same in each of the formatted versions of the questionnaire.

The preferred method for completing the questionnaire was via the Web-based (on-line) survey. Respondents were urged to respond on-line via the Web-based survey because data could be validated at time of entry; data were placed directly into the database thereby reducing coding time and transcription errors; and results were immediately available. The Web site used Active Server Pages (ASP), Javascript, VBScript, and Cascading Style Sheets (CSS) to generate the Hypertext Markup Language (HTML) for database interaction and automated e-mail notifications. To complete and submit the survey on-line, respondents connected to the Web-based survey via a link provided in the e-mail. Sample screen shots from the on-line version of the Consensus Rating Survey are provided Exhibits 2-8 and 2-9.

The e-mail survey was written in HTML using Microsoft VBScript to manage form fields. A header for non-HTML e-mail clients was included. The e-mail survey was constructed to return ASCII data ready for loading into the database. To complete and submit the survey by e-mail, respondents were directed to the access the e-mail version of the survey that was attached to the invitation e-mail. Respondents then completed the survey and clicked the submit button at the end of the survey form (which would direct the respondent's e-mail survey back to COSMOS).

The survey also was converted to Adobe Acrobat's PDF. The PDF version of the survey was attached to the invitation e-mail for those respondents who preferred to print out the survey and respond by fax or mail.

Following extensive internal testing of the on-line and e-mail versions of the consensus ratings questionnaire, on August 20, 2003, the request to complete the questionnaire was submitted to 20 participants as a pilot test. An additional page was made available during the pilot test to capture testers' comments. Based on the success of these pilot cases, on August 22,

---

<sup>3</sup> Section 508 was added to the U.S. Rehabilitation Act in 2002. It requires all government Web sites to follow a set of rules that ensure blind, deaf, and other disabled people can use their screen readers to read and navigate the site.

the consensus ratings survey was submitted to the remaining 200 participants (for a total survey universe of 220). The survey period concluded on September 9, 2003, and a total of 94 valid responses were received (just 6% less than the anticipated target response rate of 100). Of the 94 valid responses, 87 percent submitted the survey on-line (Web-based submission), 10 percent submitted via e-mail, and the remaining 3 percent submitted the questionnaire via fax or mail.

All submitted data were loaded into the Access database where validation and cleaning routines were applied. The analysis of the consensus ratings began with running statistical frequencies to examine the number of responses, mean, median, mode, and standard deviation for each individual item. In addition, Cronbach alphas were calculated to check for inter-item reliability. The analysis concluded that all of the items included in the measure were rated as highly correlated. In addition, the participants suggested additional items to include in the measure and edits to the wording of individual items to enhance clarity. These and other open-ended responses were categorized for review by the study team.

The draft measure of coercive control was revised utilizing the feedback from the consensus ratings. The final measure of coercive control then served as the foundation for the development of the Coercive Control Survey, which is described in the next section.

## Exhibit 2-8

### SAMPLE SCREEN SHOTS FROM THE ON-LINE VERSION OF THE CONSENSUS RATING SURVEY: INSTRUCTION AND DEFINITION PAGES

<b>National Institute of Justice</b>  <i>Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence</i>					
Instructions	Section A	Section B	Section C	Section D	Section E
You must click the button at the bottom of each page in order to save your answers.					
<p>Thank You for taking the time to complete this questionnaire. The purpose of this survey is to collect information from a wide range of professionals who work with intimate partner violence to assess how well each item in the questionnaire measures the construct of coercive control. Your responses will help us develop an instrument to measure coercive control in intimate partner relationships. At the end of the survey, space is provided for you to share your comments about the questionnaire (e.g., wording of statements or omissions that should be included, etc.)</p>					
<p><b>INSTRUCTIONS:</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Please use the final question to share your comments about the questionnaire itself.</li><li>• If desired, use the Print button on the last page to create a personal report.</li><li>• When finished, use the Submit button on the last page to send your responses.</li></ul>					
<p><b>CONTACT INFORMATION:</b></p> <p>COSMOS Corporation 3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950 Bethesda, MD 20814 Attn: Darci Terrell Phone: 301-215-9100 E-mail: <a href="mailto:dterrell@cosmoscorp.com">dterrell@cosmoscorp.com</a> Fax: 301-215-8969</p> <p><b>ELECTRONIC VERSIONS:</b></p> <p>If you prefer to print the questionnaire, download via the links below. These may be found under the "Electronic Versions" link on the left side of the page.</p>					
<p><b>IDENTIFYING INFORMATION</b></p> <p>Items marked with an asterisk* are required.</p> <p>First Name: <input type="text"/> *</p> <p>Last Name: <input type="text"/> *</p> <p>E-mail Address: <input type="text"/> *</p> <p>Profession: <input type="text" value="Shelter staff"/> Or enter another category: <input type="text"/></p> <p>The submit button for this information is at the bottom of the page.</p>					
<p><b>DEFINITIONS OF INTIMATE PARTNER COERCIVE CONTROL</b></p> <p><b>COERCIVE THREAT:</b> Communication of a credible threat of a contingent and meaningful negative consequence for an intimate partner's noncompliance with an expectation or demand.</p> <p>You will be asked to make ratings concerning two components required to define coercive threats: 1) expectations or demands, and 2) threatened negative consequences required to define "coercive threat."</p> <p>1) Partner's expectations or demands</p>					

## Exhibit 2-9

### **SAMPLE SCREEN SHOTS FROM THE ON-LINE VERSION OF THE CONSENSUS RATING SURVEY: SECTION A—PARTNER'S EXPECTATION OR DEMANDS**

<b>National Institute of Justice</b>					
<i>Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence</i>					
Instructions	Section A	Section B	Section C	Section D	Section E
You must click the button at the bottom of each page in order to save your answers.					
<b>CONSENSUS REVIEWER RATINGS</b>					
<b>SECTION A. - Partner's Expectations or Demands</b>					
<p>The first set of questions pertains to a list of demands or expectations that one partner may make of the other under the threat of a hurtful consequence for noncompliance. For each activity listed, please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that the item should be included to measure "demand or expectation" involved in coercive threat.</p>					
<small>1= Strongly disagree 2= Disagree 3= Neither agree or disagree 4= Agree 5= Strongly agree</small>					
<b>Types of Activities</b>	1	2	3	4	5
<b>Personal activities</b>	<hr/>				
1. Leaving the house.	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>
2. Eating.	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>				
3. Where I sleep.	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>				
4. When I sleep.	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>				
5. What clothes I wear.	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>				

### **2.3.3 Development of the Coercive Control Survey**

***Development of the Survey.*** The Coercive Control Survey (Appendix J-1) was a 28-page instrument that consisted of the newly developed measure of coercive control and additional measures of correlates and consequences of coercion. The survey was divided into the following sections:

1. Sample Description (demographic variables)
2. Coercive Control Measure—Target
  - a. Partner expectation or demands
  - b. Partner surveillance methods
  - c. Partner contingent threats/coercion
  - d. Third party involvement in threats
  - e. Response to partner's threats

3. Coercive Control Measure—Agent
  - a. Expectations or demands
  - b. Surveillance methods
  - c. Contingent threats / coercion
  - d. Third party involvement in threats

4. Additional measures of correlates and consequences of coercion

DOMAIN	MEASURE	PURPOSE
<b>Intimate Partner Violence</b>	Conflict Tactics Scale-2 (Straus et al., 1995)	Convergent validity
	Psychological Maltreatment of Women (Tolman, 1989, 1999)	Convergent validity
	Threat Appraisal (Dutton, Goodman, Weinfurt, & Vankos, 2001)	Predictive validity
<b>Mental Health</b>	Center for Epidemiologic Studies – Depression (CES-D) (Radloff, 1977)	Predictive validity
	Posttraumatic Stress Disorder Checklist (PCLs) (Ventureyra, Yao, Cottraux, Note, & De Mey-Guillard, 2002)	Predictive validity
	Fear (developed for this study)	Predictive validity
<b>Dominance</b>	Restrictiveness subscale (Hamby, 1996)	Convergent validity
<b>Social Support</b>	Interpersonal Support Evaluation List (ISEL) (Cohen, Mermelstein, Kamarack, & Hoberman, 1985)	Correlate

The Coercive Control Survey was formatted using TeleForm<sup>4</sup> software to enable electronic scanning of the survey data, thus avoiding the entry errors and extensive labor associated with manual data entry. The study team also developed the underlying databases that would house the scanned data and conducted internal testing of the scanning process using “dummy” questionnaires to ensure that the database structure and scannable format functioned properly.

***Development of the In-depth Interview Protocol.*** The In-depth Interview Protocol (Appendix J-2) was designed capture additional detail on Section 2a of the Coercive Control Survey, which asks the respondent what types of the things their partner has demanded of them in the previous 12 months. The data from the in-depth interviews served as part of the assessment of construct validity by 1) identifying whether the item adequately captured the

---

<sup>4</sup>The survey framework was constructed using Verity software’s TeleForm Elite Designer module. TeleForm Designer is a powerful application that creates forms for collecting data and then to distribute those forms via FAX, mail, by hand or the Internet. Completed forms can be retrieved via FAX, scanner, modem, or Internet, and then are read automatically by TeleForm.

respondents' actual experience; and 2) determining whether the item had a substantially similar meaning, and thus captures similar phenomena for different people. The interviewer randomly selected three demands noted by the respondent and for each demand asked ten open-ended follow-up questions designed to gather details about the demand, including frequency of the demand, examples of specific incidents, and the respondents' perceptions of what led to the demand; how the demand was communicated; the perceived consequences of compliance and non-compliance; the respondents' actual response to the demand; and their feelings about their response to the demand.

***Development of Respondent Consent Forms and Administrative Tracking Forms.*** Due to the sensitive and personal nature of the research study, consent forms were developed that outlined the purpose of the study, the number of respondents, general plan of the research, benefits and risks of participation, inclusion criteria, confidentiality of data, and rights as a research participant. Separate consent forms were developed for the Coercive Control Survey and the In-depth Interview Protocol. Copies of the consent forms can be found in Appendix J. The team also developed a wide array of forms required for the tracking and administration of the Coercive Control Survey, including tracking logs and incentive payment receipts.

***Spanish Translation of the Coercive Control Survey.*** The COSMOS team translated the Coercive Control Survey, the In-depth Interview Protocol, and their associated consent forms to Spanish by following a *back translation* methodology (See Appendix J-3 and J-4). Back translation is the process of having a document translated by a qualified translator, then translated by another translator back to the original language. This methodology significantly improves the reliability and validity of data collected by the translated instrument, because an independent translator who translates back into the original language is able to verify the work of the other. This verification step is important, because translation has many nuances. A word in one language, for example, may have no equivalent in another language, or could have a completely different meaning or effect in the translated language. Furthermore, individuals who speak certain languages, such as Spanish, may adopt different forms of the language, depending on their country of origin. Those from Central America, for example, use colloquialisms and idioms unknown to those who use a more formal form of Spanish. Moreover, individuals from coastal regions of a country may use different words than individuals from interior cities and towns.

Two COSMOS staff members who are native Spanish speakers (one from Puerto Rico and the other from Mexico) were involved in the translation of the Coercive Control Survey. One of the staff members conducted the original translation, and the second staff member conducted the back translation. The original and back-translated documents were then compared, and the translators reached consensus on changes. The translators took special care to avoid legal terms, jargon, colloquialisms, and idioms.

***Engagement of the Institutional Review Board (IRB).*** The Georgetown University's Institutional Review Board (IRB) served as the IRB of record for the study (the Principal Investigator is employed by Georgetown University). In addition, the study was reviewed by the IRB at Boston College (the employer of the co-Principal Investigator) as a requirement of her

participation in the study. Initial applications were submitted to each IRB along with all required documentation including the study protocols, consent forms, etc., and the study received approval from both IRBs to conduct data collection. Annual review reports were required and submitted each year to the IRBs to provide updates on subject recruitment and progression of the study.

## **2.4 STUDY PHASE 3: TESTING THE NEW MEASURE OF COERCIVE CONTROL**

The Coercive Control Survey was administered between February and September 2004 in Boston, MA and Washington, DC. The surveys were administered at selected sites including community-based service programs, a community college, and family and domestic violence courts (the sites are described below). A total of 757 surveys and 39 in-depth interviews were completed. Exhibit 2-2 provides a breakdown of the completed surveys.

### **2.4.1 Recruitment and Training for Survey Administrators**

Survey administrators were required *at a minimum* to have a bachelor's degree in social science or public policy, though an advanced degree was preferred. Desired experience included 1) experience in survey research (any field), and 2) knowledge and/or experience of research issues related to intimate partner violence. At the Washington, DC site, the data collection was led by a senior COSMOS research associate with a master's degree and over ten years of experience conducting data collection for research studies, and the survey administrators held either bachelor or master's degrees; at the Boston site, all survey administrators were graduate students in counseling.

A training manual (Appendix K-1) was developed, and formal training was conducted with the survey administrators. The training consisted of the following components:

- Introduction to the research study;
- Discussion and description of informed consent and confidentiality
- Logistics of survey administration; and
- Pilot test and discussion of the Coercive Control Survey (trainees self-administered the survey to acquaint themselves with each survey item, and following the pilot test, questions were answered).

Because of the unique sensitivities required for administering the survey in a court setting, a special training was scheduled prior to administration of the survey at the court. The specifics of that training are described in the "Family and Domestic Violence Court" section.

## **2.4.2 Survey Administration Sites and On-Site Respondent Recruitment**

A description of the administration sites and the recruitment procedures utilized at each site is provided.

***Community-Based Data Collection—Boston, MA.*** At the Boston site, respondents were recruited from a variety of settings—including domestic violence programs and shelters, batterer treatment programs, GED and ESL classes, and a Burger King restaurant located in a low-income neighborhood in Cambridge frequented by residents of local shelters—to tap a wide range of coercive control experiences. Respondents were recruited several different ways: 1) at the program sites, program staff approached their clients who they thought might be interested in participating, and if a client expressed interest in participating, he or she was directed to one of the survey administrators; 2) individuals who had participated in the ethnographic interviews were contacted and recruited to participate in the survey portion of the study; 3) intercept methods were used the local fast food restaurant; and 4) at the GED and ESL classes, the team members arranged to announce the study in the classes, and they scheduled survey administration at a later time.

***Community-Based Data Collection—Washington, DC.*** At the Washington, DC site, respondents were recruited from 1) residents at Homestretch, a transitional housing facility, and 2) students at Montgomery College’s Germantown campus. At Homestretch, the study team worked with the facility director to arrange the administration of the Survey at one of their regularly scheduled mandatory evening classes, which is attended—on average—by approximately 70 individuals, both male and female, who reside at the facility. A team of five survey administrators attended the session to ensure coverage for the large group of respondents.

At Montgomery College, the study team administered the Survey to students on four separate days. Dr. Lucy Laufe, one of the team’s Panel members and a professor at the college, assisted in the planning and preparation for administration at the college. Students were recruited in one of two ways: 1) via response to survey announcement flyers that were distributed by instructors in the classrooms prior to the team’s scheduled administration sessions; and 2) via intercept methods on the date of the scheduled administration sessions. The administrators were provided a classroom near the campus cafeteria for survey administration, and students were intercepted in the hallway outside the classroom. A team of two survey administrators was present on campus from approximately 9:00 A.M. to 3:00 P.M. on each scheduled day.

***Family and Domestic Violence Court—Washington, DC.*** The Coercive Control Survey was administered to litigants at the District of Columbia (DC) Superior Court’s Family and Domestic Violence Courts. The Principal Investigator made the initial contact with the Chief Judge of DC Superior Court and judges from the Family and Domestic Violence Courts, and later, in-person meetings were held between the Principal Investigator, court administrators, and a small number of judges to discuss the need for the data collection at the court and to describe in detail the plan for recruiting and consenting survey respondents in the court. The team provided drafts of recruitment flyers to the judges for their review and approval. The judges

agreed to read the recruitment flyers to litigants inside the courtroom (or have it read by the court clerk).

In addition, the team sent information letters to local organizations in the DC metropolitan area who work with the litigants who have cases before the Family and Domestic Violence Courts, in order to inform the organizations of the purpose of the research study and the specifics of the data collection in the court (copies of the information letters are contained in Appendix L). The organizations that were contacted include the District of Columbia Bar; law clinics from American University, George Washington University, Georgetown University, and Catholic University; and community-based organizations including Ayuda, WEAVE, and the DC Coalition Against Domestic Violence.

As noted above, a special training session was held for team members prior to survey administration at the court in order to discuss the directives outlined by the court and to discuss the unique challenges of data collection in a court setting. This special training session is outlined in the Training Outline for MCC Survey Administration at DC Superior Court found in Appendix K-2. Also, at the court's invitation, the team conducted a tour of the court prior to beginning survey administration in order to become acquainted the layout of the court and the location of the courtrooms.

The court allowed a limited number of specific days for data collection and provided the team, in advance, with a brief description of the cases being heard before each judge for the specified days. The survey was first administered at the Family Court for eight days in July 2004 and at the Domestic Violence Court for six days in September-October 2004. Between two and four team members conducted data collection on each of the specific dates, the number depending on the number of relevant cases on the court docket for the specified day. A senior member of the team was designated as the team leader for each scheduled day of data collection.

The team leader was responsible for making in-person contact with the court clerks each day to remind them that team members were present and would be conducting data collection. On the specified dates, the team members stationed themselves outside of the courtrooms where the family or domestic violence cases were taking place (per the instruction of the judges, team members were not permitted inside the courtrooms) according the dockets provided by the court.

According to the respondents, some court clerks read the recruitment flyer, while others did not; but this did not seem to affect the number of respondents.

The team used intercept methods to recruit respondents, specifically approaching people who waited outside of the designated courtrooms to inquire about their interest in participating in the research study. The team utilized scripts provided at the training and in the training manual for the specific language to use when approaching potential respondents. The main obstacle to respondent recruitment was the time required to distinguish litigants, family and friends of litigants, and witnesses. In general, if litigants felt they had the time, most were willing to complete the survey, with their main concern being starting the survey and being called for their case. The team found that allowing litigants to take the hard copy survey into court for return to the team member at the conclusion of their case improved the response rate, though, in general, most litigants were not willing to participate after their case. Often respondents approached

team members after hearing about the survey from those who were taking or had already taken the survey.

The majority of cases were scheduled in the early part of the day. Between 8:30 and 10:00 a.m. was the most fruitful time to recruit respondents, as this was the time with the most activity in front of the courtrooms. Recruitment dwindled after 11:00 a.m.; after noon, no person wished to complete a survey, and very few people remained in the vicinity to approach regarding the surveys.

#### **2.4.3 Administration of the Coercive Control Survey and In-depth Interview Protocol**

***Administration of the Survey.*** The survey was administered by trained project staff at each site, all of whom were under the supervision of Dr. Dutton at the Washington, DC, site and Dr. Goodman at the Boston site. In the field, survey administrators were required to wear a name tag identifying themselves as members of the study team. Respondent eligibility requirements for participation in the study included: 1) 18 years of age or older, and 2) involvement in an intimate relationship during the past 12 months. Three recruitment incentives were implemented: 1) a \$20 incentive fee for completion of the Survey; 2) optional entry into a raffle for which three drawings would be conducted with three randomly selected winners receiving \$100 each; and 3) a limited amount of funds were available to compensate respondents for child care and transportation.

Survey administrators were provided the following introduction script to use once a potential recruit expressed interest in the study and it was determined that they met the eligibility requirements:

*My name is [X]. The Survey will take about an hour to complete. You will receive \$20 for submission of a completed Survey and a chance to win one of three \$100 raffles. To participate, you must first read and sign a consent form which describes the study, any possible risks and benefits to you, and outlines what you are requested to do.*

Prior to administering the survey, the survey administrators conducted detailed consent discussions with the respondents to explain the research study, answer questions, assure confidentiality, describe the informed consent process and form, and obtain written consent. Respondents were offered the choice of reading the consent form themselves or having the administrator read the form to them. Respondents were offered a copy of the blank consent form to keep.

At the conclusion of the consent discussion, respondents were offered the choice of participating in the raffle. Respondents were told that entry in the raffle was optional and if they chose not to enter the raffle, they would still receive the \$20 incentive fee. To be entered into the raffle, respondents were required to provide their name and telephone number so that they could be contacted if their name was drawn. Winners were randomly selected during October 2005. See Section 2.4.5 for a complete description of the raffle process.

Prior to administration of the survey, respondents were offered the opportunity to ask any questions about the study, the consent form, the survey, etc. Respondents also were offered the choice of self-administering the survey or having the survey administered by a study team member. Interviews were conducted in privacy whenever possible. Completion of the survey required approximately one hour. At the conclusion of the survey, survey administrators were required to conduct a quick review of the completed survey to ensure that all items on each page were completed and filled out correctly. Following this quality review, respondents received their \$20 incentive fee and were required to sign or initial a receipt to acknowledge that the fee was received.

Lastly, a debriefing was conducted to ensure that respondents were not in any psychological distress, and a list of local and national domestic violence resources was offered. Survey administrators used the following debriefing script at the conclusion of the survey:

*Thank you so much for taking the time to participate in this study. We hope that the results of this study will help us to gain a deeper understanding of the ways in which people in intimate relationships try to control each other. If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have, I would be happy to spend a few minutes talking with you. If you think you might want to spend more time exploring the feelings brought up by this study, there are resources available [provide domestic violence resources list].*

**Administration of the In-depth Interviews.** Approximately one in every ten respondents was recruited to participate in the In-depth Interviews. After receiving the \$20 incentive fee for completion of the Survey and signing the acknowledgment receipt, respondents were asked about their interest in completing a follow-up interview for which they would receive an additional \$20 incentive fee. Completion of the In-depth Interview required approximately 30 minutes. At the conclusion of the Interview, respondents received the additional \$20 incentive fee, were required to sign or initial a receipt to acknowledge that the additional fee was received, and at that time, the debriefing (described above) was conducted.

#### **2.4.4 Tracking and Processing Completed Survey Materials**

Survey administrators were responsible for managing a wide variety of materials at each survey administration session, including surveys, survey consent forms, In-depth Interview Protocols, interview consent forms, fee receipts, raffle receipts, recruitment flyers, domestic violence resource lists, cash money for incentive fees (survey, interview, child care, and transportation), and various logs for tracking the forms and fees. For safety reasons, each team of survey administrators was allowed to carry only enough cash (and materials) to administer a maximum of 25 surveys and two In-depth Interviews for each scheduled session (one exception was the administration at Homestretch, for which 70 respondents were expected). Coordinators at both the Boston and Washington sites were responsible for compiling, tracking, and distributing the materials and funds to survey administrators; tracking, logging, and conducting quality reviews of completed surveys and interviews; and tracking outgoing incentive fees and receipts.

The procedures for tracking and processing completed survey materials from the field involved a series of quality checks to ensure that all surveys, respondent incentive funds, in-depth interviews, tracking logs, consent forms, and raffle receipts were accounted for and recorded for tracking purposes. The following quality checks were completed and recorded for incoming survey materials from each survey administration session:

- Count the number of completed surveys and in-depth interviews;
- Match the incoming survey ID numbers with the master survey log (a log which tracks the outcome for each ID number (i.e., survey complete, survey incomplete, survey not completed for that ID number));
- Match the signatures on the consent forms to those on the incentive payment logs;
- Match the number of completed surveys to the number of consent forms;
- Match the ID number on the in-depth interviews with the associated completed surveys;
- Match signatures on the in-depth interview consent forms with in-depth interview incentive payment logs;
- Match the number of completed in-depth interviews to the number of in-depth consent forms; and
- Complete a thorough reckoning of surveys and in-depth interviews with funds disbursed and funds returned.

#### **2.4.5 Raffle Procedures**

***Background.*** As an incentive to increase participation in the Coercive Control Survey, a raffle was utilized (and authorized by the IRB). As part of the subject recruitment procedures,

study candidates were informed that raffle participants would be eligible to win one of three \$100 raffles. For safety reasons, subjects were given the choice to participate in the raffle. Those who chose to participate filled out a receipt form with their name, telephone number, and alternate contact number, which was kept by the study team. The participant also kept a receipt (for safety reasons, the participant's receipt was non-descript). The participants were informed that they would be contacted by telephone if they were randomly selected. For safety reasons, the raffle receipts were stored separately, under lock and key, from the study questionnaire and consent forms.

**Procedures for Winner Selection.** Raffle winners were randomly selected using the random number generator in SPSS version 14.0. Alternates were chosen using the same method after the initial set of winners were removed from the participant pool.

**Procedures for Winner Contact.** The first three randomly selected winners were contacted by telephone. Scripts for person-to-person contact and for leaving voice messages were developed. The scripts were developed following the study safety protocol, and the scripts were reviewed and authorized by the study PI.

### **1. Script for Person-to-Person Contact**

*My name is X, I'm with COSMOS Corporation, and I'm calling about a survey you took back in [month, year] on coercive control in intimate partner relationships. You entered a raffle when you signed up to take the survey and I'm happy to tell that you've won one of the three raffles. Please tell me an address where you would prefer us to mail the check for \$100, or if you would rather pick up the check at COSMOS's office which is on the Metro's Red Line.*  
[Obtain address or provide directions to COSMOS].

### **2. Script for Leaving a Voice Message**

*I'm calling for [participant name]. My name is [caller name], and I'm calling about a raffle you entered back in [month, year] for the COSMOS study questionnaire. You have won the raffle and I need to confirm an address where I can send your check. Please call me at [phone number]. The deadline to responding is [date]; after that time, another winner will be chosen.*

A two-week time period was set for winners to respond in the event that a voice message was left for the participant. After that time, the next randomly selected alternates were contacted.

**Raffle Results.** Three randomly selected winners were contacted in November and December 2005, and each winner received payment of \$100 (cash or check). The winners were given the option of receiving the \$100 raffle in cash or by check, and also were given the option of receiving the \$100 raffle by U.S. mail (check option only) or picking up the winnings at COSMOS's office (check or cash option). Two of the winners opted to have checks mailed, and one winner opted to pick the raffle, in cash, at COSMOS's office.

The raffle receipts and list of raffle participants will be destroyed along with the other

project materials following the guidelines required by the funding agency (the National Institute of Justice).

#### **2.4.6 Electronic Data Scanning**

All electronic data scanning was conducted by a study team member at COSMOS. After processing and tracking all of the incoming survey materials, the Boston site submitted all study materials to COSMOS, and data from both sites were electronically scanned to an Access database via TeleForm software (a description of the software can be found in Appendix H). The procedures for transferring data from paper surveys to the Access database are outlined in Exhibit 2-10:

#### **Exhibit 2-10**

#### **PROCEDURES FOR ELECTRONICALLY SCANNING SURVEY DATA VIA TELEFORM**

<b>Teleform Processing Steps</b>	<b>Description of Processing Steps</b>
<b>1. Scan surveys</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Scan completed surveys into PDF format</li><li>• Save scanned surveys in a centralized folder on COSMOS's network</li></ul>
<b>2. Batch creation</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Compile scanned surveys into small batches (5-10 surveys)</li><li>• Process surveys by batches using TeleForm</li></ul>
<b>3. Batch reading</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Review created batches</li><li>• Reject or accept the individual batches</li></ul>
<b>4. Batch identification</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Batch matched with correct form template for purposes of correction and data entry</li></ul>
<b>5. Batch evaluation</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Remove duplicates, blank pages, and miscellaneous error pages</li></ul>
<b>6. Batch correction</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Conduct manual correction of TeleForm's reading of the data, where necessary:<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>- Ex. Correction of misread numbers</li><li>- Ex. Clarification of unreadable responses due to stray marks, illegible writing, and scratched-out responses</li></ul></li><li>• Conduct data cleaning: if multiple responses were checked in a field requiring only one response, all responses for that question were removed in order to continue batch processing, resulting in a blank response.</li></ul>
<b>7. Batch committal</b>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• Following evaluation and correction, transfer batches to Microsoft Access database</li></ul>

#### **2.5 STUDY PHASE 4: DATA ANALYSIS METHODS**

Once all of the surveys had been transferred to the Access database, the data were read into SPSS (version 13.0) for analysis. The SPSS data file included the survey data for 757 respondents.

### **2.5.1 Item Analysis**

Initial data validation procedures included examination of records for completeness and correctness. Missing items were counted across individual records and percent missing was calculated. Developing and conducting logic checks for proper adherence to skip patterns and assurance of in-range values examined response validity.

### **2.5.2 Scale Analysis**

Scales were calculated from items to measure the components outlined in the conceptual framework (see Appendix G). The measurement scales were examined for floor and ceiling effects and percent missing was calculated for each scale. Chronbach's alphas were computed, along with inter-item and item-total correlations to evaluate the internal consistency of the measurement scales. The distributions of the computed scales were examined for normality.

Additionally, confirmatory factor analyses (CFAs) were run on each scale (using Mplus, version 3.13) to validate the proposed factor structure of the components. When a CFA did not support a proposed factor structure, an exploratory factor analysis (EFA) was run to empirically determine a more acceptable structure.

Regression analyses assessed the psychometric validity of the coercion measure, specifically its convergent and predictive validity. The regression analyses were run for all respondents and for males and females separately.

### **3. RESULTS OF THE STUDY**

#### **3.1 Development of Coercion Related Measures**

Scales and sub-scales were constructed from individual survey items to measure coercion related constructs. The survey instrument is found in Appendix J.

The results of an item analysis showed that two respondents were missing more than 60% items overall. These cases were excluded from further analyses. Sixty-six cases were missing 60% or more on at least one section; the largest number of missing on any one section was 15. Any respondents missing 60% or more on any section were not used in the scale computations for that section.

A review of the distributions of the scales showed approximation to normality with no floor or ceiling effects (based on 80% or more of respondents having either the lowest or highest score).

Internal consistency of the scales was high; all Chronbach's alphas for the overall coercion-related constructs (demands, surveillance and coercion) were .86 and higher for both partner as coercer and respondent as coercer.

##### **3.1.1 Demands**

Demands made by partner to respondent and demands made by respondent to partner were measured by two separate sets of 48 items. These items comprise 9 subscales:

1. Personal Activities/Appearance
2. Support/Social life/Family
3. Household
4. Work/Economic/Resources
5. Health
6. Intimate relationship
7. Legal
8. Immigration
9. Children/Parenting

###### **3.1.1.1 By Partner**

Items to measure demands made by *partner to respondent* are found in Section 2A of the survey instrument. A confirmatory factor analysis (CFA) supported a nine-factor structure (CFI = .911, TLI = .955, RMSEA = .053).

### **3.1.1.2 By Respondent**

Items to measure demands made by *respondent to partner* are found in Section 3A of the survey instrument. A CFA confirmed the nine-factor structure (CFI = .919, TLI = .963, RMSEA = .049).

## **3.1.2 Surveillance**

Respondents were asked how their partners would know whether they did what was demanded. Respondents were also asked how they would know if their partner did what they demanded. This surveillance construct was measured by two parallel sets of 13 items. No subscales were hypothesized a priori.

### **3.1.2.1 By Partner**

The items to measure partners' surveillance are found in Section 2B of the instrument. A CFA supported surveillance as a one-factor structure (CFI = .974, TLI = .987, RMSEA = .049).

### **3.1.2.2 By Respondent**

The items to measure respondents' surveillance activities are found in Section 3B of the instrument. The results of a CFA also supported surveillance by respondent as a one-factor structure (CFI = .966, TLI = .984, RMSEA = .051).

## **3.1.3 Coercion**

Items asking about threats of negative consequences or not doing what was demanded make up the coercion construct. A parallel set of 31 items comprises the overall construct of coercion—threats from the partner as coercer and threats from the respondent as coercer. The 31 items are further divided into three subscales:

- 1) Harm to You
- 2) Harm to Partner
- 3) Harm to Others

### **3.1.3.1 By Partner**

The items that measure partners' coercion are found in section 2C of the survey instrument. The three-factor structure was supported by the results of a CFA (CFI = .967, TLI = .982, RMSEA = .048).

### **3.1.3.2 By Respondent**

The 31 items that measure respondents' coercion of their partners are found in Section 3C of the instrument. As with the partners' coercion, a three-factor construct was supported (CFI = .976, TLI = .991, RMSEA = .035).

### **3.1.4 Involvement of Third Party**

Respondents were asked if their partners made them think that they would get any one to help them enforce a demand. Conversely, respondents were asked if *they* had made their partner think that they would get someone's help to enforce the respondents' demands.

#### **3.1.4.1 By Partner**

Respondents who said that their partners made them think they would get help to enforce their demands equaled 12.4 percent.

#### **3.1.4.2 By Respondent**

Respondents said that they made their partners think they would get help to enforce their demands equaled 7.8 percent.

### **3.1.5 Response to Coercion—Respondent**

Sixteen items measured respondents' response or reactions to coercion. No sub-scales were hypothesized. A CFA did not support a one-factor structure. The results of an exploratory factor analysis (EFA) yielded a good fit with 2 factors (RMSEA = .043; RMR = .050). The two factors are as follows:

<b>Factor 1 (n=11)</b>	<b>Factor 2 (n=5)</b>
1 Did what your partner wanted, even though you didn't want to	8 Fought back physically
2 Refused to do what he/she said	9 Used/threatened to use a weapon against him/her
3 Tried to talk your partner out of wanting you to do it	14 Filed for a civil protection order
4 Lied about having done what your partner wanted	15 Called the police
5 Sought help from someone else	16 Tried to get criminal charges filed
6 Tried to distract your partner	
7 Tried to avoid him/her	
10 Left home to get away from him/her	
11 Ended (or tried to end) the relationship	
12 Argued back verbally	
13 Did nothing—just didn't do it	

### **3.2 Psychometric Validity of Coercion Measure**

Data analysis provided strong support for convergent validity of the coercion measure by examining relationships between coercion and scores and 1) demands, 2) surveillance, and 3) levels of IPV (Appendix M). Evidence of predictive validity of the coercion measure was also found, based on associations with measures of PTSD, depression, IPV threat appraisal, and fear.

When controlling for physical, sexual, and psychological IPV, evidence of predictive validity was maintained for PTSD, IPV threat appraisal, and fear, but not for depression, suggesting that the newly developed measure of coercion is specific to IPV, and does not reflect general emotional distress. These findings held for both males and females.

### **3.3 Preliminary Test of Gender and Perpetrator/Victim Differences in Coercion-Related Measures**

Further analysis examining gender symmetry and differences between perpetrators and victims of IPV will appear in peer-reviewed published reports.

### **3.4 Dissemination**

The study team initiated dissemination of results of the study during summer 2005. In July 2005, the principal investigators presented “Coercion and IPV: Development of a New Measure,” at the University of New Hampshire’s Family Violence Conference; and in August 2005, the article “Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization,” was published in the journal *Sex Roles* (see Appendix M). Additional dissemination will be conducted.

## REFERENCES

- Archer, John, "Sex Differences in Aggression Between Heterosexual Partners: A Meta-Analytic Review," *Psychological Bulletin*, 2000, 126(5):651-680.
- Bachman, R., "Incidence Rates of Violence Against Women: A Comparison of the Redesigned National Crime Victimization Survey and the 1985 National Family Violence Survey," 1998.
- Bachman, R., and L.E. Saltzman, *Violence Against Women: Estimates from the Redesigned Survey*, NCJ 154348, Bureau of Justice Statistics, U.S. Department of Justice, Washington, DC, 1995.
- Bandura, A., *Social Foundations of Thought and Action: A Social Cognitive Theory*, Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, 1986.
- Brofenbrenner, U., *The Ecology of Human Development: Experiments by Nature and Design*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1979.
- Brown, F.G., *Principles of Educational and Psychological Testing*, Dryden, Hinsdale, Illinois, 1994.
- Campbell, J., L. Rose, J. Kub, and D. Nedd, "Voices of Strength and Resistance: A Contextual and Longitudinal Analysis of Women's Responses to Battering," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 1998, 13(6):743-762.
- Cantos, A.L., P.H. Neidig, and K.D. O'Leary, "Injuries of Women and Men in a Treatment Program for Domestic Violence," *Journal of Family Violence*, 1994, 9(2):113-124.
- Clark, L.A., and D. Watson, "Constructing Validity: Basic Issues in Objective Scale Development," *Psychological Medicine*, 1995, 7(3):309-319.
- Cohen, S., R. Merlmelein, T. Kamarack, and H.M. Hoberman, "Measuring the Functional Components of Social Support," in I.G. Sarason and B.R. Sarason (eds.), *Social Support: Theory, Research, and Applications*, Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, The Netherlands ,1985, pp. 73-94.
- Collins, N.L., and S.J. Reed, "Adult Attachment, Working Models, and Relationship Quality in Dating Couples," *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 1990, 58:644.
- Cromwell, R.E., and D.H. Olson, *Power in Families*, Wiley, New York, New York, 1975.
- Das Dasgupta, S., "Towards an Understanding of Women's Use of Non-Lethal Violence in Intimate Heterosexual Relationships," National Online Resource Center on Violence Against Women, February 2001.

DeKeseredy, W.S. and M.D. Schwartz, "Measuring the Extent of Woman Abuse in Intimate Heterosexual Relationships: A Critique of the Conflict Tactics Scales," National Online Resource Center on Violence Against Women, February 1998.

DeKeseredy, W.S., D.G. Saunders, M.D. Schwartz, and S. Alvi, "The Meanings and Motives for Women's Use of Violence in Canadian College Dating Relationships: Results from a National Survey," *Sociological Spectrum*, 1997, 17:199-222.

Dutton, M.A., "Battered Women's Strategic Response to Violence: The Role of Context," in J.L. Edleson and Z.C. Eisikovits (eds.), *Future Interventions with Battered Women and Their Families*, Sage Publications, Newbury Park, California, 1996.

Dutton, M.A., L.A. Goodman, K. Weinfurt, and N. Vankos, "IPV Threat Appraisal," presented at the Annual Meeting of the International Society for Traumatic Stress Studies, New Orleans, LA, 2001.

Edelson, J.L., and R.M. Tolman, *Intervention for Men Who Batter: An Ecological Perspective*, Sage Publications, Newbury Park, California, 1992.

Fischer, K., N. Vidmar, and R. Ellis, "The Culture of Battering and the Role of Mediation in Domestic Violence Cases," *SMU (Southern Methodist University) Law Review*, 1993, 46:2117.

Foster, S.L., and J.D. Cone, "Validity Issues in Clinical Assessment," *Psychological Assessment*, 1995, 7(3):248-260 .

French, J.R.P., and B.H. Raven, "The Bases of Social Power," in D. Cartwright (ed.), *Studies in Social Power*, Institute for Social Research, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1959.

Gondolf, E.W., "Who Are Those Guys? Towards a Behavioral Typology of Batterers," *Violence and Victims*, 1988, 3:187-204.

Gordon, A.D., *Classification*, Chapman and Hall, London, England, 1981.

Hair, J.F., and W.C. Black, "Cluster Analysis," in L. Grimm and P.R. Yarnold (eds.), *Reading and Understanding More Multivariate Statistics*, American Psychological Association, Washington, DC, 2000.

Hamberger, L.K., J.M. Lohr, D. Bonge, and D.F. Tolin, "A Large Sample Empirical Typology of Male Spouse Abusers and its Relationship to Dimensions of Abuse," *Violence and Victims*, 1996, 11:277-292.

Harter, S., P.L. Waters, L.M. Pettitt, and N. Whitesell, "Autonomy and Connectedness as Dimensions of Relationship Styles in Men and Women," *Journal of Social and Personal Relationships*, 1997, 14(2):147-164.

Haynes, S.N., D.C.S. Richard, and E.S. Kubany, "Content Validity in Psychological Assessment: A Functional Approach to Concepts and Methods," *Psychological Assessment*, 1995, 7(3):238-247.

Hinkin, T.R., and C.A. Schriesheim, "Development and Application of New Scales to Measure the French and Raven (1959) Bases of Social Power," *Journal of Applied Psychology*, 1989, 74:561-567.

Holtzworth-Munroe, A., and G.L. Stuart, "Typologies of Batterers: 3 Subtypes and the Differences among Them," *Psychological Bulletin*, 1994, 11:476-497.

Holtzworth-Monroe, A., G.L. Stuart, and G. Hutchinson, "Violence Versus Nonviolent Husbands: Differences in Attachment Patterns, Dependency, and Jealousy," *Journal of Family Psychology*, 1997, 11:3314-3331.

Holtzworth-Monroe, A., J.C. Meehan, K. Herron, U. Rehman, and G.L. Stuart, "Testing the Holtzworth-Munroe and Stuart (1994) Batterer Typology," *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 1994, 2000, 68(6):1000-1019.

Johnson, M.P., "Conflict and Control: Images of Symmetry and Asymmetry in Domestic Violence," in Alan Booth, Ann C. Crouter, and Mari Clements (eds.), *Couples in Conflict*, Lawrence Erlbaum, Hillsdale, New Jersey, 2000.

Johnson, M.P., "Patriarchal Terrorism and Common Couple Violence: Two Forms of Violence Against Women," *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 1995, 57:283-294.

Johnson, M.P., and Kathleen J. Ferraro, "Research on Domestic Violence in the 1990s: Making Distinctions," *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, November 2000, 62(4):948-963.

Loo, R., and K. Thorpe, "Confirmatory Factor Analyses of the Full and Short Versions of the Marlowe-Crowne Social Desirability Scale," *Journal of Social Psychology*, 2000, 140(5):628-635.

Molm, L.D., *Coercive Power in Social Exchange*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom, 1997.

National Institute of Justice, "Workshop on Gender Symmetry: Summary of Workshop Discussion," Violence Victimization Division, Office of Research and Evaluation, November 20, 2000.

Nesler, M.S., H. Aguinis, B.M. Quigley, S.J. Lef, and J.T. Tedeschi, "The Development and Validation of a Scale Measuring Global Social Power Based on French and Raven's Power Taxonomy," *Journal of Applied Social Psychology*, 1999, 29(4):750-771.

- Nunnally, J.C., *Psychometric Theory* (2nd ed.), McGraw-Hill, New York, New York, 1978.
- O'Leary, K.D., "Psychological Abuse: A Variable Deserving Critical Attention in Domestic Violence," *Violence and Victims*, 1999, 14(1):3-23.
- Pence, E., and M. Paymar, *Power and Control: Tactics of Men Who Batter*, Minnesota Program Development, Inc., Duluth, Minnesota, 1986.
- Radloff, L.S. "The CES-D Scale: A Self-Report Depression Scale for Research in the General Population," *Applied Psychological Measurement*, 1977, 1:385-401.
- Raju, N.S., W.J. van der Linden, and P.F. Fleer, "IRT-based Internal Measures of Differential Functioning of Items and Tests," *Applied Psychological Measurement*, 1995, 19(4):353-368.
- Raven, B.H., "The Bases of Power: Origins and Recent Developments," *Journal of Social Psychology*, 1993, 49(4):227-251.
- Raven, B.H., R. Centers, and A. Rodrigues, "The Bases of Conjugal Power," in R.E. Cromwell and D.H. Olson (eds.), *Power in Families*, Wiley, New York, New York, 1975.
- Reynolds, W.M., "Development of Reliable and Valid Short Forms of the Marlowe-Crowne Social Desirability Scale," *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 1982, 38(1):119-125.
- Saltzman, L.E., and L.A. Fingerhut, "Building Data Systems for Monitoring and Responding to Violence Against Women," *Morbidity and Mortality Weekly Report*, 2000, 49(RR-11):1-16.
- Saunders, D., "A Typology of Men Who Batter: Three Types Derived from Cluster Analysis," *American Orthopsychiatry*, 1992, 62:264-275.
- Saunders, D., "When Battered Women Use Violence: Husband-abuse and Self-defense," *Violence and Victims*, 1986, 1:47-60.
- Schreurs, K.M.G., and B.P. Buunk, "Closeness, Autonomy, Equity, and Relationship Satisfaction in Lesbian Couples," *Psychology of Women Quarterly*, 1996, 20(4):577-592.
- Smith, P.H., J.B. Smith, and J.A. Earp, "Beyond the Measurement Trap: A Reconstructed Conceptualization and Measurement of Woman Battering," *Psychology of Women Quarterly*, 1999, 23(1):177-193.
- Steadman, H.J., E. Silver, J. Monahan, P.S. Appelbaum, P. Clark Robbins, E.P. Mulvey, T. Grisso, L.H. Roth, and S. Banks, "A Classification Tree Approach to the Development of Actuarial Violence Risk Assessment Tools," *Law & Human Behavior*, 2000, 24(1):83-100.
- Straus, M., and R. Gelles, *Violence in American Families: Risk Factors and Adoptions to Violence in 8,145 Families*, Transaction Publishers, New Brunswick, Canada, 1990.

- Straus, M.A. "The Controversy over Domestic Violence by Women: A Methodological, Theoretical, and Sociology of Science Analysis," in X. Arriaga and S. Oskamp (eds.), *Violence in Intimate Relationships*, Sage, Thousand Oaks, California, 1999.
- Straus, M.A., S.L. Hamby, S. Boney-McCoy, and D.B. Sugarman, "The Revised Conflict Tactics Scales (CTS2): Development and Preliminary Psychometric Data," *Journal of Family Issues*, 1996, 17:283-316.
- Stuckless, N., "A Simple Lesson in Item Validity: Qualitative Data Informing Quantitative Findings," *Traumatic Stress Points* (in press).
- Tabachnick, B., and L. Fidell, *Using Multivariate Statistics*, (3rd ed.), Harper Collins, New York, New York, 1996.
- Tjaden, P., and N. Thoennes, *Full Report of the Prevalence, Incidence, and Consequences of Violence Against Women*, U.S. Department of Justice, Washington, DC, 2000.
- Tolman, R., "The Development of a Measure of Psychological Maltreatment of Women by Their Male Partners," *Violence and Victims*, 1989, 4(3):173-189.
- Tolman, R., "The Validation of the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory," *Violence and Victims*, 1999, 14(1):25-37.
- Ventureyra, V.A.G., S. Yao, J. Cottraux, I. Note, and C. De Mey-Guillard, "The Validation of the Posttraumatic Stress Disorder Checklist Scale in Posttraumatic Stress Disorder and Nonclinical Subjects," *Psychotherapy and Psychosomatics*, 71(1): 47-53.
- Waltz, J., J.C. Babcock, N.S. Jacobson, and J.M. Gottman, "Testing a Typology of Batterers," *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 2001, 68(4):658-669.
- Wright, B.D., and G.N. Masters, *Rating Scale Analysis*, Mesa Press, Chicago, Illinois, 1982.
- Yosihama, M., "Reinterpreting Strength and Safety in a Socio-cultural Context: Dynamics of Domestic Violence and Experiences of Women of Japanese Descent," *Children and Youth Services Review*, 2000, 22(3-4):207-229.

## **Appendices**

## **Appendix A**

### Advisory Panel and Project Team Members

## **Appendix A**

### **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence (MCC)**

#### **ADVISORY PANEL AND PROJECT TEAM MEMBERS**

##### **ADVISORY PANEL**

###### **David Adams, Ed.D.**

Program and Research Director

Emerge

2380 Massachusetts Avenue, Suite 101

Cambridge, MA 02140

Phone: 617-547-9879

E-mail: dadams9@msn.com

Dr. Adams co-founded Emerge, the first treatment program in the nation for spouse abusers. He coordinates the development and implementation of research projects at Emerge including an ongoing study of domestic homicides. In collaboration with a battered women's program, he also co-founded the state's first preventive education program on relationship abuse for middle and high school students.

###### **Joyce Chung, M.D.**

Clinical Associate Professor of Psychiatry

Department of Psychiatry

Georgetown University Medical Center

3800 Reservoir Road, NW

Washington, DC 20007

Phone: 202-687-8609

E-mail: chungjy@georgetown.edu

Dr. Chung, a psychiatrist with postdoctoral training in medical anthropology, is a professor, researcher, and medical staff member at Georgetown University Medical Center. She has conducted numerous studies on the affect of cultural beliefs on the treatment of depression, the prevention and treatment of HIV infection in psychiatric patients, and AIDS in special populations.

**Sarah Cook, Ph.D.**  
Assistant Professor  
Department of Psychology  
Georgia State University  
140 Decatur Street, 11th Floor  
Atlanta, GA 30303  
Phone: 404-651-2283  
E-mail: scook@gsu.edu

Dr. Cook is the principal investigator on a project to investigate the role of context, meaning, and method in the measurement of central violence against women constructs. Previously, she conducted research on the role of power and control in women's intimate relationships as a means of enhancing an HIV preventive intervention.

**Shamita Das Dasgupta, Ph.D.**  
Co-founder and Development Coordinator  
Manavi  
7 Fletcher Drive  
Montville, NJ 07045  
Phone: 973-334-7356  
E-mail: dasgupta@worldnet.att.net

Dr. Das Dasgupta is the co-founder of Manavi, an organization for South Asian immigrant women. She has published numerous articles on violence in the South Asian community and women's use of violence. She currently serves as a board member of the New Jersey Governor's Domestic Violence Fatalities Review Board, Praxis International, the Advisory Committee of National Applied Research on Violence Against Women Network, and the Battered Women's Justice Project.

**Walter DeKeseredy, Ph.D.**  
Professor  
Department of Sociology and Anthropology  
Ohio University  
Athens, OH 45701  
Phone: 740-593-1376  
E-mail: dekesere@ohio.edu

Dr. DeKeseredy has published extensively on the issues of sexual assault and woman abuse on college campuses. He currently is a co-investigator on a three-year longitudinal study of marital conflict and resolution in 440 Swiss families and a consultant for a national evaluation of the grants to combat violence against women on campus program.

**Ed Gondolf, Ed.D.**

Associate Director of Research, Mid-Atlantic Addiction Training Institute  
Professor of Sociology, Indiana University of Pennsylvania  
1098 Oakland Avenue  
Indiana, PA 15705  
Phone: 724-357-4749  
E-mail: egondolf@grove.iup.edu

Dr. Gondolf has conducted research on the response of the courts, mental health practitioners, alcohol treatment clinicians, and batterer programs to domestic violence. He currently is the principal investigator of a multi-site, seven-year evaluation of batterer intervention programs that have tracked over 800 batterers and their female partners in four cities. He is the founding president of the Domestic Abuse Counseling Center in Pittsburgh and has authored eight books on woman abuse.

**Michael Johnson, Ph.D.**

Associate Professor of Sociology, Women's Studies and African & African American Studies  
Associate Head, Department of Sociology  
The Pennsylvania State University  
211 Oswald Tower  
University Park, PA 16802  
Phone: 814-865-2527  
E-mail: mpj@psu.edu

Dr. Johnson has conducted extensive research on violence against women in the family and has conceptualized a typology of violence in intimate partner relationships. He has published extensively and is a frequent speaker on the issues of violence against women, men's use of violence, conflict in family relationships, and making distinctions between the different types of family violence.

**Lucy Laufe, Ph.D.**

Associate Professor, Department of Anthropology and Sociology  
Montgomery College  
20200 Observation Drive  
Germantown, MD 20876  
Phone: 301-353-1965  
E-mail: llaufe@mc.cc.md.us

Dr. Laufe has conducted numerous field-based studies in Latin America. She recently was awarded a fellowship by the Department of Education to teach an international education seminar on culture change, cultural diversity, and ethnicity in the U.S.

**Charles Lidz, Ph.D.**

Director, Center for Research on Mental Health Services  
Department of Psychiatry  
University of Massachusetts Medical Center  
55 Lake Avenue North  
Worcester, MA 01655  
Phone: 508-856-5498  
E-mail: chuck.lidz@umassmed.edu

Dr. Lidz is currently the principal investigator on a study of violent incidents and recently served as the principal investigator on a project to study informed consent and therapeutic misconception. He is a co-investigator on a study that has focused on developing a measure of perceived coercion surrounding in-patient admission decisions. He has published extensively on the issue of coercion and the provision of mental health services.

**Leslye Orloff, J.D.**

Senior Staff Attorney and Program Director  
Immigrant Women Program  
NOW Legal Defense and Education Fund  
1522 K Street, NW, Suite 550  
Washington, DC 20005  
Phone: 202-326-0040  
E-mail: lorloff@nowldef.org

Ms. Orloff is the founding director of the Immigrant Women Program, which undertakes policy advocacy, education, and training on issues affecting immigrant women's legal rights. The work of the program also includes the co-coordination of the National Network on Behalf of Battered Immigrant Women.

**Sue Osthoff**

Director  
National Clearinghouse for the Defense of Battered Women  
125 S. 9th Street, Suite 302  
Philadelphia, PA 19107  
Phone: 215-351-0010  
E-mail: sueo@ncdbw.org

Ms. Osthoff co-founded and currently directs the National Clearinghouse for the Defense of Battered Women, an organization that provides resources and information to battered women charged with crimes and to members of their defense teams. The organization works closely with other national, state, and local battered women's, criminal defense, and incarcerated women's organizations to form a more cohesive and comprehensive response to battered women charged with crimes.

**Ellen Pence, Ph.D.**  
Executive Director  
Praxis International  
202 East Superior Street  
Duluth, MN 55802  
Phone: 218-722-4820  
E-mail: [praxisep@aol.com](mailto:praxisep@aol.com)

Dr. Pence is a co-founder of the Domestic Abuse Intervention Project and has been active in institutional change work for battered women since 1975. She is the author of two books and several educational manuals and curricula for classes for battered women, men who batter, and developing a coordinated community response to domestic violence.

**Rose Pulliam, M.S.W.**  
Statewide Coordinator  
Vermont Network Against Domestic Violence and Sexual Assault  
P.O. Box 405  
Montpelier, VT 05601  
Phone: 802-223-1302  
E-mail: [rose@vtnetwork.org](mailto:rose@vtnetwork.org)

Ms. Pulliam has extensive experience providing technical assistance to communities starting coordinated community task forces to address domestic violence. She has participated in state-level policy and curriculum development and is a public speaker and trainer at the state and local level for law enforcement, court officials, victims' advocates, mental health professionals, and medical personnel.

**Rachel Rodriguez, Ph.D.**  
Assistant Professor, School of Nursing  
University of Wisconsin  
600 Highland Avenue  
Madison, WI 53792  
Phone: 608-262-0051  
E-mail: [rarodri1@facstaff.wisc.edu](mailto:rarodri1@facstaff.wisc.edu)

Dr. Rodriguez's research is focused on developing knowledge that will be used for social and system change in the area of domestic violence programming and policy in the Latina immigrant and migrant farmworker women communities. She currently is working on developing the Institute for Migrant and Seasonal Farmworker Research and Policy at the School of Nursing.

**Beverly Wilkins**  
Owner and Consultant  
Peaceful Nations  
1208 San Pedro, N.E., #212  
Albuquerque, NM 87110  
Phone: 505-268-5863  
E-mail: [bjwilkins@qwest.edu](mailto:bjwilkins@qwest.edu)

Ms. Wilkins is the owner of Peaceful Nations, a consulting firm providing expertise on issues surrounding violence against women, children, and families; cultural diversity; and program development and implementation. She has more than 20 years of experience in the field of domestic violence and has published and presented numerous papers on the issues of violence against Native American women.

**Oliver Williams, Ph.D.**  
Executive Director  
Institute on Domestic Violence in the African American Community  
School of Social Work  
University of Minnesota  
290 Peters Hall  
1404 Gortner Avenue  
St. Paul, MN 55108  
Phone: 612-624-5357  
E-mail: [owilliam@tc.umn.edu](mailto:owilliam@tc.umn.edu)

Dr. Williams has published extensively and is an internationally recognized speaker on domestic violence in the African American community. His work has included research and curriculum development on such topics as treatment for African American men who batter, partner abuse programs and cultural competency, and elder maltreatment and violence.

## **PROJECT TEAM**

### **Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.**

Professor

Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
620 Kober Cogan Hall  
Washington, DC 20007  
Phone: 202-687-1997  
E-mail: mad27@georgetown.edu

Dr. Dutton, principal investigator for this project, is a clinical psychologist and forensic expert with extensive experience in the area of domestic violence. She is the principal investigator for the National Evaluation of the Rural Domestic Violence and Child Victimization Enforcement Grant Program and two longitudinal studies investigating the developmental trajectory of domestic violence among battered women, funded by NIJ and CDC.

### **Lisa Goodman, Ph.D.**

Assistant Professor

Department of Counseling Psychology  
Boston College  
140 Commonwealth Avenue  
Chestnut Hill, MA 02467  
Phone: 617-552-1725  
E-mail: goodmalc@bc.edu

Dr. Goodman, co-investigator for this project, has focused her research on community responses to domestic violence and the prevalence and effects of violence against underserved women including homeless, low-income, and severely mentally ill populations. She is the principal investigator on an evaluation of the Targeted Offender Program in Washington, DC, a program that will create a specialized multidisciplinary team to provide intensive services to victims of the most serious, high-risk, non-fatal domestic violence cases in the District of Columbia.

**Aileen Worrell, M.S.W.**

Manager

COSMOS Corporation

3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950

Bethesda, MD 20814

Phone: 301-215-9100 ext 294

E-mail: aworrell@cosmoscorp.com

Ms. Worrell, the coordinator for this project, also serves as the coordinator for the National Evaluation of the Rural Domestic Violence and Child Victimization Enforcement Grant Program. Ms Worrell recently completed an evaluation of an initiative that provided violence prevention programs for youth in violent and impoverished urban neighborhoods.

**Leora Rosen, Ph.D., M.P.H.**

Senior Social Science Analyst

National Institute of Justice

Office of Research and Evaluation

Violence and Victimization Division

810 Seventh Street, NW

Washington, DC 20531

Phone: 202-616-2452

E-mail: rosenl@ojp.usdoj.gov

Dr. Rosen, NIJ program manager for this project, plans, manages, and evaluates NIJ-funded research, and provides scientific guidance to NIJ in the development of its research agenda on Violence Against Women and Family Violence. Her research has included a study on sexual harassment of women in the military, the effects of childhood physical and sexual abuse on soldiers' readiness and psychological well-being, and a study on intimate partner violence and its relationship to military organizational climate.

## **Appendix B**

What The Literature (And Categories Of Literature) Tell Us: The In-Depth Overview

## **Appendix B**

### **DEVELOPMENT AND VALIDATION OF A COERCIVE CONTROL MEASURE FOR INTIMATE PARTNER VIOLENCE**

#### **WHAT THE LITERATURE (AND CATEGORIES OF LITERATURE) TELL US: THE IN-DEPTH OVERVIEW**

##### ***TABLE OF CONTENTS:***

- p.2 Causes and correlates: General
- p.5 Causes and correlates: Cross-cultural
- p.7 Causes and correlates: Implications for relationship dynamics
- p.11 Causes and correlates: Societal dynamics
- p.13 Causes and correlates: Batterer dynamics
- p.21 Causes and correlates: Childhood
- p.23 Causes and correlates: Victim dynamics
- p.26 Coercive/reward power
- p.42 Goals/motivation
- p.46 Measurement
- p.62 Elaboration of coercion concept
- p.73 Theory: General
- p.81 Theory: Cultural differences
- p.84 Female perpetrators
- p.98 LGBT

\*\*Indicates the article which follows is also categorized in another category

***Causes and correlates: General***

**TI: Title**

**Sexual violence and coercion in close relationships**

**AU: Author**

Muehlenhard, Charlene L; Goggins, Mary F; Jones, Jayme M;  
Satterfield, Arthur T

**AF: Author Affiliation**

U Kansas, Lawrence, KS, US

**SO: Source**

McKinney, Kathleen (Ed); Sprecher, Susan (Ed). (1991). Sexuality in close relationships (pp. 155-175). Hillsdale, NJ, US: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc. xiii, 224 pp.

**IB: ISBN**

0805807195 (hardcover)

**PB: Publisher**

Hillsdale, NJ, US: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc

**AB: Abstract**

(From the chapter) covers sexual violence and coercion in close relationships / discussion includes sexual coercion of both females and males in both heterosexual and homosexual relationships / discussion will be limited to adult relationships / sexual coercion will be construed broadly, including nonviolent, as well as violent, sexual coercion / includes the prevalence, causes, and consequences of sexual violence and coercion in close relationships (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1991

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Chapter

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Partner Abuse; \*Psychosexual Behavior; Sexual Abuse; Violence

**ID: Identifiers**

discusses sexual coercion of males & females in heterosexual & homosexual relationships

**CL: Classification**

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

**PO: Population**

Human

**FE: Features**

References

**TA: Target Audience**

Psychology: Professional & Research  
UD: Update  
19970101  
AN: Accession Number  
1991-98536-008

**TI: Title**

**Jealousy induction as a predictor of power and the use of other control methods in heterosexual relationships**

AU: Author

Brainerd, Edwin G; Hunter, Patricia A; Moore, DeWayne; Thompson, Tisha R

AF: Author Affiliation

Clemson U, Psychology Dept, SC, US

SO: Source

Psychological Reports. Vol 79(3, Pt 2), Dec 1996, pp. 1319-1325

IS: ISSN

0033-2941

PB: Publisher

Psychological Reports, US

AB: Abstract

113 university students completed the Psychological Aggression Scale for Men and Women, the Interpersonal Control Scale for Men and Women, a measure of physical violence (the Conflict Tactics Scale), and a scale assessing use and approval of jealousy-inducing behaviors (JIBs). Use and approval of JIBs were good predictors of high need for interpersonal control and use of psychological aggression. Use of JIBs, but not approval of JIBs, was a strong predictor of physical aggression toward one's partner. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1996

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Emotional Control; \*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Jealousy

ID: Identifiers

use & approval of jealousy inducing behaviors & need for interpersonal control & use of physical &/or psychological aggression toward partner; college students

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population  
Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**TI: Title**

**Parental attitudes, stress and nonattentiveness as predictors of coercion in family systems**

AU: Author

Kamin, Edward M

AF: Author Affiliation

Catholic U of America

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International. Vol 44(10-B), Apr 1984, pp.  
3199

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1984

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Behavior Problems; \*Childrearing Attitudes; \*Family Relations;  
\*Marital Conflict; \*Stress

ID: Identifiers

parental childrearing attitudes & marital & other stresses &  
nonattentive behavior; coercion in family systems; families with  
7-10 yr olds with behavior problems

CL: Classification

2956 Childrearing & Child Care

PO: Population

Human; Childhood (birth-12 yrs); School Age (6-12 yrs); Adulthood  
(18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19840901

AN: Accession Number

1984-54757-00

***Causes and correlates: Cross-cultural***

**TI: Title**

**Male dominance and sexual coercion**

**AU: Author**

Gregor, Thomas A

**AF: Author Affiliation**

Vanderbilt U, Nashville, TN, US

**SO: Source**

Stigler, James W. (Ed); Shweder, Richard A. (Ed); et al. (1990).

Cultural psychology: Essays on comparative human development (pp. 477-495). New York, NY, US: Cambridge University Press; New York, NY, US: Cambridge University Press. ix, 625 pp.

**IB: ISBN**

0521371546 (hardcover); 0521378044 (paperback)

**PB: Publisher**

New York, NY, US: Cambridge University Press; New York, NY, US: Cambridge University Press

**AB: Abstract**

(From the chapter) the entire matter of gender relationship is so caught up in the politics of social change that it is hard to look at issues such as "dominance" or "sexual coercion" dispassionately / I will try to do so, using information from a variety of societies and focusing on one culture, that of the Mehinaku Indians of Brazil / my intention is to explore the ways in which sexual coercion functions as both symbol and substance of male dominance

men's cults and sexuality / coercion, sexual arousal and the dissociative nature of male sexuality / why men rape / cross-cultural studies and the correlates of coercion / "dragging women off": individual rape / motivation and meaning / gang rape: being sexed by many persons / symbolism and meanings / rape and fear / moral ambivalence (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1990

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Chapter

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Dominance; \*Rape; \*Sex Roles; American Indians; Cross Cultural Differences; Human Males; Motivation

**CL: Classification**

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

**PO: Population**

Human; Male

FE: Features

References

TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1990-97306-015

***Causes and correlates: Implications for relationship dynamics***

**TI: Title**

**Power and problem appraisal: Perceptual foundations of the chilling effect in dating relationships**

**AU: Author**

Solomon, Denise Haunani; Samp, Jennifer Anne

**AF: Author Affiliation**

U Wisconsin, Dept of Communication Arts, Madison, WI, US

**SO: Source**

Journal of Social & Personal Relationships. Vol 15(2), Apr 1998,  
pp. 191-209

**IS: ISSN**

0265-4075

**PB: Publisher**

Sage Publications, Ltd., England

**AB: Abstract**

Investigated the extent to which perceptions of a partner's power influenced the appraised severity of hypothetical problem scenarios and the likelihood that individuals would avoid confrontation in those situations. 64 male and 146 female 18-45 yr olds in dating relationships completed questionnaires assessing punitive and dependence power, aggression, and relational alternatives. Hypothetical situations were also presented in which Ss rated how likely they would be to confront or avoid their partners when they were engaging in potentially problematic behavior. Results indicate that attributing either dependence or punitive power to dating partners corresponded with less severe appraisals of problems and plans to avoid confrontation. Problem severity appraisals did not mediate associations between perceptions of a partner's power and plans to avoid confrontation. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1998

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Adult Attitudes; \*Conflict; \*Couples; \*Interpersonal Influences;  
\*Social Dating; Avoidance

**ID: Identifiers**

perceptions of partner's influence; appraisal of problems & confrontation & avoidance plans; dating couples

**CL: Classification**

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); US

**TI: Title**

**The effects of power on the use of heavy contending and problem-solving in intimate relationships**

AU: Author

Miller, Jeanine Courtney

AF: Author Affiliation

Vanderbilt U, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9915103

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 59(12-B), Jun 1999, pp. 6492

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

A model of conflicts tactics use in intimate relationships is proposed that utilizes interdependence theory to make predictions about the effects of marital power on individual's use of punishing, and non-punishing conflict tactics. The interdependence model asserts that the primary issue in understanding whether men and women will respond with punitive tactics during conflict with a loved one is to examine the distribution of felt dependence in the relationship. Dependence is a better definition of marital power, and a more accurate predictor of contentiousness than status differences between spouses. Specifically, the model proposed that couples in which both partners are mutually high in dependence represent mutually high power couples, who were expected to engage in the highest levels of punishing tactics. Men and women, comprising sixty married and cohabiting couples, provided retrospective accounts of their own, and their partner's use of tactics during two specific, highly salient conflicts. Couple members also provided information concerning their dependence upon and satisfaction with the relationship, as well as demographic characteristics and sex role identity. The study provided support for interdependence theory assertions, but not in the direction expected. Women were more punitive with their partners when women were high in dependence (high male power) and men were low in dependence (low female power). Status differences in favor of women were associated with a significantly higher use of punitive tactics by men. In general, the members of couples

tended to reciprocate their partner's problem solving tactics. The study uncovered a bias in observations made about the partner. Men and women distorted their reports of the partner's conflict behavior so that factors which predicted self-reported tactics also predicted the subject's reports of their partner's tactics. The results were discussed in terms of gender differences in the relative importance men and women place on status hierarchy versus interpersonal closeness. Finally, various methodological implications of biases in couple's reports and directions for future research were discussed. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1999

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Conflict; \*Intimacy; \*Marital Relations; \*Power; \*Problem Solving; Interpersonal Interaction

ID: Identifiers

power; use of heavy contending & problem-solving in intimate relationships; married persons; application of interdependence theory

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention; 3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**TI: Title**

**Relational control and physical aggression in satisfying marital relationships**

AU: Author

Rogers, L Edna; Castleton, Anne; Lloyd, Sally A

AF: Author Affiliation

U Utah, Salt Lake City, UT, US

SO: Source

Cahn, Dudley D. (Ed); Lloyd, Sally A. (Ed). (1996). Family violence from a communication perspective (pp. 218-239). Thousand Oaks, CA, US: Sage Publications, Inc; Thousand Oaks, CA, US: Sage Publications, Inc. xi, 284 pp.

IB: ISBN

0803959826 (hardcover); 0803959834 (paperback)

PB: Publisher

Thousand Oaks, CA, US: Sage Publications, Inc; Thousand Oaks, CA,

US: Sage Publications, Inc

AB: Abstract

(From the chapter) examines the relationship between patterns of relational control and physical aggression in couples who report different levels of satisfaction [either moderate or high] but relatively happy marital relationships / offer a descriptive analysis of communication patterns that differentiates among physically aggressive and nonaggressive couples as a way to gain more understanding of control dynamics that may lead to or hold at bay nonconstructive patterns of conflict interaction / 25 couples [participated in the study] (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1996

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Chapter; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Interpersonal Communication; \*Interpersonal Influences; \*Physical Abuse; Marital Satisfaction; Partner Abuse; Spouses

ID: Identifiers

communication patterns & physical aggression & relational control & marital satisfaction; spouses

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1996-98088-011

## *Causes and correlates: Societal dynamics*

### **TI: Title**

**Feminist explanations: Male power, hostility, and sexual coercion**

### AU: Author

Stock, Wendy E

### AF: Author Affiliation

Texas A & M U, Assistant Professor in Psychology, College Station,  
TX, US

### SO: Source

Grauerholz, Elizabeth (Ed); Koralewski, Mary A. (Ed). (1991).

Sexual coercion: A sourcebook on its nature, causes, and  
prevention (pp. 61-73). Lexington, MA, US: Lexington Books/D. C.  
Heath and Company. xii, 240 pp.

### IB: ISBN

0669217867 (hardcover)

### PB: Publisher

Lexington, MA, US: Lexington Books/D. C. Heath and Company

### AB: Abstract

(From the chapter) applies a feminist analysis to explain the ubiquitous presence of sexual coercion in our society / this analysis defines sexual coercion as power motivated, upholding a system of male dominance / feminist theory provides a theoretical basis for the understanding of sexual coercion as a means by which male dominance and power is established and maintained rape as a power-motivated crime / male dominance and sexual coercion / sexual coercion: the social control of women / the role of socialization / pornography: the cultural eroticization of sexual aggression (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### LA: Language

English

### PY: Publication Year

1991

### PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Chapter

### DE: Descriptors

\*Feminism; \*Sex Offenses; \*Sexual Abuse; Dominance; Human Males;  
Pornography; Power; Rape; Social Control; Socialization; Theories

### ID: Identifiers

presents a feminist analysis of the sexual coercion of women by men

### CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior; 2970 Sex Roles &  
Women's Issues

### PO: Population

Human; Male

FE: Features

References

TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1991-97408-005

***Causes and correlates: Batterer dynamics***

**TI: Title**

**The influence of sex and sex role orientation on sexual coercion**

**AU: Author**

Poppen, Paul J; Segal, Nina J

**AF: Author Affiliation**

George Washington U, Washington, DC, US

**SO: Source**

Sex Roles. Vol 19(11-12), Dec 1988, pp. 689-701

**IS: ISSN**

0360-0025

**PB: Publisher**

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

**AB: Abstract**

100 female and 77 male college students completed a questionnaire in which they indicated whether they had ever used physical or verbal coercive strategies to initiate sexual behavior with a partner, or had ever engaged in sexual behavior in response to a partner's coercive initiatives. Results show that males are far more likely than females to initiate coerced sexual behavior and females are more likely to be victimized. In addition, masculine persons reported using coercive strategies more than other sex role orientation types. However, this was due principally to the fact that males were masculine types much more frequently than females. Therefore, sex (that is, being male or female) seems a more critical factor in determining, initiating, or responding to sexual coercion than sex role orientation. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1988

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Sex Roles

**ID: Identifiers**

sex & sex role orientation; use of physical vs verbal coercive strategies to initiate sexual behavior; college students

**CL: Classification**

2970 Sex Roles & Women's Issues

**PO: Population**

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**UD: Update**

19891101

AN: Accession Number  
1989-36358-001

**TI: Title**

**Sexual coercion among college males: Assessing three theoretical models of coercive sexual behavior**

AU: Author

Boeringer, Scot Bradley

AF: Author Affiliation

U Florida, US

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International. Vol 54(1-A), Jul 1993, pp.  
331

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1993

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Human Males; \*Perpetrators; \*Rape; \*Theory Verification; Social Learning

ID: Identifiers

sexual coercion; male college students; test of social learning vs social bonding vs relative deprivation theories

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Male; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19950401

AN: Accession Number

1995-71717-001

**TI: Title**

**Sexual coercion in high school dating**

AU: Author

Patton, Wendy; Mannison, Mary

AF: Author Affiliation

Queensland U of Technology, School of Learning & Development,  
Kelvin Grove Campus, Australia

SO: Source

Sex Roles. Vol 33(5-6), Sep 1995, pp. 447-457

IS: ISSN

0360-0025

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract

Examined the existence of coercion in sexual activities (sex play and sexual intercourse) during high school, using 217 female and 72 male Australian undergraduates (aged 17-22 yrs) who completed the Intergender Relationships Questionnaire and 2 expanded versions of the Sexual Experiences Survey. 53% of females reported some form of overestimation by male partners of the level of sexual intimacy desired, and 45% of males reported that female partners underestimated the level of sexual intimacy desired. Data illustrate sexual coercion leading to both sex play and intercourse, with a number of factors being implicated in its occurrence, including alcohol and drugs. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Sexual Intercourse (Human)

ID: Identifiers

sex; coercion in sex play & intercourse during high school; 17-22 yr olds; Australia

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adolescence (13-17 yrs); Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19960901

AN: Accession Number

1996-26409-001

**TI: Title**

**Assessing the validity of a multidimensional model of sexual coercion in college men**

AU: Author

Hamburger, Merle Edward

AF: Author Affiliation

State U New York at Albany, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9529111

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 56(5-B), Nov 1995, pp. 2940

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

Two of the most consistently cited frameworks used to explain why people engage in coercive sexual behaviors are the social control (Brownmiller, 1975) and the psychopathology perspectives (Rada, 1978; Groth & Birnbaum, 1979). While these perspectives were once thought to be mutually exclusive, recent research and theoretical conceptualizations indicate that an integration of multiple frameworks may best identify the factors associated with sexual coercion. Participants' responses to 28 self-report measures of hypothesized risk factors for sexual aggression were examined and a structural equation model depicting the interrelations among these constructs was tested. Results supported the contention that factors from both the social control and psychopathological perspectives are essential to interpret the motivation underlying individuals' use of sexually aggressive behaviors. According to the results of the current study, the two focal constructs associated with sexual aggression are traditional sex-role socialization and psychopathy (i.e., having an underlying psychopathic personality). Traditional sex-role socialization influenced the development of rape supportive beliefs, which in turn influenced individuals' rape proclivity as well as their use of sexual aggression. Having an underlying psychopathic personality, on the other hand, influenced individuals' alcohol consumption and coercive sexual fantasies. Results further indicated that alcohol consumption influenced individuals' use of sexually aggressive behavior, while coercive sexual fantasies influenced their rape proclivity. These results underscore the importance of incorporating multiple dimensions when attempting to explain sexually aggressive behaviors. Implications of these results regarding future research, as well as treatment and prevention programs, are discussed. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Psychopathology; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Rape; \*Sex Roles; Human Males

ID: Identifiers

factors associated with sexually aggressive behaviors; college men; application of multidimensional model of sexual coercion

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology; 3100 Personality Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Male; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1995-95021-074

**TI: Title**

**The abusive personality: Violence and control in intimate relationships**

AU: Author

Dutton, Donald G

AF: Author Affiliation

U British Columbia, Vancouver, BC, Canada

SO: Source

1998. New York, NY, US: The Guilford Press. ix, 214 pp.

IB: ISBN

1572303700 (hardcover)

PB: Publisher

New York, NY, US: The Guilford Press

AB: Abstract

(From the jacket) Demonstrates that male abusiveness is more than just a learned pattern of behavior; it is the outgrowth of a particular personality configuration. Findings from the author's research with over 400 batterers are integrated with the literature on object relations, attachment, and psychological trauma to trace the development of the abusive personality from early childhood to adulthood. The author evaluates the strengths and limitations of psychiatric, sociobiological, and feminist approaches, with particular attention to how well they explain the psychological profile of abusers that emerges from his research. The book points out that abusive men are in general easily threatened, jealous, and fearful, and mask these emotions with anger and demands for control. What is less well known is that these subjects also show borderline personality characteristics

and high, chronic levels of trauma symptoms. Linking this symptomatology to elements of childhood experience including physical abuse, rejection and shaming by fathers and insecure attachment, the author delineates the process by which young boys are primed for violence on every level. An overview of a 16-wk group treatment program for abusive men is given, and the efficacy of various intervention approaches is considered. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1998

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Authored Book

DE: Descriptors

\*Attachment Behavior; \*Human Males; \*Object Relations; \*Partner Abuse; \*Personality Development; Emotional Trauma; Physical Abuse

ID: Identifiers

object relations & attachment theory & psychological trauma in development of abusive personality from early childhood to adulthood; male batterers

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Male; Childhood (birth-12 yrs); Adolescence (13-17 yrs); Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

Index; References

TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

TB: Table of Contents

Introduction

Early explanations

Learning of abusiveness

The psychology of the cycle of violence

The structure of the abusive personality

The primitive origins of rage

An anger born of fear: Attachment rage

The early antecedents studies

The treatment of assaultiveness

Notes

References

Index

UD: Update

19981001

AN: Accession Number

1998-06084-000

**TI: Title**

**Frustration, fantasy aggression, and the exercise of coercive power**

AU: Author

Tedeschi, James T

AF: Author Affiliation

State U New York, Albany

SO: Source

Perceptual & Motor Skills. Vol 48(1), Feb 1979, pp. 215-219

IS: ISSN

0031-5125

PB: Publisher

Perceptual & Motor Skills, US

AB: Abstract

Investigated the influence of frustration and aggression in fantasy on a source's exercise of coercive power. Half of the 46 female undergraduate Ss were frustrated and half were not; further, half of the Ss in each group were given the opportunity to express aggression in fantasy via a TAT, and half were not. All Ss were then given coercive power in an interaction with a defiant target in a Prisoner's Dilemma game. Frustration caused Ss to establish higher credibility for their threats, and the opportunity to express aggression in fantasy had an accommodative effect on the use of coercive power. (4 ref) (PsycINFO Database)

Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1979

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Frustration; \*Imagination; \*Interpersonal Interaction;

\*Power;

\*Prisoners Dilemma Game; Aggressiveness

ID: Identifiers

frustration & aggressive expression in fantasy; exercise of coercive power against defiant opponent in Prisoner's Dilemma game; college females

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19800801

AN: Accession Number

1980-23264-001

## ***Causes and correlates: Childhood***

### **TI: Title**

**Coercive family processes: A replication and extension of Patterson's Coercion Model**

### AU: Author

Eddy, J Mark; Leve, Leslie D; Fagot, Beverly I

### AF: Author Affiliation

Oregon Social Learning Ctr, Inc, Eugene, OR, US

### SO: Source

Aggressive Behavior. Vol 27(1), 2001, pp. 14-25

### IS: ISSN

0096-140X

### PB: Publisher

Wiley-Liss Inc, US

### AB: Abstract

G. R. Patterson (1976) hypothesized that aggressive behavior develops in families when parents use coercion as the primary mode for controlling their children. The model has been tested with boys and older children. In this paper, through confirmatory factor analysis, the authors examine how well the coercion model generalizes to 5-yr-old children (boys and girls). Results from 407 Ss suggest that the model fits the data similarly for boys and girls. Few sex differences in child antisocial behavior were found on observed or parent-rated measures, nor were differences found in observed parent aversive responses to child behavior. This implies that similar coercion processes apply to both boys and girls. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### LA: Language

English

### PY: Publication Year

2001

### PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

### DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Childrearing Practices; \*Coercion;  
\*Parental Characteristics

### ID: Identifiers

coercive parenting style; child aggressive behavior; 5 yr olds

### CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

### PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Childhood (birth-12 yrs); Preschool Age (2-5 yrs); US

### FE: Features

References

UD: Update

20010207

AN: Accession Number

2001-16436-002

## ***Causes and correlates: Victim dynamics***

### **TI: Title**

**The differential correlates of sexual coercion and rape**

### **AU: Author**

Testa, Maria; Dermen, Kurt H

### **AF: Author Affiliation**

Research Inst on Addictions, Buffalo, NY, US

### **SO: Source**

Journal of Interpersonal Violence. Vol 14(5), May 1999, pp.  
548-561

### **IS: ISSN**

0886-2605

### **PB: Publisher**

Sage Publications Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.sagepub.com>]

### **AB: Abstract**

Examined the correlates of sexual coercion and rape/attempted rape experiences separately among a sample of 190 women (aged 20-35 yrs) who were at increased risk of sexual victimization as a result of their high levels of sexual activity and alcohol consumption. We hypothesized that personality variables would be associated with sexual coercion but not rape experiences. We found that low self-esteem, low assertiveness, and high sex-related alcohol expectancies were associated with sexual coercion experiences but not with rape or attempted rape. Higher levels of casual sexual activity and alcohol consumption were associated with both types of experiences. Findings suggest that sexual coercion may be prevented by improving sexual assertiveness and weakening alcohol expectancies to emphasize personal control.

(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### **LA: Language**

English

### **PY: Publication Year**

1999

### **PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

### **DE: Descriptors**

\*Coercion; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Rape; \*Sexual Abuse;  
\*Victimization; Alcohol Drinking Patterns; At Risk Populations;  
Human Females

### **ID: Identifiers**

correlates of sexual coercion vs rape; 20-35 yr old females at increased risk for sexual victimization due to sexual activity & alcohol consumption

### **CL: Classification**

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19990701

AN: Accession Number

1999-13263-006

**TI: Title**

**Power and problem appraisal: Perceptual foundations of the chilling effect in dating relationships**

AU: Author

Solomon, Denise Haunani; Samp, Jennifer Anne

AF: Author Affiliation

U Wisconsin, Dept of Communication Arts, Madison, WI, US

SO: Source

Journal of Social & Personal Relationships. Vol 15(2), Apr 1998,  
pp. 191-209

IS: ISSN

0265-4075

PB: Publisher

Sage Publications, Ltd., England

AB: Abstract

Investigated the extent to which perceptions of a partner's power influenced the appraised severity of hypothetical problem scenarios and the likelihood that individuals would avoid confrontation in those situations. 64 male and 146 female 18-45 yr olds in dating relationships completed questionnaires assessing punitive and dependence power, aggression, and relational alternatives. Hypothetical situations were also presented in which Ss rated how likely they would be to confront or avoid their partners when they were engaging in potentially problematic behavior. Results indicate that attributing either dependence or punitive power to dating partners corresponded with less severe appraisals of problems and plans to avoid confrontation. Problem severity appraisals did not mediate associations between perceptions of a partner's power and plans to avoid confrontation.  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1998

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Adult Attitudes; \*Conflict; \*Couples; \*Interpersonal Influences;  
\*Social Dating; Avoidance

ID: Identifiers

perceptions of partner's influence; appraisal of problems &  
confrontation & avoidance plans; dating couples

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood  
(18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); US

## *Coercive/reward power*

### **TI: Title**

**Social power and compliance in health care**

AU: Author

Raven, B H

AF: Author Affiliation

U California, Dept of Psychology, Los Angeles, CA, US

SO: Source

Maes, S. (Ed); Spielberger, C. D. (Ed); et al. (1988). Topics in health psychology (pp. 229-244). New York, NY, John Wiley & Sons. xvi, 314 pp.

IB: ISBN

0471919756 (hardcover)

PB: Publisher

New York, NY, John Wiley & Sons

AB: Abstract

(From the chapter) the degree and forms of compliance and non-compliance are very much affected by the strategies of influence and by the sources of power used by the health practitioner

bases of power and interpersonal influence / coercive power and reward power / contingency contracting / secondary changes following compliance / legitimate and expert power / referent power / informational power / successful influence and its aftermath / training social influence for health practitioners  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### **TI: Title**

**Factors affecting the effectiveness of reward power**

AU: Author

Lindskold, Svenn; Bonoma, Thomas V; Schlenker, Barry R;  
Tedeschi,  
James T

AF: Author Affiliation

Ohio U

SO: Source

Psychonomic Science. Vol. 26(2), Jan 1972, pp. 68-70

IS: ISSN

0033-3131

PB: Publisher

Psychonomic Society Inc, US

AB: Abstract

Gave a simulated promisor the capability of sending promises  
And providing rewards to 180 male and female undergraduates during  
the course of a mixed-motive conflict interaction. Promises were

of either high or low reward value and were fulfilled 10, 50, or 90% of the time; the promisor behaved totally, partially, or not at all accommodatively. When the promisor used his power exploitatively, Ss complied more often to promises of high than to promises of low reward values; but when the promisor was totally accommodative, the magnitude of the reward did not affect compliance, suggesting that normative considerations overrode expected value considerations in the latter conditions.

Postgame impressions of the promisor were affected by all of the independent variable manipulations. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1972

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Conflict; \*Expectations; \*Reinforcement Schedules; \*Rewards;  
\*Social Influences

ID: Identifiers

compliance to promise of reward during mixed-motive conflict interaction; high vs. low reward value & reward fulfillment & total vs. partial vs. no accommodative behavior

### TI: Title

**Reactions to coercive and reward power: The effects of switching influence modes on target compliance**

AU: Author

Schlenker, Barry R; Nacci, Peter; Helm, Bob; Tedeschi, James T

AF: Author Affiliation

U Florida

SO: Source

Sociometry. Vol 39(4), Dec 1976, pp. 316-323

AB: Abstract

Two experiments examined a target's reactions to an influencer who began a conflict-of-interests interaction by using one type of influence mode and then switched to another. In Exp I with 40 female undergraduates, when threat credibility initially was low rather than high, Ss cooperated more with subsequent promises, cooperated more throughout the interaction, and perceived the influencer to be more benevolent and less stingy. These effects were obtained irrespective of subsequent promise credibility, although promise credibility did produce additional effects. In Exp II with a new group of 40 female undergraduates, the credibility of the initial influence mode marginally affected

compliance to the later influence mode. When promises were of high rather than low credibility, Ss tended to comply more to the threats, took longer before first noncomplying, and more frequently announced their own compliant intentions. Findings suggest that credibility does not generalize directly across influence modes to affect compliance. Rather, the type and credibility of the initial influence mode sets the tone for the interaction and prompts targets to reciprocate benevolence with compliance and malevolence with resistance. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1976

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Compliance; \*Credibility; \*Interpersonal Influences;  
\*Persuasive  
Communication; \*Threat

ID: Identifiers

switch from threat to promise influence mode during conflict-of-interest interaction & credibility of modes;  
target  
compliance; college students

CL: Classification

3040 Social Perception & Cognition

#### **TI: Title**

**Response to sexual coercion: A comparison of traditional and non-traditional females**

AU: Author

Sadd, Dianne Louise

AF: Author Affiliation

U Mississippi, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9640329

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 57(7-B), Jan 1997, pp. 4723

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

The purpose of the present study was twofold: to develop a sound

measure of response to sexual coercion and to compare traditional and non-traditional women on their responses to sexual coercion. The development of the Response to Sexual Coercion Scale followed the behavior-analytic approach to test construction put forth by Goldfried and D'Zurilla (1969). The scale was presented to 54 female college students at the University of Mississippi; 26 of whom met criteria for a traditional feminine sex-role orientation and 28 of whom met criteria for a non-traditional feminine sex-role orientation. These women were selected and classified on the basis of their responses to the Sex-Role Ideology Scale (Kalin & Tilby, 1978). The women were then compared in terms of their responses to the sexual coercion situations. It was hypothesized that non-traditional women would respond in a manner that was more likely to lead to successful resistance than would traditional women. Results of the study were consistent with the hypothesis in that non-traditional women responded in a significantly more effective manner than did traditional women. When the items were broken into subgroups, the differences between the traditional and non-traditional groups were illuminated. Non-traditional women responded more effectively than traditional women on scenarios involving authority figures, but no differences between the groups emerged in terms of the effectiveness of their responding to situations involving peers. Three possible explanations for the present findings include the following: (1) traditional women held attitudes and expectations regarding sex-roles that prevented them from feeling justified in standing up for themselves, (2) traditional women did not identify certain scenarios as sexually coercive, and (3) traditional women did not have the knowledge or skills to respond effectively to coercion in these situations.

Whether each of these factors or a combination of them are respons  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Females; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Rating Scales;

\*Test Construction; Conservatism; Responses; Sex Role Attitudes

ID: Identifiers

development of Response to Sexual Coercion Scale; traditional vs  
non-traditional female college students

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention; 3000 Social  
Psychology

PO: Population  
Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs); US  
UD: Update  
19970101  
AN: Accession Number  
1997-95002-481

**TI: Title**

**Social power and compliance in health care**

AU: Author  
Raven, B H  
AF: Author Affiliation  
U California, Dept of Psychology, Los Angeles, CA, US

SO: Source  
Maes, S. (Ed); Spielberger, C. D. (Ed); et al. (1988). Topics in health psychology (pp. 229-244). New York, NY, John Wiley & Sons. xvi, 314 pp.

IB: ISBN  
0471919756 (hardcover)

PB: Publisher  
New York, NY, John Wiley & Sons

AB: Abstract  
(From the chapter) the degree and forms of compliance and non-compliance are very much affected by the strategies of influence and by the sources of power used by the health practitioner bases of power and interpersonal influence / coercive power and reward power / contingency contracting / secondary changes following compliance / legitimate and expert power / referent power / informational power / successful influence and its aftermath / training social influence for health practitioners  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**TI: Title**

**Power strategy use in the intimate relationships of women and men from Mexico and the United States**

AU: Author  
Belk, Sharyn S; Snell, William E; Garcia-Falconi, Renan;  
Hernandez-Sanchez, Julita E

AF: Author Affiliation  
U Texas, Austin, US

SO: Source  
Personality & Social Psychology Bulletin. Vol 14(3), Sep 1988, pp.  
439-447

IS: ISSN  
0146-1672

PB: Publisher

Sage Publications, Inc., US

AB: Abstract

Examined the types of power strategies that 30 undergraduates from Mexico (15 males, 15 females) and 28 male and 79 female undergraduates from the US used with their intimate partners.

Power strategy use refers to the tactics and techniques that men and women use to persuade others to do something for them. Results indicate that Ss from both Mexico and the US reported using a number of different power strategies, although Mexican women and men tended to use more bilateral types of power strategies with their intimate partners. Results are interpreted in terms of I.

Falbo and L. A. Peplau's (see record 1981-10374-001) 2-dimensional model of power strategy use. Falbo and Peplau showed that the use of power strategies in intimate relationships varies along 2 separate dimensions: bilateral (vs unilateral) and direct (vs indirect) power strategies. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000

APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1988

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Cross Cultural Differences; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Intimacy;

\*Male Female Relations; \*Power

ID: Identifiers

power strategies in intimate relationships; male vs female college students; Mexico vs US

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Mexico; US

UD: Update

19890701

AN: Accession Number

1989-22259-001

### **TI: Title**

**Risk and power use: Constraints on the use of coercion in exchange**

AU: Author

Molm, Linda D

AF: Author Affiliation

U Arizona, Dept of Sociology, Tucson, AZ, US

SO: Source

American Sociological Review. Vol 62(1), Feb 1997, pp. 113-133

IS: ISSN

0003-1224

PB: Publisher

American Sociological Assn, US

AB: Abstract

Developed and tested a theory arguing that risk and fear of loss constrain the use of coercion in social exchange. An experiment was conducted in which 160 college students participated in 1 of 4 possible exchange networks, each composed of 4 actors. The risk of power use was manipulated within a basic network structure in which actors B and D were highly dependent on A and C, respectively, for rewards, reward power was imbalanced in the A-B and C-D relations in favor of A and C, and coercive power was imbalanced in these relations in favor of B and D. A 2nd experiment was conducted to determine the effects of coercive power under low risk. Both experiments show that when risk is reduced, particularly the risk of reward loss, both the use of coercion and the effects of variations in the structure of coercive power increase. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Power; \*Risk Perception; \*Social Interaction; \*Social Structure

ID: Identifiers

risk & fear of loss; coercive power in nonnegociated social exchange relations; adults

CL: Classification

2910 Social Structure & Organization

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-03103-004

**TI: Title**

**Crisis rhetoric: Coercion vs. force**

AU: Author  
Burgess, Parke G

AF: Author Affiliation  
Queens Coll., City U. New York

SO: Source  
Quarterly Journal of Speech. Vol. 59(1), Feb 1973, pp. 61-73

IS: ISSN  
0033-5630

PB: Publisher  
Speech Communication Assn., US

AB: Abstract  
Presents a view of coercion that attempts to avoid the conceptual shortcomings of available models by deriving the nature and significant effects of a coercive strategy from the uniquely human ground of symbolic action and capacities appropriate to it. The implications avoided include (a) identification of coercion with physical force, (b) identification of symbols and symbol systems with signals and signal systems, (c) treatment of coercion as an act of force and not of communication, (d) denial of the ambiguity and creation of meaning present in coercion, and (e) denial of audience capacity and responsibility for its own creative response to coercive address. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language  
English

PY: Publication Year  
1973

PT: Publication Type  
Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors  
\*Persuasive Communication; \*Symbolism

ID: Identifiers  
symbolic action & appropriate capacities; coercive strategy effects

CL: Classification  
2700 Communication Systems

PO: Population  
Human

UD: Update  
19741001

AN: Accession Number  
1974-27591-001

**TI: Title**  
**Coercion: Legal and behavioral issues**

AU: Author

Hayes, Steven C; Maley, Roger F

AF: Author Affiliation

U North Carolina, Greensboro

SO: Source

Behaviorism. Vol 5(2), Fal 1977, pp. 87-95

IS: ISSN

0090-4155

PB: Publisher

Cambridge Ctr for Behavioral Studies, US

AB: Abstract

Defines coercion in behavioral terms and distinguishes between coercive and noncoercive control. While the legal definition of coercion uses mentalistic and circular language, emphasizing absence of free, voluntary action, the behavioral definition specifies the conditions under which the term is used and the function it serves. Control is labeled coercive when the controlling contingencies are salient, i.e., when they elicit behavior discordant with the individual's reinforcement history. Coercion is frequently characterized by aversive control. Positive reinforcement can be coercive if it (a) depends on deprivation to be effective and the controller determines the state of deprivation, and (b) occurs in an environment relatively barren of positive reinforcements. Controls are termed coercive if the probability of compliance is extraordinarily high and the range of behaviors available for reinforcement is narrow. Socially, coercion functions to decrease adaptive behavior variability and countercontrol. Coercion can be regarded as a sign of societal failure to design more effective noncoercive environments prompting cultural practices. (16 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1977

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Behaviorism; \*Compliance; \*Freedom; \*Legal Processes

ID: Identifiers

legal vs behavioral definition of coercion

CL: Classification

2900 Social Processes & Social Issues

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update  
19790801  
AN: Accession Number  
1979-23441-001

**TI: Title**

**Coercive power and aggression**

AU: Author  
Tedeschi, James T

AF: Author Affiliation  
State U New York, Albany

SO: Source  
International Journal of Group Tensions. Vol 3(3-4), 1973, pp.  
20-29

IS: ISSN  
0047-0732

PB: Publisher  
Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US,  
[URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract  
Presents a theoretical analysis of coercive power. It is stated that coercive can only be identified when the value system of the perceiver is understood. There is a need to rationalize coercive action since, if such action is labeled aggressive, it is more likely to be resisted. It is hypothesized that coercive power theories have more explanatory power than frustration-aggression theory. (23 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language  
English

PY: Publication Year  
1973

PT: Publication Type  
Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors  
\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Frustration; \*Power

ID: Identifiers  
coercive power vs frustration-aggression theory

CL: Classification  
3100 Personality Psychology

PO: Population  
Human

FE: Features  
References

UD: Update  
19750801

AN: Accession Number  
1975-23169-001

**TI: Title**

**A paradigm for the study of coercive power**

AU: Author

Tedeschi, James T; Bonoma, Thomas V; Brown, Robert C

AF: Author Affiliation

State U. New York, Albany

SO: Source

Journal of Conflict Resolution. Vol. 15(2), Jun 1971, pp.  
197-223

IS: ISSN

0022-0027

PB: Publisher

Sage Publications Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.sagepub.com>]

AB: Abstract

Although a number of experimental paradigms have been developed to study coercive power, the results of the empirical studies to date indicate conceptual and methodological inadequacies with regard to the hypotheses tested. A critique of experimental investigations of coercive power which employ the trucking game (M. Deutsch and R. Krauss), the communication game (G. Shure, R. Meeker, and E. Hansford), the real estate game (H. Hornstein), and a modified Prisoner's Dilemma game, is proffered. A threat paradigm is examined which permits flexible evaluations of theoretically generated predictions and focuses on behavioral compliance by target individuals to contingent threats. Research completed to date was used to evaluate the internal validity, external validity, and experimental realism of the threat paradigm. It is concluded that each of the other paradigms examined could be strengthened by adding the controls introduced in the threat paradigm. (82 ref.) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1971

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Dominance; \*Games; \*Social Influences; \*Statistical Validity;  
\*Threat; Validity (Statistical)

ID: Identifiers

coercive power; trucking & communication & real estate & modified

Prisoner's Dilemma games; internal & external validity & experimental realism of threat paradigm

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19720901

AN: Accession Number

1972-24931-001

**TI: Title**

**Aggression and the use of coercive power**

AU: Author

Tedeschi, James T; Gaes, Gerald G; Rivera, Alba N

AF: Author Affiliation

State U New York, Albany

SO: Source

Journal of Social Issues. Vol 33(1), Win 1977, pp. 101-125

IS: ISSN

0022-4537

PB: Publisher

Blackwell Publishers, US

AB: Abstract

That body of social psychological literature typically subsumed under the concept of aggression is reinterpreted as a compendium of different processes and functional relationships including equity, reciprocity, and self-defense. An evaluation of this literature, it is suggested, leads to the conclusion that social psychological researchers have concentrated their efforts in studying retaliatory behaviors, whereas "aggression" commonly refers to harm-doing initiated by some transgressor. A reconceptualization based on the concept of coercive power leads to a clearer understanding of harm-doing actions and allows researchers to classify and distinguish initiated harm-doing actions from those that are retaliatory. Having made this distinction, a set of propositions related to the initiation of harm-doing is spelled out, and the implications for the social control of such behavior are considered. (21/2 p ref)  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)  
(unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1977

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Motivation; \*Power; \*Reciprocity

ID: Identifiers

coercive power concept; initiation vs retaliation in  
aggressive  
behavior

CL: Classification

2900 Social Processes & Social Issues

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19790101

AN: Accession Number

1979-00824-001

**TI: Title**

**Coercive sexuality in dating relationships: A situational model**

AU: Author

Craig, Mary E

AF: Author Affiliation

Veterans Administration Medical Ctr, Psychology Service, Bay  
Pines, FL, US

SO: Source

Clinical Psychology Review. Vol 10(4), 1990, pp. 395-423

IS: ISSN

0272-7358

PB: Publisher

Elsevier Science Inc/Pergamon, US

AB: Abstract

Reviews the literature on coercive sexuality in dating relationships and identifies methodological issues, including problems of definition and measurement, a lack of experimental studies, and a base that is largely atheoretical. A situation model of social behavior (M. Snyder and W. Ickes, 1985) is applied to sexual coercion. This model offers a more complete explanation of the occurrence of coercive sex than either a trait or an interactional approach. The utility of the model and directions for future research are included. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1990

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Literature Review/Research Review

DE: Descriptors

\*Literature Review; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Social Dating

ID: Identifiers

coercive sexuality in dating relationships; literature review

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human

UD: Update

19910101

AN: Accession Number

1991-01108-001

**TI: Title**

**Coercive power in social exchange**

AU: Author

Molm, Linda D

AF: Author Affiliation

U Arizona, Tucson, AZ, US

SO: Source

1997. Studies in rationality and social change. New York, NY,

US:

Cambridge University Press. xii, 316 pp.

IB: ISBN

0521562902 (hardcover); 0521574617 (paperback)

PB: Publisher

New York, NY, US: Cambridge University Press

AB: Abstract

(From the preface) The author had 2 different, but related, objectives. One was to compare reward-based and coercive forms of power in social exchange relations: how they are different, why they are different, and the implications of those differences for both theory and social relationships. Results of this analysis offer insights and challenges for social exchange theory

(which traditionally has ignored the role of punishment and coercion in social relationships) and theories of coercive power (which traditionally have ignored the capacities of actors, in most relations, to reward as well as to punish each other). The 2nd objective was to show how a cumulative program of experimental research can be used to build and test theory. The author wanted to show the process, not merely the product, of theory development, and to convey the sense of discovery and puzzle

solving that accompanies this kind of work.

The book is intended for sociologists, psychologists, economists and political scientists.

**AB: Abstract**

(From the book) The book describes the progression and results of a decade-long program of experimental research on power in social exchange relations.

The actors in all the experiments are individual persons:  
undergraduate students. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000  
APA, all rights reserved)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1997

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Authored Book; Empirical Study

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Coercion; \*Power; \*Rewards; \*Social Interaction; \*Theory  
Formulation

**ID: Identifiers**

research on development of theory of reward-based vs coercive forms of power in social exchange relations; college students

**CL: Classification**

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

**PO: Population**

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**FE: Features**

Index; References

**TA: Target Audience**

Psychology: Professional & Research

**TB: Table of Contents**

List of figures and tables

Preface and acknowledgments

Introduction and overview

Social exchange and power

Punishment and coercion

An experimental setting for studying power in exchange relations

The early research: Experimental tests and theoretical puzzles

The structural determination of power use

Dependence and risk: Structural constraints on strategic power use

Injustice and risk: Normative constraints on strategic power use

The effects of coercion: Compliance or conflict?

A theory of coercion in social exchange

Conclusions and implications

Appendix I: Definitions of basic concepts of social exchange

Appendix II: The experimental instructions for standardized setting

References

Name index

Subject index

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-08307-000

## ***Goals/Motivation***

### **TI: Title**

**Motives for sexual coercion**

### AU: Author

Felson, Richard B

### AF: Author Affiliation

State U New York, Professor of Sociology, Albany, NY, US

### SO: Source

Felson, Richard B. (Ed); Tedeschi, James T. (Ed). (1993).

Aggression and violence: Social interactionist perspectives (pp.

233-253). Washington, DC, US: American Psychological Association.  
xiii, 265 pp.

### IB: ISBN

1557981906 (hardcover)

### PB: Publisher

Washington, DC, US: American Psychological Association

### AB: Abstract

(From the chapter) use a social interactionist approach to aggression to examine the possible motives for rape and other forms of sexual coercion / following social learning theory (from social psychology) and control theory (from criminology), I also discuss the role of inhibitions (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### LA: Language

English

### PY: Publication Year

1993

### PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Chapter

### DE: Descriptors

\*Rape; \*Theories; Social Control; Social Learning

### ID: Identifiers

discusses motivations for rape & other forms of sexual coercion from various theoretical perspectives

### CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

### PO: Population

Human

### FE: Features

References

### TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

### UD: Update

19970101

### AN: Accession Number

1993-97742-010

**TI: Title**

**Verbal coercive sexual behavior among college students**

**AU: Author**

Craig, Mary E; Kalichman, Seth C; Follingstad, Diane R

**AF: Author Affiliation**

U South Carolina, Barnwell Coll, Columbia, US

**SO: Source**

Archives of Sexual Behavior. Vol 18(5), Oct 1989, pp. 421-434

**IS: ISSN**

0004-0002

**PB: Publisher**

Kluwer Academic/ Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.wkap.nl>]

**AB: Abstract**

Investigated the prevalence of verbal sexual coercion, the beliefs and attitudes of sexually coercive and noncoercive men, and the differences in affective states between groups and at different stages of relationship development. 194 male undergraduates completed a battery of measures, including the Sexual Attitudes Scale (M. Craig et al, 1988), the Rape Arousal Inventory (J. Briere et al, 1984), and the Sexual Experience Checklist (M. Craig et al, 1988). 42% of Ss have had coercive sexual relationships in which the S was the coercing partner. Examining the feeling states experienced by coercive Ss reveals differences in their motivations for being sexually coercive in different relationship contexts. Results are discussed using the situational model in which the coercive male plays an active role in shaping his environment. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

1989

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Deception; \*Human Males; \*Persuasive Communication; \*Rape; Oral Communication

**ID: Identifiers**

verbal coercive sexual behavior; male college students

**CL: Classification**

3236 Criminal Behavior & Juvenile Delinquency

**PO: Population**

Human; Male; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**UD: Update**

19900301

AN: Accession Number  
1990-07721-001

**TI: Title**

**Assessing the validity of a multidimensional model of sexual coercion in college men**

AU: Author

Hamburger, Merle Edward

AF: Author Affiliation

State U New York at Albany, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9529111

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 56(5-B), Nov 1995, pp. 2940

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

Two of the most consistently cited frameworks used to explain why people engage in coercive sexual behaviors are the social control (Brownmiller, 1975) and the psychopathology perspectives (Rada, 1978; Groth & Birnbaum, 1979). While these perspectives were once thought to be mutually exclusive, recent research and theoretical conceptualizations indicate that an integration of multiple frameworks may best identify the factors associated with sexual coercion. Participants' responses to 28 self-report measures of hypothesized risk factors for sexual aggression were examined and a structural equation model depicting the interrelations among these constructs was tested. Results supported the contention that factors from both the social control and psychopathological perspectives are essential to interpret the motivation underlying individuals' use of sexually aggressive behaviors. According to the results of the current study, the two focal constructs associated with sexual aggression are traditional sex-role socialization and psychopathy (i.e., having an underlying psychopathic personality). Traditional sex-role socialization influenced the development of rape supportive beliefs, which in turn influenced individuals' rape proclivity as well as their use of sexual aggression. Having an underlying psychopathic personality, on the other hand, influenced individuals' alcohol consumption and coercive sexual fantasies. Results further indicated that alcohol consumption influenced individuals' use of sexually aggressive behavior, while coercive sexual fantasies

influenced their rape proclivity. These results underscore the importance of incorporating multiple dimensions when attempting to explain sexually aggressive behaviors. Implications of these results regarding future research, as well as treatment and prevention programs, are discussed. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Psychopathology; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Rape; \*Sex Roles; Human Males

ID: Identifiers

factors associated with sexually aggressive behaviors; college men; application of multidimensional model of sexual coercion

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology; 3100 Personality Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Male; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1995-95021-074

## ***Measurement***

TI: Title

Understanding domestic violence: An examination of power and control in couple relationships

AU: Author

Malik, Neena Marlene

AF: Author Affiliation

U Denver, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9730339

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 58(4-B), Oct 1997, pp. 2128

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

It has become clear to social scientists and policymakers alike that violence within the family is all too common and carries enormous costs to society. Physical assaults occur in millions of intimate partnerships every year (Straus & Gelles, 1990). When domestic violence is present in a relationship, interpersonal power is a construct that is plainly involved, to the extent that violence is an extreme expression of power (Murphy & Meyer, 1991), and yet a notoriously problematic concept to empirically investigate (Huston, 1983). The goal of this study was to explore the role of relationship power in violence, examining how power, other dyadic, and individual factors are associated with domestic violence. In a sample of 22 aggressive and 18 non-violent couples, the unique roles of individual and dyadic factors, particularly relationship power, were examined in relation to domestic violence. It was found that power can be measured validly, and that across theoretical domains of power, many associations with domestic violence exist. Family of origin violence and dyadic negative escalation moderated the relations between power and violence, and relationship satisfaction was a partial mediator. Individual factors were less related to violence than dyadic ones. This study indicates the need to examine and understand the role of relationship power and other dyadic factors in the etiology and treatment of domestic violence. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Couples; \*Family Violence; \*Power; \*Social Control

ID: Identifiers

relationship power & control & dyadic & individual factors  
associated with domestic violence; aggressive couples

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention; 3000 Social  
Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-95020-284

**TI: Title**

**Rethinking power in interpersonal relationships: The development  
of the Power Scale and a test of a model. (condoms, gender roles)**

AU: Author

Mazurek, Bozena Teresa

AF: Author Affiliation

City U New York, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9909402

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences &  
Engineering. Vol 59(10-B), May 1999, pp. 5622

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

The current study focuses on the role of power in intimate heterosexual relationships. A sample of 166 young, urban, heterosexual college women from four colleges volunteered to participate in this questionnaire study. A new instrument to assess power in close relationships was constructed. The study examined relationships between the amount of power, attitudes toward condoms, gender roles, power strategies and condom use. A model was proposed to describe those relationships. Falbo and Peplau's (1980) two-dimensional model of power strategies provided the initial framework for examining the influence strategies used to negotiate condom use. The current study did not find support

for this model. Instead, two independent categories of strategies emerged, i.e., the Interactive and Autonomous categories. It was hypothesized that amount of power, attitudes toward condoms, and gender roles are predictive of condom use. It was also hypothesized that women's use of power strategies mediates the relationship between the amount of power and condom use and the relationship between gender roles and condom use. The present study did not find support for the mediational model.

Interpersonal power was examined from the societal perspective of control of one person over another person i.e., 'power-over' and the feminist perspective of control over one's own behaviors i.e., 'power-to'. A new measure of power was developed and consisted of two scales: the Power-over Scale and the Power-to Scale. This measure was a reliable predictor of condom use i.e., Power-over was a negative predictor and Power-to was a positive predictor of condom use. The Power Scale in its entirety was a predictor of the Autonomous influence strategies. Women who received high scores on the Power-over Scale were most likely to use the Autonomous power strategies, while women who scored high on the Power-to Scale, tended to use all available strategies. There was a positive association between attitudes toward condoms and condom use. The relationship between gender roles and condom use was more difficult to interpret. The participants high in masculinity held the most positive attitudes toward condoms. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1999

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Condoms; \*Power; \*Rating Scales; \*Sexual Attitudes; \*Test Construction; Human Females; Sex Roles

ID: Identifiers

development & evaluation of Power Scale; measure for predicting condom use; heterosexual undergraduate women

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs)

**TI: Title**

**Psychological aggression in dating relationships: The role of interpersonal control**

AU: Author

Stets, Jan E

AF: Author Affiliation

Washington State U, Pullman, US

SO: Source

Journal of Family Violence. Vol 6(1), Mar 1991, pp. 97-114

IS: ISSN

0885-7482

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract

Examined psychological aggression in dating relationships, focusing on interpersonal control (i.e., the degree to which one person controls another in a relationship). Complete questionnaire data for analysis of inflicting aggression was available for 378 relationships for male and 510 relationships for female university students. For analysis of sustaining aggression, there was complete data on 367 relationships for male and 499 relationships for female university students. Results show that interpersonal control was an important predictor of psychological aggression. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1991

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Interpersonal Influences; \*Psychodynamics;

\*Social Dating

ID: Identifiers

interpersonal control & psychological aggression in dating relationships; college students

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19910901

AN: Accession Number

1991-24652-001

**TI: Title**

**Sexual aggression and control in dating relationships**

AU: Author

Stets, Jan E; Pirog-Good, Maureen A  
AF: Author Affiliation  
Washington State U, Pullman, US  
SO: Source  
Journal of Applied Social Psychology. Vol 19(16, Pt 2), Nov 1989,  
pp. 1392-1412  
IS: ISSN  
0021-9029  
PB: Publisher  
Bellwether Publishing, US  
AB: Abstract  
Examined the effect of interpersonal control on sexual aggression (SA) while dating in 583 university students. Data were collected on men and women who inflict and sustain SA. Results indicate that interpersonal control is a significant predictor of both men and women inflicting and women sustaining SA. Future research should examine interaction patterns among couples rather than viewing SA as the result of men demonstrating their masculinity. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)  
LA: Language  
English  
PY: Publication Year  
1989  
PT: Publication Type  
Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study  
DE: Descriptors  
\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Male Female Relations; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Social Dating  
ID: Identifiers  
interpersonal control; sexual aggression while dating; college students  
CL: Classification  
3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior  
PO: Population  
Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)  
UD: Update  
19900301  
AN: Accession Number  
1990-07770-001

\*\*

**TI: Title**

**Understanding domestic violence: An examination of power and control in couple relationships**

AU: Author

Malik, Neena Marlene

AF: Author Affiliation

U Denver, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9730339

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 58(4-B), Oct 1997, pp. 2128

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

It has become clear to social scientists and policymakers alike that violence within the family is all too common and carries enormous costs to society. Physical assaults occur in millions of intimate partnerships every year (Straus & Gelles, 1990). When domestic violence is present in a relationship, interpersonal power is a construct that is plainly involved, to the extent that violence is an extreme expression of power (Murphy & Meyer, 1991), and yet a notoriously problematic concept to empirically investigate (Huston, 1983). The goal of this study was to explore the role of relationship power in violence, examining how power, other dyadic, and individual factors are associated with domestic violence. In a sample of 22 aggressive and 18 non-violent couples, the unique roles of individual and dyadic factors, particularly relationship power, were examined in relation to domestic violence. It was found that power can be measured validly, and that across theoretical domains of power, many associations with domestic violence exist. Family of origin violence and dyadic negative escalation moderated the relations between power and violence, and relationship satisfaction was a partial mediator. Individual factors were less related to violence than dyadic ones. This study indicates the need to examine and understand the role of relationship power and other dyadic factors in the etiology and treatment of domestic violence. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Couples; \*Family Violence; \*Power; \*Social Control

ID: Identifiers

relationship power & control & dyadic & individual factors

associated with domestic violence; aggressive couples

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention; 3000 Social

Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-95020-284

**TI: Title**

**Two scales for measuring patients' perceptions for coercion during mental hospital admission**

AU: Author

Gardner, William; Hoge, Steven K; Bennett, Nancy; Roth, Loren H;  
et al

AF: Author Affiliation

U Pittsburgh School of Medicine, PA, US

SO: Source

Behavioral Sciences & the Law. Special Issue: Coercion in mental health care. Vol 11(3), Sum 1993, pp. 307-321

IS: ISSN

0735-3936

IT: Issue Title

Special Issue: Coercion in mental health care

PB: Publisher

John Wiley & Sons Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.wiley.com>]

AB: Abstract

The authors measured 161 mental hospital patients' (aged 17-81

yrs) perceptions of coercion by asking questions, in both an interview and a questionnaire format, about their experience of lack of control, choice, influence, and freedom in hospital admission. A 2nd sample of 49 adult mental hospital patients answered a revised version of the questionnaire format only.

Patients' responses to questions about their perceptions of coercion were highly internally consistent. Internal consistency of the interview and questionnaire scales was robust with respect to variation in site, instrument format, patient population, and interview procedure. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1993

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Interviews; \*Psychiatric Hospital Admission; \*Surveys;  
\*Test Reliability; Client Attitudes; Psychiatric Patients;  
Questionnaires

ID: Identifiers

internal consistency of MacArthur Admission Experience Interview & MacArthur Admission Experience Survey; assessment of perceptions of coercion during mental hospital admission; 17-81 yr old patients

CL: Classification

2224 Clinical Psychological Testing; 3379 Inpatient & Hospital Services

PO: Population

Human; Adolescence (13-17 yrs); Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Aged (65 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19940301

AN: Accession Number

1994-08040-001

**TI: Title**

**Family, clinician, and patient perceptions of coercion in mental hospital admission: A comparative study**

AU: Author

Hoge, Steven K; Lidz, Charles W; Eisenberg, Marlene; Monahan, John; Bennett, Nancy; Gardner, William; Mulvey, Edward P; Roth, Loren

AF: Author Affiliation

U Virginia School of Law, Charlotte, VA, US

SO: Source

International Journal of Law & Psychiatry. Vol 21(2), Spr 1998,  
pp. 131-146

IS: ISSN

0160-2527

DO: DOI

10.1016/S0160-2527(98)00002-8

PB: Publisher

William S Hein & Co Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.wshein.com>]

AB: Abstract

Investigated perceptions of coercion in the mental hospital admission in patients, family (including friends and significant others), and clinicians in an attempt to understand 2 related questions. The 1st question asks how do family and clinician perceptions of coercion compare with the perceptions of patients. The 2nd question asks are the determinants of family and clinician

perceptions of coercion the same as the determinants of patient perceptions of coercion. 433 psychiatric patients, clinicians, and family members were administered the MacArthur Admission Experience Interview (AEI), an interview that generates data on Ss' perceptions of coercion of patients in the decision to be admitted. It appears that patients, family, and clinicians share a common understanding of some aspects of coercion in the admission process. Family members report that involuntary patients had less coercion. Family were less likely to report negative pressures as well. Patients reported that they had been given less procedural justice in the hospital admission process than family members of clinicians. Overall, family and clinicians believe patients have been given maximum opportunity to voice their preferences about hospitalization. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1998

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Clinicians; \*Coercion; \*Family Members; \*Psychiatric Hospital Admission; \*Psychiatric Patients; Perception

ID: Identifiers

determinants of perceptions of coercion in mental hospital admission; patient vs family vs clinicians

CL: Classification

3379 Inpatient & Hospital Services

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19980701

AN: Accession Number

1998-02775-001

**TI: Title**

**Power and attitudes in relationships (PAIR) among a sample of low-income, African-American women: Implications for HIV/AIDS prevention**

AU: Author

Sherman, Susan G; Gielen, Andrea C; McDonnell, Karen A

AF: Author Affiliation

Johns Hopkins U, School of Hygiene & Public Health, Dept of Health

Policy & Management, Baltimore, MD, US

SO: Source

Sex Roles. Vol 42(3-4), Feb 2000, pp. 283-294

IS: ISSN

0360-0025

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract

This study describes a scale that was designed to measure low-income urban, heterosexual women's perception of Power and Attitudes in Relationships (PAIR). Although frequently mentioned in the literature as an important aspect of women's risk for HIV, there are few described scales which measure such attitudes among this population. PAIR was based in part on R. W. Connell's (1987) theory of gender and power. PAIR was found to be reliable among a cross-sectional sample of inner-city women ( $n = 417$ ), half of whom were HIV-negative and half were HIV-positive. Findings suggest that PAIR is reliable among both HIV-infected and HIV-uninfected inner-city women. The scale can be a useful tool in understanding the interpersonal context of women's risk of HIV. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

2000

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Adult Attitudes; \*Human Immunodeficiency Virus; \*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Power; \*Rating Scales; AIDS Prevention; At Risk Populations; Male Female Relations; Sex Role Attitudes; Test Reliability

ID: Identifiers

reliability of Power & Attitudes in Relationships; assessment of attitudes toward gender; HIV positive vs negative low income heterosexual Black females; implications for AIDS prevention

CL: Classification

2226 Health Psychology Testing; 3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Thirties (30-39 yrs); US

### **TI: Title**

**The development and validation of a scale measuring global social power based on French and Raven's power taxonomy**

AU: Author

Nesler, Mitchell S; Aguinis, Herman; Quigley, Brian M; Lee,  
Suk-Jae; Tedeschi, James T

AF: Author Affiliation

Regents Coll, Albany, NY, US

SO: Source

Journal of Applied Social Psychology. Vol 29(4), Apr 1999, pp.  
750-771

IS: ISSN

0021-9029

PB: Publisher

Bellwether Publishing, US

AB: Abstract

A measure of global power was developed based on J. R. P. French and B. H. Raven's (1959) definition of social power as the potential of an agent to influence a target. A sample of 346 graduate students responded to a questionnaire assessing their perceptions of the power of their supervising professors in paid assistantship duties. Power was measured using established scales of the French and Raven 5 power bases (legitimate, research coercive, expert, and referent power) in addition to the newly developed global power measure. Results indicate that the global power scale (a) has strong internal consistency, (b) is significantly related to each of the 5 individual power bases, and (c) significantly accounts for additional variance in compliance beyond the measures of the 5 power bases, beyond the sum of the bases, and beyond a measure of resistance and control. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**TI: Title**

**Power and control in interpersonal relationships: An empirical study of the control attitude scale**

AU: Author

Strauss, Judith B

AF: Author Affiliation

Temple U

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International. Vol 44(5-A), Nov 1983, pp.  
1395

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1983

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Attitude Measures; \*Authority; \*Power; \*Test Reliability

ID: Identifiers

reliability of Control Attitude Scale & its revised version;  
measurement of attitudes toward power & control & authority;  
college students

CL: Classification

2223 Personality Scales & Inventories; 3120 Personality Traits &  
Processes

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19840401

AN: Accession Number

1984-52200-001

### **TI: Title**

**Patient, family, and staff perceptions of coercion in mental  
hospital admission: An exploratory study**

AU: Author

Hoge, Steven K; Lidz, Charles; Mulvey, Edward; Roth, Loren; et al

AF: Author Affiliation

U Virginia School of Law, Charlottesville, US

SO: Source

Behavioral Sciences & the Law. Special Issue: Coercion in mental  
health care. Vol 11(3), Sum 1993, pp. 281-293

IS: ISSN

0735-3936

IT: Issue Title

Special Issue: Coercion in mental health care

PB: Publisher

John Wiley & Sons Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.wiley.com>]

AB: Abstract

Summarizes the findings of a study designed to gather data needed  
to refine the conceptualization and measurement of coercion.

Multiple perspectives on admission incidents for 43 adult patients  
(26% of whom were involuntarily hospitalized) were obtained.

Patients were administered research interviews and completed a  
self-administered inventory shortly after the admission decision.

The admitting clinician and a family member involved in the  
admission were administered parallel interviews. In addition,  
focus groups comprised of outpatients, former patients, family  
members, and clinical staff were conducted to uncover the

terminology and description of coercion commonly used. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1993

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Psychiatric Hospital Admission; \*Psychiatric Patients; Adult Attitudes; Client Attitudes; Family Members; Health Personnel Attitudes; Health Personnel

ID: Identifiers

perceptions of coercion in mental hospital admission; adult patients vs family members vs staff

CL: Classification

3379 Inpatient & Hospital Services

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19940301

AN: Accession Number

1994-11160-001

### **TI: Title**

**Personality predictors of the Minnesota Power and Control Wheel**

AU: Author

Dutton, Donald G; Starzomski, Andrew J

AF: Author Affiliation

U British Columbia, Dept of Psychology, Vancouver, BC, Canada

SO: Source

Journal of Interpersonal Violence. Vol 12(1), Feb 1997, pp. 70-82

IS: ISSN

0886-2605

PB: Publisher

Sage Publications Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.sagepub.com>]

AB: Abstract

Tests were conducted to determine whether the Minnesota Power and Control Wheel (MPCW), which describes 8 forms of power and control tactics, constituted a syndrome of intercorrelated actions.

Criterion items for the MPCW octants were derived from Tolman's Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PUWI) completed by 120 assaultive and 45 nonassaultive men (aged 17-65 yrs). Ss' partners were also assessed. Tests were conducted of whether certain features of the abusive personality could accurately predict various octants of the MPCW. With the exception of "using

the children as pawns," all MPCW dimensions of the abuse of power and control were significantly intercorrelated suggesting the existence of a syndrome of abuse of power and control. Personality disturbance was significantly correlated with all octants except using the children. These findings argue for a comprehensive model of abusive uses of power and control tactics integrating both social and psychological influences, rather than one that relies exclusively on either one. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Abuse of Power; \*Aggressive Behavior; \*Partner Abuse;

\*Personality Traits; \*Violence; Human Males; Personality Measures

ID: Identifiers

relationship between abusive personality traits & use of power & control tactics in Minnesota Power & Control Wheel; 17-65 yr old assaultive vs nonassaultive males & partners

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adolescence (13-17 yrs); Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); Aged (65 yrs & older); Canada

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-08105-005

\*\*

**TI: Title**

**Sex, power, and influence tactics in intimate relationships**

AU: Author

Howard, Judith A; Blumstein, Philip; Schwartz, Pepper

AF: Author Affiliation

U Washington, Seattle

SO: Source

Journal of Personality & Social Psychology. Vol 51(1), Jul 1986,  
pp. 102-109

IS: ISSN

0022-3514

DO: DOI

10.1037//0022-3514.51.1.102

PB: Publisher

American Psychological Assn., US, [URL:<http://www.apa.org>]

AB: Abstract

Examined the influence of sex, sex-role orientation, structural power, and interpersonal dependence on the use of influence tactics in 75 homosexual couples, 62 lesbian couples, and 98 heterosexual couples. Ss rated the frequency of 24 influence tactics on a 9-point scale, from which 6 dimensions of influence tactics were identified: manipulation, supplication, bullying, autocracy, disengagement, and bargaining. Several patterns of the effect of interpersonal power on influence tactics were found: Positions of weakness increased the use of supplication and manipulation, both "weak" strategies. Positions of strength somewhat increased the likelihood of bullying and the use of autocratic tactics, both "strong" strategies. Patterns of bargaining and the use of disengagement were more complex and varied across couple types. Both sex and sex-role orientation had consistent effects on influence dynamics, but these effects were limited primarily to the use of weak tactics. These effects of sex do not appear to be mediated either by interpersonal dependence or by structural power. (33 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1986

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Lesbianism; \*Male Homosexuality;

\*Power; \*Sex Roles; Couples; Human Sex Differences; Social Influences

ID: Identifiers

sex role orientation & structure power & interpersonal dependence; use of influence tactics; homosexual vs lesbian vs heterosexual couples

CL: Classification

2970 Sex Roles & Women's Issues; 3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19861101

AN: Accession Number

1986-27096-001

### *Elaboration of coercion concept*

#### **TI: Title**

**Personality predictors of the Minnesota Power and Control Wheel**

#### AU: Author

Dutton, Donald G; Starzomski, Andrew J

#### AF: Author Affiliation

U British Columbia, Dept of Psychology, Vancouver, BC, Canada

#### SO: Source

Journal of Interpersonal Violence. Vol 12(1), Feb 1997, pp. 70-82

#### IS: ISSN

0886-2605

#### PB: Publisher

Sage Publications Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.sagepub.com>]

#### AB: Abstract

Tests were conducted to determine whether the Minnesota Power and Control Wheel (MPCW), which describes 8 forms of power and control tactics, constituted a syndrome of intercorrelated actions.

Criterion items for the MPCW octants were derived from Tolman's Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PUWI) completed by 120 assaultive and 45 nonassaultive men (aged 17-65 yrs). Ss' partners were also assessed. Tests were conducted of whether certain features of the abusive personality could accurately predict various octants of the MPCW. With the exception of "using the children as pawns," all MPCW dimensions of the abuse of power and control were significantly intercorrelated suggesting the existence of a syndrome of abuse of power and control. Personality disturbance was significantly correlated with all octants except using the children. These findings argue for a comprehensive model of abusive uses of power and control tactics integrating both social and psychological influences, rather than one that relies exclusively on either one. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

#### LA: Language

English

#### PY: Publication Year

1997

#### PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

#### DE: Descriptors

\*Abuse of Power; \*Aggressive Behavior; \*Partner Abuse;

\*Personality Traits; \*Violence; Human Males; Personality Measures

#### ID: Identifiers

relationship between abusive personality traits & use of power & control tactics in Minnesota Power & Control Wheel; 17-65 yr old assaultive vs nonassaultive males & partners

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adolescence (13-17 yrs); Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood (18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); Aged (65 yrs & older); Canada

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-08105-005

**TI: Title**

**Jealousy induction as a predictor of power and the use of other control methods in heterosexual relationships**

AU: Author

Brainerd, Edwin G; Hunter, Patricia A; Moore, DeWayne; Thompson, Tisha R

AF: Author Affiliation

Clemson U, Psychology Dept, SC, US

SO: Source

Psychological Reports. Vol 79(3, Pt 2), Dec 1996, pp. 1319-1325

IS: ISSN

0033-2941

PB: Publisher

Psychological Reports, US

AB: Abstract

113 university students completed the Psychological Aggression Scale for Men and Women, the Interpersonal Control Scale for Men and Women, a measure of physical violence (the Conflict Tactics Scale), and a scale assessing use and approval of jealousy-inducing behaviors (JIBs). Use and approval of JIBs were good predictors of high need for interpersonal control and use of psychological aggression. Use of JIBs, but not approval of JIBs, was a strong predictor of physical aggression toward one's partner. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1996

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Emotional Control; \*Interpersonal

Interaction; \*Jealousy

ID: Identifiers

use & approval of jealousy inducing behaviors & need for interpersonal control & use of physical &/or psychological aggression toward partner; college students

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-02572-047

**TI: Title**

**Power, control, and communication: An analysis of aggressive, violent, and abusive couples**

AU: Author

Olson, Loreen Nyla

AF: Author Affiliation

U Nebraska - Lincoln, US

AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAI9962065

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International Section A: Humanities & Social Sciences. Vol 61(2-A), Aug 2000, pp. 427

IS: ISSN

0419-4209

PB: Publisher

US: Univ Microfilms International

AB: Abstract

Various theoretical orientations and methodological perspectives have yielded mixed results regarding the phenomenon of domestic violence. Sociologist, Michael Johnson (1995) argued that the reason for contradictory findings was because researchers are studying divergent phenomena. Johnson labeled two of these perspectives, 'the family violence perspective,' and the 'feminist perspective.' He also labeled the types of violence researchers within these perspectives were examining, 'common couple violence,' and 'patriarchal terrorism,' respectively. The present study focused on 'common couple violence.' More specifically, the purpose of this analysis was (a) to create a general profile of 'common couple violence,' taking into account its defining features, general communication patterns used by individuals experiencing 'common couple violence,' and the communication correlates of power and control used by the individuals, and (b)

to determine if multiple forms of 'common couple violence' existed. Face-to-face interviews were conducted with thirty-one individuals (5 males, 26 females) who had experienced interpersonal aggression with their romantic, heterosexual partners. The 967 pages of data were analyzed to determine how violence issues related to gender symmetry/asymmetry, per couple frequency, reciprocity, and escalation contributed to a general profile of 'common couple violence.' In addition, communication frameworks were used to assess the individuals' communication patterns. The specific patterns examined included conflict tactics, compliance-gaining tactics, and communication competence. Five trajectories of aggression were identified and labeled: chaotic, declining, stable, increasing, and cyclical. In addition, a new typology of violent couples was developed which consisted of four different types of violent couples: Aggressive, Episodically Violent, Systemically Violent, and Abusive. Theoretical and practical implications are discussed. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

2000

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Aggressive Behavior; \*Interpersonal Communication; \*Partner Abuse; \*Power; \*Violence; Couples

ID: Identifiers

power & control & communication; individuals who had experienced interpersonal aggression with their romantic heterosexual partners

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

20010328

AN: Accession Number

2000-95015-061

### TI: Title

**On the borders of persuasion: A psychoanalytic look at coercion**

AU: Author

Gaylin, Willard

AF: Author Affiliation

Inst of Society, Ethics & the Life Sciences, Hastings-on-Hudson,  
NY

SO: Source

Psychiatry: Journal for the Study of Interpersonal Processes. Vol 37(1), Feb 1974, pp. 1-9

IS: ISSN

0033-2747

PB: Publisher

Guilford Publications, US, [URL:<http://www.guilford.com>]

AB: Abstract

Presents a psychoanalytic evaluation of the nature of coercion and its antithesis, freedom. Biological developments have necessitated a re-evaluation of coercion, particularly in the area of "voluntary" consent. Coercion is generally thought of as physical force, but unconscious coercion is a far more pernicious threat because it both hides the coercion from the victim and exempts the attacker from responsibility. Various overt and covert forces of unconscious coercion are analyzed. (34 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1974

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Interpersonal Influences; \*Persuasive Communication;

\*Psychoanalytic Theory

ID: Identifiers

psychoanalytic evaluation of coercion vs freedom

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19750701

AN: Accession Number

1975-21001-001

**TI: Title**

**Coercion, deterrence, and authority**

AU: Author

Airaksinen, Timo

AF: Author Affiliation

U Helsinki, Finland

SO: Source

Theory & Decision. Vol 17(2), Sep 1984, pp. 105-117

IS: ISSN

0040-5833

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic Publishers, Netherlands, [URL:<http://www.wkap.nl>]

AB: Abstract

Examines coercion and authority in a relatively just society. The strict concept of coercion and deterrence together is called coercion. Strict coercion is an event that always implies an occurrent event as the threat. Deterrence need not involve any explicit threats. Strict coercion is always an occurrent form of power exercise, and deterrence is a functionally effective, often latent form, of social power. There are 2 main types of social power: coercive and noncoercive (authority). Authority is a consensus-based idea rather than a consent-based idea. Authority is a social notion. If authority is called a form of social power, it is radically different from any coercive power proper.

Authority does not allow A to break B's stubborn resistance, should it occur. The way an irrational person adopts authorities is unpredictable. Authority has a moral as well as a psychologically motivating function. It is suggested that coercive authority means that certain coercive methods are legitimized; in this case authority is not a power-notion, although normally authority implies power. It is further suggested that the explicit acceptance or denial of the legitimacy and authority of the police and army has not much to do with the actual fact of finding oneself under their coercive power. (9 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1984

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Authority; \*Power; \*Social Influences; \*Society

ID: Identifiers

coercion & authority & deterrence in society

CL: Classification

2900 Social Processes & Social Issues

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19851001

AN: Accession Number  
1985-25244-001

**TI: Title**

**Consent to mental health treatment: A theoretical analysis of coercion, freedom, and control**

AU: Author

Carroll, John S

AF: Author Affiliation

Massachusetts Inst of Technology, Sloan School of Management,  
Cambridge, US

SO: Source

Behavioral Sciences & the Law. Special Issue: Legal and policy issues in mental health services. Vol 9(2), Spr 1991, pp. 129-142

IS: ISSN

0735-3936

IT: Issue Title

Special Issue: Legal and policy issues in mental health services

PB: Publisher

John Wiley & Sons Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.wiley.com>]

AB: Abstract

Examines the concept of coercion to address the concerns of social scientists, mental health treatment providers, and policy makers over the question of when coercion into treatment has occurred. This logically takes precedence over the question of whether or not coercion is desirable in some situations. A review of the scientific research on coercion and related topics of freedom, control, and choice leads to a theoretical framework in which coercion is defined in terms of opportunities to choose among courses of action. Implications of this analysis are drawn for mental health service delivery, mental health policy, and mental health research. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1991

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Choice Behavior; \*Client Rights; \*Mental Health Services; \*Power; Experimentation; Health Care Delivery; Policy Making

ID: Identifiers

coercion in mental health treatment & issues of freedom & control  
& choice; implications for service delivery & policy & research

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention

PO: Population

Human

UD: Update

19911201

AN: Accession Number

1991-33825-001

**TI: Title**

**Distal coercion: Case studies**

AU: Author

Loring, Marti T; Smith, Roger W; Bolden, Tamara

AF: Author Affiliation

Ctr for Mental Health & Human Services, Decatur, GA, US

SO: Source

Psychology: A Journal of Human Behavior. Vol 34(1), 1997, pp.

10-14

IS: ISSN

0033-3077

PB: Publisher

Institute for Leadership and Organization Effectiveness, US

AB: Abstract

Distal coercion is a process in which an abused woman fears a batterer who is not geographically present. The victim experiences trauma in a hostage-type relationship even in the absence of the batterer. Subsequent trauma symptoms account for the victim's unusual behavior, such as involvement with a batterer who kills her child engaging in conspiracy to murder the batterer, and bizarre behavior (of the victim) following her killing the batterer. Identification of these unusual behaviors among battered women is noted as critical in the prevention and treatment of battered women, as well as in forensic testimony. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (journal abstract)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study; Case Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Battered Females; \*Behavior Disorders; \*Coercion; Human Females

ID: Identifiers

impact of distal coercion & behavior; battered women; case studies

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19980401

AN: Accession Number

1997-38784-002

**TI: Title**

**Challenging ethnocentric explanations of domestic violence: Let us decide, then value our decisions--A Samoan response.**

AU: Author

Crichton-Hill, Yvonne

AF: Author Affiliation

U Canterbury, Dept of Social Work, Christchurch, New Zealand

SO: Source

Trauma Violence & Abuse. Special Issue:. Vol 2(3), Jul 2001, pp. 203-214

IS: ISSN

1524-8380

IT: Issue Title

Special Issue:

PB: Publisher

SAGE Publications, US

AB: Abstract

Theories describing domestic violence toward women are predominantly ethnocentric in that they are largely based on western notions of family and of family life. Invariably, strategies responding to domestic violence are also based on values that are reflective of their cultural origin. The Duluth power and control wheel, a model that has been adopted universally as a tractable strategy for managing male aggression, is identified as having significant gaps within the analysis when reviewed from a Samoan perspective. This article provides a critique of the Duluth model and explores the knowledge requirements for social workers working with Samoan women who have been abused by Samoan men. Suggestions for working with Samoan women and their communities are offered at the service, legal, and educational levels. This article argues that further research is required to ascertain the nature of domestic violence for Samoan women in New Zealand and more work is required with Samoan communities to determine the nature of service provision. It further argues that a comprehensive understanding of the dynamics of domestic violence as well as an understanding of the unique dynamics of Samoan culture are necessary. (PsycINFO Database

Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

2001

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Etiology; \*Family Violence; \*Power; \*Sociocultural Factors;

\*Theories; Ethnic Values; Ethnocentrism; Male Female Relations;

Social Casework

ID: Identifiers

domestic violence; etiology; ethnocentric interventions; cross cultural criticism; Duluth power and control wheel; Samoan women in New Zealand; social casework

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; New Zealand

FE: Features

References; Peer Reviewed

UD: Update

20010725

AN: Accession Number

2001-07619-001

**TI: Title**

**Social cognitive processes in women's and men's divergent perspectives of sexual coercion**

AU: Author

Harney, Patricia Ann

AF: Author Affiliation

U Kansas, KS, US

SO: Source

Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 55(5-B), 1994, pp. 2008

IS: ISSN

0419-4217

PB: Publisher

US: Univ. Microfilms International

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1994

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Awareness; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Rape; \*Social Cognition;  
Judgment; Social Issues

ID: Identifiers

Social cognitive processes in women's and men's divergent  
perspectives of sexual coercion (rape).

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19970801

AN: Accession Number

1997-72354-001

**Theory: General**

**TI: Title**

**Predictors of domestic violence: Power-and-control versus imbalance-of-power and related factors**

**AU: Author**

Germain, Jacqueline L

**AF: Author Affiliation**

Private Practice, Minneapolis, MN, US

**SO: Source**

Sandhu, Daya Singh (Ed). (2001). Faces of violence: Psychological correlates, concepts, and intervention strategies (pp. 337-353).

Huntington, NY, US: Nova Science Publishers, Inc. xxviii, 470 pp.

**IB: ISBN**

1560728353 (hardcover)

**PB: Publisher**

Huntington, NY, US: Nova Science Publishers, Inc

**AB: Abstract**

(From the chapter) Discusses how the concept of power-and-control has been offered as the cause of domestic violence. More specifically, the power and control men have over women has been named as the primary cause of the abuse of women by men. This chapter examines this concept along with some surprising results of its use, including controversies in the field. An alternate concept, imbalance-of-power and related factors, will be presented as a way to expand ideas about domestic abuse. As a more comprehensive predictor, this new view will address the complexity of the issue and show how treatment can become more comprehensive and be more widely applied. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

**LA: Language**

English

**PY: Publication Year**

2001

**PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Chapter

**DE: Descriptors**

\*Family Violence; \*Partner Abuse; \*Power

**ID: Identifiers**

power-and-control; imbalance-of-power; domestic violence; partner abuse

**CL: Classification**

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

**PO: Population**

Human

**FE: Features**

## References

TA: Target Audience  
Psychology: Professional & Research  
UD: Update  
20010808  
AN: Accession Number  
2001-01487-019

### TI: Title

**Gender, power, and communication in human relationships**

AU: Author  
Kalbfleisch, Pamela J (Ed); Cody, Michael J (Ed)  
AF: Author Affiliation  
U Wyoming, Dept of Communication & Mass Media, Laramie, WY, US  
SO: Source  
1995. LEA's communication series. Hillsdale, NJ, US: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc. xiv, 366 pp.

IB: ISBN  
0805814035 (hardcover); 0805814043 (paperback)

PB: Publisher  
Hillsdale, NJ, US: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc

AB: Abstract  
(From the preface) This edited book establishes a . . . perspective on theory and research on gender, power, and communication in human relationships. In one volume are both theoretical essays and review chapters that address issues relevant to female and male differences in power, dominance, communication, equality, and expectations/beliefs. This volume . . . incorporates a multidisciplinary approach to the study of gender and the communication of power in human relationships. This book provides both breadth and centralized treatment of issues that form the very foundation of social and personal relationships. This edited work [is intended for] scholars working in the disciplines of communication and psychology, as well as other areas of social science research.  
(PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language  
English

PY: Publication Year  
1995

PT: Publication Type  
Print (Paper); Edited Book

DE: Descriptors  
\*Human Sex Differences; \*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Power

ID: Identifiers  
multidisciplinary approach to gender & communication of power in

relationships; human males vs females

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

TB: Table of Contents

Contributors

Preface

Part I: Introduction and overview

Power and communication in the relationships of women and men /

Pamela J. Kalbfleisch and Michael J. Cody

Part II: Gender-based expectations and beliefs

Body politics revisited: What do we know today? / Nancy M. Henley

Gender, immediacy, and nonverbal communication / Judee K. Burgoon  
and Leesa Dillman

Women's style in problem solving interaction: Powerless, or simply  
feminine? / Anthony Mulac and James J. Bradac

Masculinity and femininity: Defining the undefinable / Janet T.  
Spence and Camille Buckner

Part III: Women and men together

Sexual discourse and sexual intercourse: How the way we  
communicate affects the way we think about sexual coercion /  
Rhonda K. Reinholtz, Charlene L. Muehlenhard, Joi L. Phelps and  
Arthur T. Satterfield

Negotiating safer sex: The dynamics of African-American  
relationships / Lynn Carol Miller, Diane M. Burns and Sadina  
Rothspan

Power and equality in mentoring relationships / Pamela J.  
Kalbfleisch and Joann Keyton

Relating to spouse and stranger: Gender preferential language use  
/ Mary Anne Fitzpatrick and Anthony Mulac

Managing conflict and anger: Investigating the sex stereotype  
hypothesis / William R. Cupach and Daniel J. Canary

The dynamics of power: Money and sex in intimate relationships /  
Pepper Schwartz, Davis Patterson and Sara Steen

Part IV: Women and men in society

Television promotion of gender equality in societies / Everett M.  
Rogers, Thomas M. Hirata, Ankila S. Chandran and Jeffery D.  
Robinson

Men and women in the market place / Michael J. Cody, John Seiter  
and Yvette Montagne-Miller

Gender and power / Judy C. Pearson and Leda Cooks

Author index

Subject index

**TI: Title**

**A theory of power relationships in marriage**

AU: Author

Rollins, Boyd C; Bahr, Stephen J

AF: Author Affiliation

Brigham Young U

SO: Source

Journal of Marriage & the Family. Vol 38(4), Nov 1976, pp. 619-627

IS: ISSN

0022-2445

PB: Publisher

Allen Press Inc/National Council on Family Relations, US,  
[URL:<http://www.allenpress.com>]

AB: Abstract

Attempts to clarify conceptualizations in the general area of marital power. The concept of power is differentiated from control attempt, control, resources, and authority. A theory is developed which specifies the relationships among these 5 variables. It is assumed that (a) power and control are social interaction constructs rather than attributes of individual persons; (b) power and control are relevant constructs only when a conflict exists between the goals of marriage partners; and (c) authority, resources, and power do not exist independently of perceptions. The theory clarifies a number of conceptual ambiguities and appears to be useful for integrating empirical research in this area. (40 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1976

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Marital Relations; \*Power

ID: Identifiers

theory of power relationships in marriage

CL: Classification

2950 Marriage & Family

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update  
19770601  
AN: Accession Number  
1977-12650-001

\*\*

**TI: Title**

**Understanding domestic violence: An examination of power and control in couple relationships**

AU: Author  
Malik, Neena Marlene  
AF: Author Affiliation  
U Denver, US  
AV: Availability

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAM9730339

SO: Source  
Dissertation Abstracts International: Section B: The Sciences & Engineering. Vol 58(4-B), Oct 1997, pp. 2128

IS: ISSN  
0419-4217

PB: Publisher  
US: Univ. Microfilms International

AB: Abstract  
It has become clear to social scientists and policymakers alike that violence within the family is all too common and carries enormous costs to society. Physical assaults occur in millions of intimate partnerships every year (Straus & Gelles, 1990). When domestic violence is present in a relationship, interpersonal power is a construct that is plainly involved, to the extent that violence is an extreme expression of power (Murphy & Meyer, 1991), and yet a notoriously problematic concept to empirically investigate (Huston, 1983). The goal of this study was to explore the role of relationship power in violence, examining how power, other dyadic, and individual factors are associated with domestic violence. In a sample of 22 aggressive and 18 non-violent couples, the unique roles of individual and dyadic factors, particularly relationship power, were examined in relation to domestic violence. It was found that power can be measured validly, and that across theoretical domains of power, many associations with domestic violence exist. Family of origin violence and dyadic negative escalation moderated the relations between power and violence, and relationship satisfaction was a partial mediator. Individual factors were less related to violence than dyadic ones. This study indicates the need to examine and understand the role of relationship power and other dyadic factors in the etiology and treatment of domestic violence. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000

APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Couples; \*Family Violence; \*Power; \*Social Control

ID: Identifiers

relationship power & control & dyadic & individual factors

associated with domestic violence; aggressive couples

CL: Classification

3300 Health & Mental Health Treatment & Prevention; 3000 Social

Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-95020-284

### **TI: Title**

**A cognitive ecological model of women's response to male sexual coercion in dating**

AU: Author

Nurius, Paula S; Norris, Jeanette

AF: Author Affiliation

U Washington, US

SO: Source

Journal of Psychology & Human Sexuality. Vol 8(1-2), 1995, pp.  
117-139

IS: ISSN

0890-7064

PB: Publisher

Haworth Press Inc, US, [URL:<http://www.haworthpressinc.com>]

AB: Abstract

Examines a theoretical model that consolidates background, environmental, and intrapersonal variables related to women's experience of sexual coercion in dating into a coherent ecological framework and present for the first time a cognitive analysis of the processes women use to formulate responses to sexual coercion. An underlying premise for this model is that a woman's coping response to sexual coercion by an acquaintance is mediated through cognitive processing of background and situational influences. Because women encounter this form of sexual coercion in the

context of relationships and situations that they presume will follow normative expectations (e.g., about making friends, socializing and dating), it is essential to consider normative processes of learning, cognitive mediation, and coping guiding their efforts to interpret and respond to this form of personal threat. Although acts of coercion unquestionably remain the responsibility of the perpetrator, a more complete understanding of the multilevel factors shaping women's perception of and response to threats can strengthen future inquiry and prevention efforts. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Females; \*Models; \*Sexual Abuse; \*Social Dating; Psychosexual Behavior; Responses; Victimization; Violence

ID: Identifiers

cognitive ecological model of response to sexual coercion by dating partner; females

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human; Female

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1996-05421-008

### **TI: Title**

**Who's on top? Power in romantic relationships**

AU: Author

Felmlee, Diane H

AF: Author Affiliation

U California, Davis, US

SO: Source

Sex Roles. Vol 31(5-6), Sep 1994, pp. 275-295

IS: ISSN

0360-0025

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract

Investigated perceptions among 413 heterosexual-dating

undergraduates of male-female power balances in romantic dyads. Fewer than half perceived their relationships to be equal in the distribution of power, and men were over twice as likely as women to be viewed as the partners having more power. Imbalances were also evident in 3 related measures: decision-making, emotional involvement, and equity. A higher proportion of both women and men said that the male partner, rather than the female partner, made more of the decisions, was less emotionally involved, and in general was "getting a better deal." Finally, male dominance, but not equality of power between the genders, was associated with greater romantic relationship longevity. More specifically, the higher the relative degree of power attributed by respondents to the male, rather than the female, partner of a dyad, the lower was the subsequent rate of relationship dissolution. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1994

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Male Female Relations; \*Power; \*Social Dating; Heterosexuality

ID: Identifiers

perceptions of male vs female power balances in romantic dyads;  
heterosexual dating college students

CL: Classification

2970 Sex Roles & Women's Issues

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

**Theory: Cultural differences**

**TI: Title**

**Domestic violence and Detroit: An ethnic group study (Michigan)**

**AU: Author**

Kirt, Edward Alfred

**AF: Author Affiliation**

The Union Inst., US

**AV: Availability**

UMI Dissertation Order Number AAI9958866

**SO: Source**

Dissertation Abstracts International Section A: Humanities & Social Sciences. Vol 61(1-A), Jul 2000, pp. 379

**IS: ISSN**

0419-4209

**PB: Publisher**

US: Univ Microfilms International

**AB: Abstract**

This study is a cross-cultural ethnic group study using some quantitative methods to examine the Duluth model of intervention for 'men who batter' in Detroit, Michigan. The Duluth model is an attempt to profile abusive men by their presumed use of coercive tactics against women. The logic is simple: men analyze their use of these tactics, and in the process they change their abusive behavior. But using such a model assumes that the population being serviced is homogeneous and subscribes to an ideology that fosters a sense of fair play in interpersonal relationships. To determine the feasibility of using the Duluth model in Detroit, Michigan, an ethnic group study of relationship behaviors was undertaken. Data for this study were gathered using the Conflict Tactics Scale developed by Murray Straus and his associates to survey national levels of relationship behaviors. The survey was restricted to fifty persons from the African American, American Indian, Asian Indian, Jewish, Chinese, and Chaldean communities in Detroit, Michigan. The survey was also restricted to those who had a listed phone number. The data were grouped into five major categories reasoning, verbal abuse, physical abuse, violence, and severe violence. The results were presented in tables and charts by rates per thousand and percentages. These results indicated that not all ethnic groups were alike in the way they view interpersonal abuse and violence. Their use of violence varied from 20 per thousand to 312 per thousand respondents In the different ethnic groups in this study. Although there were certain levels of violence recorded for each ethnic group, there was no universal acceptance of violence in the communities surveyed. These results suggest that in addition to personal interests, the use of violence in

intimate relationships is also dependent upon a person's ethnic group affiliation (belief system). Treatment centers that overlook ethnic group differences are insensitive to their client population and ineffective in addressing the issue of intimate violence. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

2000

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Dissertation Abstract; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Family Violence; \*Partner Abuse; \*Physical Abuse; \*Racial and Ethnic Differences; \*Reasoning; Cross Cultural Differences; Human Males

ID: Identifiers

ethnicity group affiliation; reasoning & verbal & physical abuse & violence; men

CL: Classification

3000 Social Psychology

PO: Population

Human; Male; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); US

UD: Update

20010314

AN: Accession Number

2000-95013-044

### **TI: Title**

**Power strategy use in the intimate relationships of women and men from Mexico and the United States**

AU: Author

Belk, Sharyn S; Snell, William E; Garcia-Falconi, Renan;  
Hernandez-Sanchez, Julita E

AF: Author Affiliation

U Texas, Austin, US

SO: Source

Personality & Social Psychology Bulletin. Vol 14(3), Sep 1988, pp.  
439-447

IS: ISSN

0146-1672

PB: Publisher

Sage Publications, Inc., US

AB: Abstract

Examined the types of power strategies that 30 undergraduates from Mexico (15 males, 15 females) and 28 male and 79 female

undergraduates from the US used with their intimate partners. Power strategy use refers to the tactics and techniques that men and women use to persuade others to do something for them. Results indicate that Ss from both Mexico and the US reported using a number of different power strategies, although Mexican women and men tended to use more bilateral types of power strategies with their intimate partners. Results are interpreted in terms of I. Falbo and L. A. Peplau's (see record 1981-10374-001) 2-dimensional model of power strategy use. Falbo and Peplau showed that the use of power strategies in intimate relationships varies along 2 separate dimensions: bilateral (vs unilateral) and direct (vs indirect) power strategies. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1988

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Cross Cultural Differences; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Intimacy;

\*Male Female Relations; \*Power

ID: Identifiers

power strategies in intimate relationships; male vs female college students; Mexico vs US

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Mexico; US

UD: Update

19890701

AN: Accession Number

1989-22259-001

## ***Female perpetrators***

### **TI: Title**

**When the tables are turned: Verbal sexual coercion among college women**

### AU: Author

Shea, Mary E Craig

### AF: Author Affiliation

Private Practice, Columbia, SC, US

### SO: Source

Anderson, Peter B. (Ed); Struckman-Johnson, Cindy (Ed). (1998).

Sexually aggressive women: Current perspectives and controversies  
(pp. 94-104). New York, NY, US: The Guilford Press. xii, 244 pp.

### IB: ISBN

1572301651 (hardcover)

### PB: Publisher

New York, NY, US: The Guilford Press

### AB: Abstract

(From the chapter) This chapter describes 2 studies: The first is an investigation of the prevalence of sexual coercion of men by women and an initial investigation of the characteristics, feelings, and motivations of coercive women; the second is a further investigation of the histories, beliefs, arousal patterns, and social behavior of identified coercive women. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

### LA: Language

English

### PY: Publication Year

1998

### PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Chapter; Empirical Study

### DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Females; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Verbal Communication; Attitudes; College Students; Emotions; Epidemiology; Motivation; Sexual Arousal; Social Behavior

### ID: Identifiers

prevalence & characteristics & feelings & motivations & histories & beliefs & arousal patterns & social behavior; verbally sexually coercive college females

### CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

### PO: Population

Human; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

### FE: Features

References

### TA: Target Audience

Psychology: Professional & Research

UD: Update

19980901

AN: Accession Number

1998-07926-005

**TI: Title**

**Patterns of sexual coercion in adult heterosexual relationships:  
An exploration of male victimization**

AU: Author

Busby, Dean M; Compton, Susan V

AF: Author Affiliation

Syracuse U, Marriage & Family Therapy, Syracuse, NY, US

SO: Source

Family Process. Vol 36(1), Mar 1997, pp. 81-94

IS: ISSN

0014-7370

PB: Publisher

Family Process Inc, US

AB: Abstract

Identified and described sexual coercion of adult males by females in heterosexual relationships in comparison with relationships involving the sexual coercion of females, of both males and females, and of neither. The data for 3,032 couples that completed the Preparation for Marriage instrument (T. B. Holman et al, 1989) was collected and analyzed. Current individual and couple characteristics were investigated for male Ss and their partners.

Findings show greater deficiencies in relational resources and commitment in coercive vs noncoercive couples. In addition, gender differences were noted among results for different victim/offender configurations. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Couples; \*Male Female Relations; Heterosexuality

ID: Identifiers

Colorado Parental Child Rearing Scale & initial development & validation & reliability; college students & parents & siblings

CL: Classification

2220 Tests & Testing; 2956 Childrearing & Child Care

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19970101

AN: Accession Number

1997-04770-007

**TI: Title**

**References examining men as victims of women's sexual coercion.**

AU: Author

Fiebert, Martin S

AF: Author Affiliation

California State U, Dept of Psychology, Long Beach, CA, US

SO: Source

Sexuality & Culture: An Interdisciplinary Quarterly. Special

Issue: Vol 4(3), Sum 2000, pp. 81-88

IS: ISSN

1095-5143

IT: Issue Title

Special Issue:

PB: Publisher

Transaction Periodicals Consortium, US,

[URL:<http://www.transactionpub.com>]

AB: Abstract

Presents a bibliography of 42 annotated references (book chapters and journal articles) examining men as victims of women's sexual coercion. In parallel to women's concerns regarding sexual coercion, a number of investigators have recently examined the issue of men as victims. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

2000

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Bibliography

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Sexual Abuse; \*Victimization; Human Males

ID: Identifiers

male victims; sexual coercion

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

Peer Reviewed

UD: Update

20010822

AN: Accession Number

2001-01908-003

## **LGBT**

### **TI: Title**

**Power strategies in intimate relationships**

### **AU: Author**

Falbo, Toni; Peplau, Letitia A

### **AF: Author Affiliation**

U Texas, Austin

### **SO: Source**

Journal of Personality & Social Psychology. Vol 38(4), Apr 1980,  
pp. 618-628

### **IS: ISSN**

0022-3514

### **DO: DOI**

10.1037//0022-3514.38.4.618

### **PB: Publisher**

American Psychological Assn., US, [URL:<http://www.apa.org>]

### **AB: Abstract**

A study was conducted to generate (a) a model of power strategies used in intimate relationships and (b) information regarding the associations between gender, sexual orientation, egalitarianism, and power strategy use. Ss were 200 university students (100 homosexuals and 100 heterosexuals) evenly divided by gender. A 2-dimensional model was devised based on the strategies written in open-ended essays. These 2 dimensions concerned the extent to which the strategies were (a) direct (ranging from direct to indirect) and (b) interactive (ranging from bilateral to unilateral). Gender differences were found only among heterosexuals, with males more likely than females to report using bilateral and direct strategies. The effects of gender among heterosexuals paralleled findings concerning the balance of power in the relationship: Ss who preferred and perceived themselves as having more power than their partner, such as heterosexual men, were also more likely to use bilateral and direct strategies. No differences in power strategy use were found between homosexuals and heterosexuals. These and other results are interpreted in terms of the aforementioned model and general gender differences in power. (18 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

### **LA: Language**

English

### **PY: Publication Year**

1980

### **PT: Publication Type**

Print (Paper); Journal Article

### **DE: Descriptors**

\*Heterosexuality; \*Homosexuality; \*Human Sex Differences;  
\*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Power; Intimacy

ID: Identifiers

sex & sexual orientation; power balance & interactive & direct  
strategies in intimate relationships; heterosexual vs homosexual  
college students

CL: Classification

3020 Group & Interpersonal Processes

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19810501

AN: Accession Number

1981-10374-001

\*\*

**TI: Title**

**Heterosexual and homosexual coercion, sexual orientation and  
sexual roles in medical students**

AU: Author

McConaghy, Nathaniel; Zamir, Ruth

AF: Author Affiliation

Prince of Wales Hosp, Dept of Psychiatry, NSW, Australia

SO: Source

Archives of Sexual Behavior. Vol 24(5), Oct 1995, pp. 489-502

IS: ISSN

0004-0002

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/ Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.wkap.nl>]

AB: Abstract

Investigated heterosexual and homosexual coercion, sexual orientation and sexual roles in 101 male (mean age 19.9 yrs) and 81 female (mean age 19.5 yrs) Australian medical students. All Ss completed the modified Sexual Experience Survey and the Sex-Linked Behaviors questionnaire. On the Bem Sex-Role Inventory, they rated how well each of 20 masculine, feminine, and neutral personality traits described themselves. Comparable proportions of men and women were victims of coercive experiences. Forms of coercion not involving threat or use of force were more common, more exclusively heterosexual, and carried out by more equivalent percentages of men and women. The ratio of homosexual/heterosexual feelings reported by male, but not female Ss, correlated with the degree of the homosexual coercion they both carried out and experienced. The degree of sexual coercion correlated with

masculinity, rather than with male behavior. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Sex Roles; Medical Students; Rape

ID: Identifiers

sexual orientation & sex roles; heterosexual vs homosexual coercion; male vs female medical students; Australia

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19960801

AN: Accession Number

1996-22802-001

**TI: Title**

**Sexual coercion in gay/lesbian relationships: Descriptives and gender differences**

AU: Author

Waldner-Haugrud, Lisa K; Gratch, Linda Valden

AF: Author Affiliation

U Houston, Dept of Social Sciences, Houston, TX, US

SO: Source

Violence & Victims. Vol 12(1), Spr 1997, pp. 87-98

IS: ISSN

0886-6708

PB: Publisher

Springer Publishing Co., US

AB: Abstract

A sample of 162 gay males and 111 lesbians (aged 18-79 yrs) completed a survey measuring the frequency of sexually coercive acts occurring within gay and lesbian relationships. Several hypotheses were proposed to clarify earlier findings and to explore gender differences in the data. Contradicting earlier studies' findings that lesbians experience sexual coercion at higher rates than gay men, the results of this study suggest lesbians are not more likely than gay men to be classified as victims of sexual coercion. Gay men also were found to experience

a significantly higher mean number of coercive experiences. Other analyses specific to the type of coercion experienced and the severity of the sexual coercion outcomes (penetration) revealed no gender differences, however. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Lesbianism; \*Male Homosexuality; \*Partner Abuse; \*Sex Offenses;  
\*Victimization; Human Sex Differences

ID: Identifiers

frequency of sexually coercive victimization occurring within  
relationships; 18-79 yr old gay males vs lesbians

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior; 2980 Sexual  
Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood  
(18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); Aged  
(65 yrs & older); US

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19980301

AN: Accession Number

1997-43627-006

## **TI: Title**

**The balance of power in lesbian relationships**

AU: Author

Caldwell, Mayta A; Peplau, Letitia A

AF: Author Affiliation

U California, Los Angeles

SO: Source

Sex Roles. Vol 10(7-8), Apr 1984, pp. 587-599

IS: ISSN

0360-0025

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.plenum.com>]

AB: Abstract

Investigated the balance of power in lesbian relationships and  
factors that affect it using 77 19-59 yr old lesbians who were

currently involved in a romantic/sexual relationship. About 55% of the Ss worked full-time, and 40% were students. Ss completed a 23-page questionnaire that was based on extensive 2-hr interviews with 12 lesbians about their relationships and on group discussions held with lesbian students. Findings show that although Ss strongly endorsed an egalitarian ideal of equal power in love relationships, nearly 40% reported an unequal balance of power in their relationship. As social exchange theory predicts, the partner who is relatively less dependent on the relationship and who has greater personal resources tends to have greater power. Compared to Ss in equal power relationships, those in unequal power relationships reported less satisfaction and anticipated more problems in their relationships. No evidence of "butch^femme" role playing was found. It is suggested that the determinants of the balance of power go beyond attitudes and reflect processes of social exchange that can occur regardless of ideology or sexual orientation. (25 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1984

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Lesbianism; \*Power; Egalitarianism

ID: Identifiers

balance of power; romantic/sexual relationships; 19-59 yr old  
lesbians

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19850401

AN: Accession Number

1985-09457-001

\*\*

**TI: Title**

**Sex, power, and influence tactics in intimate relationships**

AU: Author

Howard, Judith A; Blumstein, Philip; Schwartz, Pepper

AF: Author Affiliation

U Washington, Seattle

SO: Source

Journal of Personality & Social Psychology. Vol 51(1), Jul 1986,  
pp. 102-109

IS: ISSN

0022-3514

DO: DOI

10.1037//0022-3514.51.1.102

PB: Publisher

American Psychological Assn., US, [URL:<http://www.apa.org>]

AB: Abstract

Examined the influence of sex, sex-role orientation, structural power, and interpersonal dependence on the use of influence tactics in 75 homosexual couples, 62 lesbian couples, and 98 heterosexual couples. Ss rated the frequency of 24 influence tactics on a 9-point scale, from which 6 dimensions of influence tactics were identified: manipulation, supplication, bullying, autocracy, disengagement, and bargaining. Several patterns of the effect of interpersonal power on influence tactics were found: Positions of weakness increased the use of supplication and manipulation, both "weak" strategies. Positions of strength somewhat increased the likelihood of bullying and the use of autocratic tactics, both "strong" strategies. Patterns of bargaining and the use of disengagement were more complex and varied across couple types. Both sex and sex-role orientation had consistent effects on influence dynamics, but these effects were limited primarily to the use of weak tactics. These effects of sex do not appear to be mediated either by interpersonal dependence or by structural power. (33 ref) (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1986

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Interpersonal Interaction; \*Lesbianism; \*Male Homosexuality;  
\*Power; \*Sex Roles; Couples; Human Sex Differences; Social  
Influences

ID: Identifiers

sex role orientation & structure power & interpersonal dependence;  
use of influence tactics; homosexual vs lesbian vs heterosexual  
couples

CL: Classification

2970 Sex Roles & Women's Issues; 3020 Group & Interpersonal

Processes

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19861101

AN: Accession Number

1986-27096-001

**TI: Title**

**Heterosexual and homosexual coercion, sexual orientation and sexual roles in medical students**

AU: Author

McConaghy, Nathaniel; Zamir, Ruth

AF: Author Affiliation

Prince of Wales Hosp, Dept of Psychiatry, NSW, Australia

SO: Source

Archives of Sexual Behavior. Vol 24(5), Oct 1995, pp. 489-502

IS: ISSN

0004-0002

PB: Publisher

Kluwer Academic/ Plenum Publishers, US, [URL:<http://www.wkap.nl>]

AB: Abstract

Investigated heterosexual and homosexual coercion, sexual orientation and sexual roles in 101 male (mean age 19.9 yrs) and 81 female (mean age 19.5 yrs) Australian medical students. All Ss completed the modified Sexual Experience Survey and the Sex-Linked Behaviors questionnaire. On the Bem Sex-Role Inventory, they rated how well each of 20 masculine, feminine, and neutral personality traits described themselves. Comparable proportions of men and women were victims of coercive experiences. Forms of coercion not involving threat or use of force were more common, more exclusively heterosexual, and carried out by more equivalent percentages of men and women. The ratio of homosexual/heterosexual feelings reported by male, but not female Ss, correlated with the degree of the homosexual coercion they both carried out and experienced. The degree of sexual coercion correlated with masculinity, rather than with male behavior. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (unassigned)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1995

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Human Sex Differences; \*Psychosexual Behavior; \*Sex Roles; Medical Students; Rape

ID: Identifiers

sexual orientation & sex roles; heterosexual vs homosexual coercion; male vs female medical students; Australia

CL: Classification

2980 Sexual Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Adulthood (18 yrs & older)

UD: Update

19960801

AN: Accession Number

1996-22802-001

**TI: Title**

**Sexual coercion in gay/lesbian relationships: Descriptives and gender differences**

AU: Author

Waldner-Haugrud, Lisa K; Gratch, Linda Valden

AF: Author Affiliation

U Houston, Dept of Social Sciences, Houston, TX, US

SO: Source

Violence & Victims. Vol 12(1), Spr 1997, pp. 87-98

IS: ISSN

0886-6708

PB: Publisher

Springer Publishing Co., US

AB: Abstract

A sample of 162 gay males and 111 lesbians (aged 18-79 yrs) completed a survey measuring the frequency of sexually coercive acts occurring within gay and lesbian relationships. Several hypotheses were proposed to clarify earlier findings and to explore gender differences in the data. Contradicting earlier studies' findings that lesbians experience sexual coercion at higher rates than gay men, the results of this study suggest lesbians are not more likely than gay men to be classified as victims of sexual coercion. Gay men also were found to experience a significantly higher mean number of coercive experiences. Other analyses specific to the type of coercion experienced and the severity of the sexual coercion outcomes (penetration) revealed no gender differences, however. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1997

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Empirical Study

DE: Descriptors

\*Lesbianism; \*Male Homosexuality; \*Partner Abuse; \*Sex Offenses;  
\*Victimization; Human Sex Differences

ID: Identifiers

frequency of sexually coercive victimization occurring within  
relationships; 18-79 yr old gay males vs lesbians

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior; 2980 Sexual  
Behavior & Sexual Orientation

PO: Population

Human; Male; Female; Adulthood (18 yrs & older); Young Adulthood  
(18-29 yrs); Thirties (30-39 yrs); Middle Age (40-64 yrs); Aged  
(65 yrs & older); US

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19980301

AN: Accession Number

1997-43627-006

**TI: Title**

**Sexual coercion in lesbian and gay relationships: A review and critique**

AU: Author

Waldner-Haugrud, Lisa K

AF: Author Affiliation

U Houston, Dept of Social Sciences, Houston, TX, US

SO: Source

Aggression & Violent Behavior. Vol 4(2), Sum 1999, pp. 139-149

IS: ISSN

1359-1789

PB: Publisher

Pergamon/Elsevier Science Ltd, England

AB: Abstract

Sexual coercion, or pressure to engage in unwanted sexual behavior, has been a popular research topic for social scientists interested in heterosexual relationships. Only recently have researchers turned their attention to lesbian and gay couples.

Several research studies are reviewed to assess rates, causes, and effects of sexual coercion in lesbian and gay relationships.

Several methodological issues that limit usefulness of findings on homosexual sexual coercion are discussed as well as reasons why social scientists have been reluctant to investigate sexual

coercion in lesbian and gay relationships. (PsycINFO Database Record (c) 2000 APA, all rights reserved) (journal abstract)

LA: Language

English

PY: Publication Year

1999

PT: Publication Type

Print (Paper); Journal Article; Literature Review/Research Review

DE: Descriptors

\*Coercion; \*Homosexuality; \*Lesbianism; \*Psychosexual Behavior;

\*Sex Offenses

ID: Identifiers

sexual coercion; lesbian & gay couples

CL: Classification

3230 Behavior Disorders & Antisocial Behavior

PO: Population

Human

FE: Features

References

UD: Update

19990801

AN: Accession Number

1999-05803-002

## **Appendix C**

Synopsis of Listserv Discussion on the Conceptual Framework for the Development  
Of a Coercive Control Measure

## Appendix C

### **SYNOPSIS OF LISTSERV DISCUSSION ON THE CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK FOR THE DEVELOPMENT OF A COERCIVE CONTROL MEASURE**

The synopsis is organized by the sections used in the conceptual framework for the development of a coercive control measure. A description of each section within the framework is presented first and is followed by the discussion generated by each section.

#### **I. Underlying Assumptions/Hypotheses**

Assumption 1: Social power plays a role in all interpersonal relationships, including intimate partner relationships (French and Raven, 1959).

Assumption 2: Coercion is one of several forms of social power found in most intimate partner relationships, although there is a great deal of variance in forms and severity of coercion (Molm, 1997; Raven, 1993; Raven, Center, and Rodriguez, 1975).

Assumption 3: The construct of control encompasses coercion, as well as force and persuasion. Control is neither positive nor negative; it is the product of inevitable social power in relationships. It is coercion—or control that results from abuses of power—that is problematic.

Assumption 4: Coercion is a fluid process. An individual can be both a “target” and an “agent” of coercion—sometimes within the same interaction. The level or severity of coercion between the two partners may or may not differ dramatically.

#### **Discussion**

***The Reference of “Most” to Coercion or Social Power.*** It was suggested that the word “most” in assumption 2 should be moved to make its reference clearer. As it currently reads, it is unclear whether “most” means that coercion is found in most intimate relationships, or whether it refers to social power. If the latter, it is not only a reasonable assumption but essentially true by definition. Beginning with Max Weber’s definition of a relationship in terms of mutual influence, then through the more recent developments derived from the “close relationship framework” of Kelley, et al., social influence (and thus by implication social power) is involved in all relationships, and especially so in close relationships. If the “most” refers more specifically to coercion, then perhaps this assumption requires some elaboration. [*Response from project team:* “Most” refers to coercion, not social power. Editing should make the point clearer.]

***Definition of Control.*** The need for a definition of control was noted. Currently, control seems to be defined only by example, when noted in assumption 3 that it includes coercion, force, and persuasion. This definition raised the question: Which forms of influence are included

in control? A definition that would allow one to understand why some forms of influence are included while others are not was suggested. For example, persuasion seems quite different from coercion and force. Why are they covered by the concept of control while Kelman's "identification" is not?

The *American Heritage Dictionary* defines control as: *verb form* 1) to exercise authoritative or dominating influence over; direct. 2) to hold in restraint; check, 3) to verify or regulate (a scientific experiment) by conducting a parallel experiment or by comparing with another standard. The same dictionary's definition for coerce reads: 1) to force to act or think in a certain way by use of pressure, threats, or intimidation; compel, 2) to dominate, restrain, or control forcefully: e.g., *coerced the strikers into compliance*, 3) to bring about by force or threat: *efforts to coerce agreement*. These definitions support the conception of control as neither good nor bad, as well as the view of coercion as a 'specific mechanism' of control. The distinction between force and coercion makes sense. Was it Hannah Arendt who said that force represents the failure of coercion?

One discussant stated that persuasion and coercion need to be separated. From TV commercials to religious gurus to political leaders, everyone tries to persuade the public to act in a particular way. The way to distinguish "good" (persuasion?) from "bad" coercion may be to check it against standards of social norms.

***The Definition of Control as Outcome or Process.*** Whether to define control as outcome or process was discussed. It was noted that if one defines control as an outcome (i.e., the product of inevitable social power in relationships, as stated in assumption 3) then it is a power outcome. It is more difficult to define controlling behavior or control as a process.

The distinction between process and outcome was described as critical by several discussants. A project dealing with several parallel matters in revising the SES was cited. As part of the project, investigators have been dealing with the measurement of sexual assault where there are strategies (processes) like obtaining nonconsensual sex by taking advantage of an intoxicated woman, deliberately getting a woman intoxicated so that she cannot consent, threatening harm to her, or using physical force. And, there are also outcomes like assault, attempted rape, or rape. Both need to be captured in some way. Is the same true with coercion and control? Is it important to identify the "how it is accomplished" and what the "it" is? Does one use coercion to obtain control?

In coercion, process and outcome may be inseparable. The process the agent engages in will lead to a particular outcome. May it be 'I will get my dinner at 6:00 o'clock', 'she will not waste time gossiping with the neighbors', or 'she will be forever subservient to me'. Whether the agent has visualized and articulated this outcome clearly is not important. The outcome is there and *will* occur if coercion is *successful*.

To be successful, coercion has to be based on social power differential - power that is ascribed or gained. Also, the target must perceive coercion (and power differential) clearly. 'Dominance' might be the operative word here rather than control.

The question of whether it is important to articulate coercion and control in the same way as sexual assault was raised, since coercion, by definition, reflects a contingent act—not merely an act—and thereby involves both a threat and a demand. On the other hand, the model attempts to articulate “how it is accomplished” AND what the ‘it’ is. That is, “how” can be understood in terms of what is the threat and the “it” can be understood as the demand.

The difference between victim and perpetrator in terms of how they think about the process and outcome was noted. In the SES project above, some of the narrative data seems to suggest that women talk about the process (how he did it) more than the outcome (what sexual activity was obtained). Is there a parallel question here for coercion and control? Is process the more meaningful construct for victims, or is it outcome? The importance of these two questions in terms of the ethnographic interviews and looking separately at the target and agent’s evaluation/meaning/importance of the demand itself versus the threat was noted.

The importance of considering separately the target and agent’s evaluation of the demand versus the threat was stressed by another discussant because it has legal ramifications in, at the least, the immigration context (e.g. the effect on the victim). Immigration law particularly in the context of the new crime victim visa that requires that an immigrant victim prove that they have suffered substantial physical or mental abuse will focus on the effect of the abuse or coercion on the victim.

The idea that the process versus outcome distinction and the coercion versus control distinction are parallel was proposed. Perhaps the *process* of coercion could be thought of as the agent’s threat and accompanying demand. Then the *outcome* is what happens as a result of this process. If the act of coercion is “successful” (that is, if the target complies), then the agent can be considered to have controlled the target. However, if the target resists, escapes, or otherwise subverts the agent’s demand or threat, the act of coercion could be considered “unsuccessful” and therefore no control has been exerted.

Disagreement with the idea that the act of coercion could be considered “unsuccessful” was expressed. Just because, on one instance, the target has been successful in resisting the coercion does not mean that it had no effect on him or her. The effect can be cumulative. The target may resist now but the act of coercion itself could affect how the target will respond to ongoing coercion from the agent in the future.

Another discussant agreed and noted that “unsuccessful” coercion may have a hugh effect. The effect may increase the control about something other than the specific demand of the moment. The challenge is to distinguish that effect when whatever level of resistance was “successful” in avoiding having to do the specific “index” demand versus the effect when the individual was not able to resist completely or at all and thus engaged in some level of compliance.

The question of whether coercion, by definition, is always bad, and what separates it from manipulation, other forms of influence, and from ‘justified coercion’ as it’s labeled in the model was raised. Is *intention* also relevant to whether an action is to be seen as coercive, abusive,

manipulative or appropriately controlling? Intention was defined as not whether the actor was consciously aware of his or her intentions but whether there is any personal gain involved in attempting to coerce the other person. For instance, judges often coerce batterers to attend batterer intervention programs (with ultimate threat of physical restraint for noncompliance) but there is no personal gain for them to do so (though there is certainly a ‘cost’ to the person being ordered). In this case, the judge’s actions would be an unjustified abuse of power, only if he/she used bad process or tactics such as yelling at or humiliating the defendant. Another example of ‘justified coercion’ might be a husband forces alcoholic partner into a detox program by taking her and leaving her there. In my mind, this behavior would only be unjustified coercion if it was accompanied by abusive behavior or was part of an overall pattern of coercive control. Of course, many batterers claim to be using ‘good intentions’ to justify their abuse. In research about excuse-making strategies, ‘good intentions’ were found to be the third most commonly used excuse for abusive behavior, just after ‘she provoked me’ and ‘I lost control’.

The importance of taking the context, meaning, and motives of behaviors into account was noted. For example, it is important to determine whether a person’s actions were intentionally designed to coerce someone into doing something. Thus, outcome and motive should be differentiated. However, studies on abusive men indicate that social desirability effects often come into play. In other words, many men, despite having intentionally coerced their partners into doing something, are reluctant to say so and will often use excuses. In both coercion and control, understanding the full context may be the only way of determining their values.

It was agreed that both intention and outcome are important and different. In terms of measurement, it was noted that “how” an agent/abuser gets the target/victim to do something s/he does not want to do would be of interest. Whether or not the agent/abuser “intended” to coerce maybe yet another dimension (i.e., mechanism) that could be measured separately, but the value of doing so (i.e., does it advance our understanding) was questioned.

Zvi Eisikovits’s conceptions about the construction of control was referenced as a possible source for development of the model. It was noted that much of his work on control has to do with the concept of “self-control”, not social control or control over another. His work is a rather complex treatment of how the notion of self-control (or lack thereof) translates to control over—in both directions, from the batterer (batterer lack of self-control results in control over the victim) and the victim (victim self control results in control over the batterer). He is working with “perceptions” and thus “self-control” is how it is viewed by victim and batterer, and that’s quite different with an “external” conceptualization.

***Coercion and Abuse.*** It was noted that the last sentence in assumption 3 (It is coercion—or control that results from abuses of power—that is problematic.) suggests that coercion can be defined as “control that results from abuses of power.” For one discussant, the word “abuse” has always seemed problematically vague. One person’s abuse is another’s gentle persuasion.

***Coercion and Force.*** It was noted that coercion may not be so different from force as given enough (psychological) coercion the target may not be able to resist. There may be no choice left, if the victim wants to survive.

## **II. Working Definition of Coercion**

**Definition 1:** Coercion is the act of getting someone to act or think in a particular way by using or threatening with negative consequences for noncompliance. As such, coercion is a specific mechanism of control. An act of coercion requires a “target” and an “agent.”

**Definition 2:** Coercion is one aspect of psychological abuse. Psychological abuse also includes put-downs, bad treatment, and other behaviors that may not involve a demand that a person do or not do something.

**Definition 3:** Coercion is different from “force.” Force involves “lack of volition” where—given sufficient force—it is physically impossible to resist.

**Definition 4:** Coercion involves “choice,” but not “free choice.” By definition, there is a “cost” for choosing noncompliance. When that “cost” is meaningful to the “target” of coercion, then socially or clinically significant coercion exists.

## **Discussion**

***Coercion and Psychological Abuse.*** The question of whether coercion should be defined as one aspect of psychological abuse was raised. It was noted that the term “psychological abuse” rarely has a clear definition in the psychological abuse literature and has been used to encompass a whole range of controlling behaviors that are not obviously psychological. It was suggested that one outcome of this work could be to encourage researchers to confine “psychological” abuse or control to tactics that are explicitly focused on shaping the psychology of the target. It was noted that from a legal perspective that if this were one of the outcomes it would be particularly helpful in immigration domestic violence cases in which adjudicators are required to determine whether a victim has suffered extreme cruelty.

One discussant noted that it was more accurate to define psychological abuse as one aspect or tactic of coercion rather than defining coercion as ‘one aspect of psychological abuse’. This also raised the idea of economic coercion and whether it alone (without the presence of psychological, physical and sexual abuse) fits the criteria for coercion or does coercion always depend upon the ultimate threat of force?

It was explained that coercion was put in the category of psychological abuse using a common categorical system of physical violence, sexual abuse, psychological abuse, and stalking. Coercion also is defined within the psychological abuse category in the Duluth Power and Control model. Although the point about psychological abuse was understood by this discussant, it was unclear whether psychological abuse should refer to the intention of the tactic

as suggested (“confine...to tactics that are explicitly focused on shaping the psychology of the target”) or to the topography or mechanism of the tactic itself.

The question was raised as to whether the term psychological abuse should refer to behaviors that are intended to impact the victim in some psychological way or whether “psychological” referred instead to something about how (i.e., the mechanism) or the tactic (i.e., mind control)? The categories of physical, sexual, etc., seem to refer to something about the tactic - that is, type or nature (i.e., topography) and not about the impact on the victim.

It was agreed that the field needs some clarity in defining psychological abuse and defining or validating coercion in relation to psychological abuse was an important matter. A discussant reported working on a project that is assessing the internal validity of Hudson and McIntosh’s *Index of Spouse Abuse*. Preliminary results indicate that the model that best fits the data is one with three factors called physical, psychological, and controlling violence. However, psychological and controlling violence are very highly correlated. Does this mean that they are distinct constructs that co-occur or that they are the same construct? This cannot be answered from the data, but is there some way in this project to distinguish coercion/control from or as a subtype of psychological abuse?

It was noted that the three identified factors: physical, psychological, and controlling violence are reminiscent of Tolman’s (1989) Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PMWI), specifically two factors: emotional/verbal and dominance/isolation. The question was asked whether the factors above (psychological versus controlling) correspond to Tolman’s categories?

Another discussant recommended examining Tolman’s PMWI for items relevant to the project, such as: my partner tried to turn my friends and family against me; my partner treated me like his personal servant; and my partner monitored my time and made me account for my whereabouts. The discussant acknowledged that many people have problems with the concept of psychological abuse but pointed out that a large body of research shows that many women, regardless of whether they were severely beaten or sexually assaulted, find psychological abuse to be more injurious than physical abuse. Recognizing that psychological abuse is very difficult to measure, why not let the respondents define whether or not they see coercion as a form of psychological abuse?

In response to the above question, it was noted that whether respondents label coercion as psychological abuse may not be important for the purpose of this project. Although if the language they use to talk about these things is of interest, than it may be important. A given phenomenon can be studied—regardless of what it is called—as long as it is described adequately enough for people to know what is meant. As an analogy, a lot of battered women don’t call what happens to them as domestic violence. The label is just a socially constructed construct to facilitate communication. Tolman’s PMWI scale includes many examples of controlling behavior—including threats, but an instrument that measures the whole construct of coercion, including demands and the threats of contingent outcomes that go with them has not been identified.

One discussant was reluctant to understand coercion as purely psychological abuse. Whether articulated by the agent or not, coercion is always accompanied by *threats* (implied or exposed, social or personal) of physical consequences. Successful coercion might include an aspect of terror for the victim. This threat might translate to something like “if I am dumb and stupid, I might be thrown out of the house and starve to death,” or “I am too silly and won’t be able to survive on my own.” Even the idea that “I am nothing,” generally has some fears of physical (real?) reprisals associated with it (e.g., I will have no family support or my children will be taken away from me). There is at least a threat to lifestyle hidden in coercive tactics.

**Distinguishing Coercion.** The following questions were raised in regards to distinguishing coercion: “Is it important to distinguish ‘socially or clinically significant’ coercion from other coercion? Why? How can we decide how meaningful it would have to be to be significant? And how would we assess meaningfulness?”

One discussant noted that the above question really gets at Outstanding Issue number two (p. 17). Considering just the dynamic of coercion as outlined in the elements of coercive control, it seems that each of the six elements could be achieved in examples of “low level” or perhaps not socially/clinically significant coercion (even if dysfunctional), as well as in “high level” and quite clearly significant examples of coercion. Outstanding Issue number two suggests possible ways to distinguish the two.

Another discussant noted that the legal philosopher Alan Wertheimer, in his book *Coercion* has dealt with the issue of levels of coercion. It is a complicated argument but at the core it comes down to the idea that ultimately what is coercive is NOT a behavioral property but a normative judgment that society makes. When the MacArthur Network on Mental Health and the Law was trying to resolve the problem of what should be counted as coercive, the discussant and his colleagues hated Wertheimer’s argument because it meant that they could not measure the coerciveness of behaviors, only the perception of coerciveness. However after working at it for months and months, they came to the conclusion that he was right. It was noted that if you start trying to make rules about what is coercive and what is not and/or how coercive a behavior is, you will find that the judgment only works if there is a strong situated normative judgment as part of it.

In response, a discussant replied, “Intuitively, relying on the individual’s perception of *what threat* is sufficient enough to overcome her/his reluctance to engage in *what demand* is a matter that is more complicated than simple behavioral definitions, since it involves the balance of at least these two elements. That conceptualization also allows for the same threat to function to “achieve” a coercive outcome, (i.e., compliance), sometimes (i.e., with some demands), but not others (i.e., other demands).”

Another discussant agreed that coerciveness cannot be reduced to a behavioral property, but was hesitant to agree that it is merely a normative judgment either (except in the broader sense that everything is social construct).

The importance of the *generality* of coercion in a relationship was noted. It is important to look at the whole relationship, not just at specific incidents. Johnson's definition of intimate terrorism focuses on the attempt to exert *general* control.

### **III. Purpose of Developing a Measure of Coercive Control**

Purpose 1: To develop a measure capable of assessing the type, severity, and extent of coercion within intimate partner relationships.

Purpose 2: To apply the new measure of coercive control in the study of violent intimate partner relationships in order to test a range of hypotheses, including, for example, that types of intimate partner violence can be distinguished by the level of coercive control they involve (e.g., Johnson, 1995; Johnson and Ferraro, 2000) or that some criminal conduct is the result of coercive control in intimate relationships (Colvin, Cullen, and Vander Ven 2001; Stark, 1995).

### **Discussion**

**Weighing Coercion.** A discussant asked whether there was any literature addressing how to appropriately “weight” items in coercive control inventories and how to capture if the tactic was “effective” in achieving the goal the person set out to achieve. The importance of distinguishing the difference between actions that actually prevent someone from doing something or makes someone do something that they don’t want to do and actions that may have no impact whatsoever on the other person’s life (e.g., following partner if doing so does not matter to the partner being followed) (Swan and Snow, 2002).

The question of how to accurately assess the impact of abuse and coercive control on the person to which it is directed also was raised. It seems important to pull out things that someone may do that have no real impact. For example, a woman threatens to hit her male partner but the threat does not make her partner feel afraid. Is that the same (in terms of type, severity, and extent of coercion) as when the male partner threatens to hit the woman and she is afraid?

### **IV. Six Elements of Coercive Control in Intimate Relationships**

Element 1: Coercion requires that the “agent” demand, request, or expect the “target” to do something that the target does NOT want to do.

- a. Coercion does not require—although may involve—an explicit “demand,” especially in ongoing relationships where current expectations are made clear through past interactions. Likewise, a seemingly pleasant “request,” that appears to be non-coercive when observed from outside the interaction, may functionally be a demand, again depending on past interactions between the target and agent.

- b. Demands, requests, or expectations can occur in any domain. The more domains in which coercion occurs, the more pervasive is the pattern of coercion in the relationship. Examples of domains include:
1. Personal activities (e.g., coming and going, eating, sleeping, dressing);
  2. Social life;
  3. Household;
  4. Work-related/economic/money;
  5. Children/parenting;
  6. Intimate/romance; and
  7. Safety/violence.

## Discussion

***Implicit Demands.*** It was agreed that coercion implies explicit or implicit threats to the target and noted that both the target and agent can be individuals or groups. It was noted that point 1(a) on implicit demands is reminiscent of Komter's work on hidden power.

***Domains.*** One discussant noted that domain number seven (safety/violence) seems quite different from the other six. The first six would likely be found in any discussion of domains of family life, but domain number seven seems to cut across them all.

It was noted that for immigrant families the categories of social life and household are not appropriate because there is often a very blurred line defining the two, if they can be separated at all. It may be appropriate to come up with a definition for "household" (i.e., the nuclear family), and explain that in many immigrant families often times the household consists of not only the nuclear family but extended family as well. The suggestion was made to use three categories instead of two: 1) Household – to include nuclear family and extended family members living in the same home; 2) Family members – to include extended family members that some from particular cultures would consider family and not part of social life; and 3) Social life.

**Element 2:** Coercion requires the communication of a contingent "meaningful" negative consequence for noncompliance.

- a. Communication of a contingent negative consequence for noncompliance may be established through: a) a prior actual contingent negative consequence delivered by the agent for noncompliance, or b) a threatened one.
- b. Communication of the threat of future negative consequence may be explicit (e.g., direct verbal statement) or implicit (e.g., gesture or words that carry the meaning of threat, even though they are not overtly stated).
- c. Communication of a threat of a contingent negative consequence may involve "invoking the power of third parties" (Raven, 1993).

- d. The contingent negative consequence may be the application of an aversive consequence (i.e., punishment) or the removal of something positive (i.e., response cost)—both of which function to increase the likelihood of compliance.
- e. The “meaningfulness” of the threatened consequence helps to determine “how much cost.” Some negative consequences may be slight (e.g., refusal to talk), while others may have tremendous impact on the target’s life (e.g., having one’s children taken away), and yet others are life-threatening (e.g., being killed). Understanding the “weight” or “cost” of the consequence to the target is essential to understanding the coercive process. The weight or meaning of a particular negative consequence is unique to the target and determined by many factors.

## **Discussion**

It was noted that point 2(e) is reminiscent of Cartwright’s early work on fit between the needs of B and the resources of A in the exertion of power in relationships.

Element 3: Coercion requires the agent’s surveillance of the target’s response.

- a. Coercive power requires the agent to be able to conduct surveillance to detect compliance vs. noncompliance. Examples of this in intimate partner violence include the agent checking the odometer to determine whether the target came right home as demanded, frequent phone calls to determine whether the target has left the home, or “checking” underwear to determine whether the target had sex with someone else.

## **Discussion**

Another example of surveillance (and one seen frequently in intimate terrorism), specifically “required ‘reports’ from the target” was suggested for inclusion in this element. Women coming to shelters often tell researchers that their partner asks them to account for any time that he has been unable to monitor directly.

Element 4: Setting the stage for social influence.

Coercion often involves some type of “setting the stage” or preparation of the target, to increase the likelihood that subsequent coercive tactics will be effective.

- a. **Softening the target.** The agent may set the stage by softening the target—that is, communicating to the target that the agent is “willing,” “able,” and “ready” to impose a negative consequence. It is “important to demonstrate to the target that not only are the means available for coercion (i.e., ability), but that the agent is ready and willing to pay the costs that coercion implies” (Raven, 1993).
  - 1. Communication of “willingness” of the agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.

- a) Communication of willingness occurs when the agent has previously imposed negative consequences (i.e., has done it before) on the target or someone else that the target knows about.
  - b) Communication of willingness occurs when the target states explicitly that he/she is going to engage in threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it).
2. Communication of “ability” of the agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.
- a) Agent’s ability to administer the negative consequence is based on the target’s perception of a unilateral power difference between the agent and the target. Perceived power differences can be derived from a number of sources:
    - Access to the “target” or “target’s” family and friends;
    - Physical size and strength;
    - Access to money and other economic resources;
    - Access to weapons;
    - Verbal persuasive ability;
    - Ability to utilize third party resources (e.g., individuals, institutional systems) to invoke consequences; and
    - Access to other resources that increase power.
3. Communication of agent’s “readiness” to engage in threatened negative consequence against the target (Raven, 1993).
- a) Communication of readiness answers the “why now?” question in terms of the target’s response to coercion. This is especially important when explaining the target’s resistance (vs. compliance).
  - b) Communication of readiness may occur by means of the agent saying explicitly—or in some other way communicating—that he/she is going to impose the threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it) within a particular timeframe.
- b. Wearing down target’s resistance.** Setting the stage for coercion may also occur through wearing down the target’s resistance. Wearing down resistance can involve the agent reducing the target’s emotional (e.g., inducing a state of terror/fear, emotionally wearing down), physical (e.g., injury, sleep deprivation), cognitive (e.g., creating mental confusion in the target), or economic (e.g., making it necessary for the target to use up her/his resources) resources—some of which may be necessary for the target to resist the agent.

- c. **Exploiting target's prior vulnerabilities.** Coercion may also be made more possible because the agent exploits the target's prior vulnerabilities (e.g., childhood abuse, prior victimization, mental disorder or disability, or physical disability).

## Discussion

**Section Titles.** It was suggested that “Setting the stage for coercion” may be a more appropriate title for the section currently entitled “Softening the target.” The ideas presented in this section currently seem to be more about establishing an expectation of punishment and the ideas presented in the section entitled, “Wearing down target’s resistance,” seem more about softening the target. It was agreed that changing titles were good suggestions and the section currently labeled, “Softening the target” might be changed to “creating expectancy” (perhaps to put within a theoretical frame of expectancy theory).

**Use of Term “Unilateral”.** It was noted that the term “unilateral” in: [the] “Agent’s ability to administer the negative consequence is based on the target’s perception of a unilateral power difference between the agent and the target” [item (2) a)] seems too strong. It implies zero power on the part of the target. It was suggested that perhaps “uneven power balance” is a better choice than “unilateral power difference” between the agent and target.

**Verbal Persuasion.** It was noted that the use of the term “verbal persuasive ability” [item (2) a), fifth bullet, p. 11] again raises the question about including persuasion in control and coercion. Do we want to call “verbal persuasive ability” coercion?

It was agreed that “verbal persuasion” in the “usual” definition would not necessarily be called coercion. However, the point that is attempted here is that anything that contributed to the agent’s greater social power (overall, in any domain) may increase that person’s ability to engage in threatened negative consequence of coercion. It does not mean they will use it that way, only that they have the ability to do so.

**Sources.** It was noted that the source, “Access to other resources that increase power,” [item (2) a), final bullet, p. 11] seems too vague. It was suggested that resources that increase coercive power specifically, not all forms of power, would be more appropriate. It also was suggested that along with the examples of individuals and institutional systems [item (2) a), sixth bullet, p. 11], the INS and IRS also be considered for inclusion.

**Readiness.** One discussant reported that it is unclear what item 3, “Communication of agent’s ‘readiness’ to engage in threatened negative consequence against the target,” is all about.

Element 5: Target’s response to the demand, request, or expectation.

- a. Coercion is an interactive process—not a static phenomenon. The “demand/response interaction” is iterative and several sequences may occur in the coercive process. For example, the sequence may be demand/resist/demand/resist/demand/comply—each time the demand becoming stronger.

- b. The target's behavioral response to coercion involves elements of two dimensions, which may occur alone or together.
  - 1. Compliance—doing what the target demands.
  - 2. Resistance—resisting what the target demands.
    - a) Direct resistance may involve confrontation or an overt resistance of the demand.
    - b) Indirect resistance involves resisting, but in a way that is “softer” or doesn’t involve a direct confrontation with the agent (e.g., delaying, rather than refusing; saying “yes” to the “request” but then not doing it).
- c. The target’s emotional and cognitive responses to coercion are also important, independent of her/his behavioral response.
  - 1. Emotional and cognitive responses associated with compliance or resistance are many. Examples include sadness, fear, helplessness, futility, anger, hope).
  - 2. The “meaning” of the compliance and resistance behavior is also important. Compliance now may be viewed as an interim step (e.g., to buy time) until the target can resist more successfully later. Or, compliance may mean to the target she/he has “given up” resisting the agent’s demands, at least for now.

Element 6: Relational context surrounding coercion.

- a. Coercion occurs in the context of a relationship. Characteristics of intimate coercive relationships may vary enormously. An ecological model (Bronfenbrenner 1979, Dutton 1996) is helpful to organize these contextual factors, as potential moderators and mediators of the impact of coercion, as well as on coercive tactics, per se. Examples are:
  - 1. Economic and Tangible Resources Context
    - a) Level of economic and tangible resources available to the target independent of the agent (e.g., threats to withhold child support payments will be more salient for someone with no job).
  - 2. Institutional Context
    - a) Level and type of institutional involvement of each partner.
  - 3. Cultural and Social Context
    - a) Socioeconomic/social class status

- b) Race/ethnicity
- c) Religion
- d) Immigration status/citizenship/country of origin
- e) Sexual orientation
- f) Urban/suburban/rural
- g) Age cohort

#### 4. Social Network

- a) Family, friends, co-workers, neighbors, or acquaintances.
  - 1) Social networks may influence coercion. Example: the agent's extended family that lives with the target may make noncompliance more costly, since it may invoke the disapproval of others, in addition to the agent's threat.
  - 2) Social support may bolster the target's efforts at noncompliance with coercive threats.
- b) Partner
  - 1) Other forms of social power ascribed to the partner—in addition to coercion—that may form the basis of coercion, influence, or other forms of control.
    - a. Reward power—ability to provide or withhold positive social consequence directly or indirectly (e.g., through third party).
    - b. Legitimate power to influence is seen as legitimate by means of social norms (e.g., gender roles), status in the community (e.g., religious or community leader), position of authority (e.g., police officer). Thus, the agent's greater legitimate status relative to the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., the religious community supports the role of husband in making demands of female partner). Legitimate power can also be used by the partner to the benefit of the other.
    - c. Expert power to influence is based on target's perception of agent's specific expertise (e.g., black belt, skillful verbal negotiation skills). Thus, an agent's greater expertise, relative to the target, provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent has knowledge about cars which support his threats to tamper with the car to make it unsafe). The partner can also use her/his expert power to the benefit of the other.
    - d. Referent power to influence based on target's identification or emotional connection with agent (e.g., emotional attachment, identity as "husband"). An agent's lesser attachment or commitment to the relationship relative to

the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent threatens to leave the relationship unless the target complies) by the partner.

- e. Informational power to influence based on agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target (e.g., where the checkbook is kept). Thus, the agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target provides the opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent threatens to withhold information about filing immigration papers unless the target complies). The partner may also use his/her informational power to the benefit of the other.

2) Physical power

- a. The agent's physical size and strength, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use physical force as a threat.

3) Economic autonomy and resources

- a. The agent's economic autonomy and resources, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use economic reasons as a tool of coercion.

5. Individual Context

a) Target's strengths/resilience and vulnerabilities

1) Cognitive

- a. Target's intellectual problem-solving abilities may enhance her/his ability to not comply, without incurring the threatened consequence.

2) Physical status/physiological state

- a. Alcohol/drug use and abuse

- i. Intoxication may impair her/his ability to resist a coercive demand.
- ii. Chronic alcohol/drug use or addiction

- b. Physical disabilities

- c. Chronic illness (e.g., cancer, HIV/AIDS)

3) Mental health/mental status

- a. Chronic mental illness

- b. Disorientation or confusion

- c. Depression

- d. PTSD and anxiety

4) Behavioral Skills/Deficits

- a. Proficiencies and abilities (e.g., karate, firearms)

- b. Skill deficits (e.g., inability to drive a car)

## **Discussion**

**Contextual Factors.** The point was made that in terms of intimate relationships cultural and social context is an important influence on coercion. Batterers commandeer various aspects of social norms and cultural beliefs to reinforce their coercive demands and to render their coercive tactics more effective. These cultural and social conditions also influence the perceived options of victims. Certainly culture and control over immigration status offer abusers a greater array of tools with which to perpetrate abuse.

One discussant noted the relevance of the list of contextual factors especially the social network variables. Research conducted by the discussant and Martin Schwartz shows that men who belong to patriarchal all-male social networks are often influenced by their peers to coerce and/or force women to have sex with them, to psychologically abuse them, and to physically abuse them under certain conditions (e.g., girlfriends' challenges to their authority). The researchers' measures of pro-abuse male peer support and the growing literature on the linkage between sexist male peer group dynamics and woman abuse might be useful resources.

Immigration status was noted as another important factor. Many of researchers who are currently studying the abuse of women in public housing and violence against other socially and economically disenfranchised women have discovered that men who are married to recent immigrants often threaten to find ways to send them back to war-torn countries, dictatorships, etc., if they do not comply with their wishes. Similarly, the ways in which abusive men use the "One strike and you're out" initiative, a federal policy to deal with crime in public housing needs to be considered. As Claire Renzetti (2001) correctly points out in a special issue of *Violence Against Women* on public housing, this policy may intensify an abused woman's vulnerability. For example, she may decide that it is best to comply with whatever her abuser demands so that he will not become disruptive and get her in trouble with neighbors and, subsequently, the public housing authority (PHA). Or she may not seek help to address the physical abuse because she fears the PHA could use it as grounds to evict her. The language used by the U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD) in outlining its "guiding principles" for the *One Strike Policy* does little to relieve this fear. It was suggested that Jody Raphael's work on the linkage between welfare reform and woman abuse be considered because coercion definitely comes into play there.

The linkage between adhering to the ideology of familial patriarchy and coercion and various types of woman abuse was noted. A measure of this ideology was constructed by the late Michael D. Smith and used by others including the discussant who suggested that this factor be added to the model because it would probably be a powerful determinant of men's coercive conduct. It was agreed that this is a good suggestion when the project gets to the stage of validating the measure of coercive control.

**Social Networks.** One discussant asked, "To what extent do you want to capture the role that isolation from social networks plays?" It was noted that this situation is seen with immigrant victims where their only social network is his family and where she is cut off by the immigration process from her own family members, or where cultural norms cut her off from the support of her family when she is ostracized for failing to leave her abuser.

It was suggested that “legal immigration status” be added as an example of legitimate power along with the example of gender roles [section b), 1., b., p. 14]. Filing immigration papers for a spouse could be added as an example of legitimate power [section b) 1., b., p. 14, “Legitimate power can also be used by the partner to the benefit of the other.”].

It also was suggested that the example of the agent threatening to withhold information about filing immigration papers unless the target complies, should be replaced with the following: “e.g., partner tells target that she will lose custody of the children if she calls the police because he is a citizen and she is not” [section b), 1., e., p. 15]. The example of control over immigration status is better moved up to “legitimate power” because it is not control over information but rather direct control over whether she gets immigration status based on a case he can file for her. The information issue is that she does not know that if she is abused he can file for her, but most abusers of immigrant victims do not know that she has a way she can receive legal status without his help. If the abusers do know, it is true that they would not tell her.

## V. Outstanding Issues:

Issue 1: Does the model make sense?

- a. Are each of the six elements necessary to the model?
- b. Are the six elements, taken together, adequate for the model?
- c. Are there other elements that are necessary to define coercive control in intimate partner violence?

Issue 2: Should a distinction be made in types and levels of coercion?

- a. Assuming the answer is “yes,” should it be made based on:
  1. The “social value” of the demand?
  2. The “social value” of the threatened consequence?
  3. The severity or “level” of aversion of the threatened consequence?
  4. The “intention” or motive of the agent to control the target? If so, is the intention required to be long-term or only in that instance?
  5. Other?

## Discussion

**Intention.** One discussant stated that the intention to coerce the victim need only be in “that instance.” To require “long-term intention” creates the difficulty of trying to determine what is sufficient to be defined as abuse, which seems like going down the path towards requiring a specific quantum of abuse. Different victims will react differently to different forms of coercion.

Issue 3: How should “justifiable” coercion be distinguished from coercive control that is associated with intimate partner violence?

- a. “Justifiable” coercion may involve a battered woman threatening to call the police (i.e., aversive consequence) if her partner does not stop hitting her (i.e., contingent on getting the “target” to do what the agent wants).
- b. The six elements of coercion are clearly present in this example:
  - 1. “Agent” (i.e., battered woman) makes a demand—stop hitting.
  - 2. “Agent” communicates contingent, meaningful threat—calling police.
  - 3. “Agent” is in a position to conduct surveillance to see if the “target” (i.e., abuser) complies.
  - 4. “Agent” may have “softened the target” by having communicating:
    - a) willingness—having called the police in the past;
    - b) ability—has access to phone; and
    - c) readiness—“agent” says she will call now.
  - 5. “Target” may comply or resist.
  - 6. Many might consider this example of “coercion” justifiable, or not label it as coercion at all.

## **Discussion**

***Justifiable Coercion.*** One discussant questioned how justifiable coercion would be determined and suggested that the term “persuasion” may want to be incorporated in point (6) to try to distinguish this from coercion.

Another discussant expressed the idea that “good” (justifiable) coercion may be thought of in terms of disciplining our children to learn socially acceptable behaviors and making life hell for colonizers to relinquish their rule (e.g., Gandhi’s nonviolent ‘Quit India’ movement). A particular coercive tactic/strategy thus, may be considered “bad” or “good” from the perspective taken (the colonizer’s or colonized’s). Perhaps individual-collective should be a dimension considered for the model of coercion. In terms of domestic violence also, this might work as in many families it is not the intimate partner only who is the agent, but a group of individuals such as in-laws.

**Issue 4:** How should “everyday or normative coercion” that is part of normal social discourse coercion be distinguished from coercive control that is associated with intimate partner violence?

- a. “Everyday coercion” may involve the demand by one partner that “we go to the movie right now” paired with the threat that “if you won’t go now, I won’t go with you then” (i.e., trivial example).
- b. A more serious, but still “normative” coercion may involve the explicit demand that “if you have an affair, I will leave you” (i.e., nontrivial example).

## **Discussion**

***Distinctions Between Levels of Coercion.*** Participants were invited to respond to the last two questions under “Outstanding Issues.” Specific issues to be addressed included how to make distinctions between levels of coercion—the “everyday” kind (“If you won’t go to this particular movie, I won’t go to any movie with you.”) versus the kind that is unacceptable and requires external intervention. Right now, the standard seems to be, “You know it (the bad kind) when you see it.” Is there a way to conceptualize the distinction more rigorously? One discussant thought perhaps thinking about persuasion versus coercion would help provide a distinction.

One discussant summarized the struggle with the conceptual distinctions between justifiable and everyday coercion. “Justified coercion” (a terrible phrase, but the kind referenced in the example about a judge “coercing” a batterer into batterer treatment, or a woman’s threat to call the police if her batterer does not desist) versus “everyday” coercion (“Go to this movie or I won’t go to any movie with you.”) versus really harmful but not illegal coercion (“If you do not cook dinner for me every night, I will leave you.”) versus the kind of coercion this project is interested in. The dictionary definition of coerce as “to force to act or think in a certain way by use of pressure, threats, or intimidation” is helpful, but it does not really allow us to eliminate any of the examples above. The suggestion to distinguish between persuasion and coercion creates the problem of how to do that? One way may be to make a judgment about the nature of the “consequence” for noncompliance. Not getting to go to a movie with your partner is not terrible. Being assaulted, having one’s children taken away, being isolated from family and friends, potentially losing the ability to live in this country—these are indeed horrific consequences. Different nonsequences have different meanings for different people.

## References

- Bronfenbrenner, U., *The Ecology of Human Development: Experiments by Nature and Design*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, MA, 1979.
- Cartwright, D., "Power: A Neglected Variable in Social Psychology," in D. Cartwright (ed.), *Studies in Social Power*, The Institute for Social Research, The University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, 1959.
- Colvin, M., F.T. Cullen, and T. Vander Ven, "Coercion, Social Support, and Crime: An Emerging Theoretical Consensus," *Criminology*, 2001, 40(1):19-42.
- Dutton, M. A., "Battered Women's Strategic Response to Violence: The Role of Context," in J. L. Edelsen and Z. C. Eisikovits (eds.), *Future Interventions with Battered Women and Their Families* (pp. 105-124), Sage Publications, Thousand Oaks, CA, 1996.
- Eisikovits, Z., and Z. Winstok, "Reconstructing Intimate Violence: The Structure and Content of Recollections of Violent Events," *Qualitative Health Research*, May 2002, 12(5):685.
- Eisikovits, Z., Z. Winstok, and R. Gelles, "Structure and Dynamics of Escalation From the Victim's Perspective," *Families in Society*, March/April 2002, 83(2), p. 142.
- Eisikovits, Z., "Overdrawing and Balancing Accounts," *Violence Against Women*, January 2001, 7(1):5.
- Eisikovits, R. A., "Gender Differences in Cross-Cultural Adaptation Styles of Immigrant Youths From the Former U.S.S.R. in Israel," *Youth & Society*, March 2000, 31(3):310.
- Eisikovits, Z., H. Goldblatt, and Z. Winstok, "Partner Accounts of Intimate Violence: Towards a Theoretical Model," *Families in Society*, November/December 1999, 80(6):606-619.
- Eisikovits, Z., "Talking Control Metaphors Used by Battered Women," *Violence Against Women*, August 1999, 5(8):845.
- French, J.R.P., and B.H.Raven, "The Bases of Social Power," in D. Cartwright (ed.), *Studies in Social Power*, Institute for Social Research, Ann Arbor, MI, 1959, pp. 150-167.
- Johnson, M.P., "Patriarchal Terrorism and Common Couple Violence: Two Forms of Violence Against Women," *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 1995, 57:283-294.
- Johnson, M.P., and K.J. Ferraro, "Research on Domestic Violence in the 1990s: Making Distinctions," *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 2000, 62:948-963.
- Kelley, H. H., E. Berscheid, A. Christensen, J. Harvey, T. Huston, G. Levinger, E. McClintock, L.A. Peplau, and D. Peterson, *Close Relationships*, W. H. Freeman, New York, 1983.

- Komter, A., "Hidden power in marriage," *Gender and Society*, 1989, 3(2):187-216.
- Molm, L.D., *Coercive Poser in Social Exchange*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom, 1997.
- Peled, E., and Z. Eisikovits, "Choice and Empowerment for Battered Women Who Stay: Toward a Constructivist Model," *Social Work*, January 2000, 45(1):9.
- Raven, B.H., "The Bases of Power: Origins and Recent Developments," *Journal of Social Psychology*, 1993, 49(4):227-251.
- Raven, B.H., R. Centers, A. and Rodriguez, "The Bases of Conjugal Power," in R.E. Cromwell and D.H. Olson (eds.), *Power in Families*, Wiley, New York, NY, 1975.
- Renzetti, C., "One Strike and You're Out: Implications of a Federal Crime Control Policy for Battered Women," *Violence Against Women*, 2001, 7(6):685.
- Stark, E., "Re-presenting Woman Battering: From Battered Woman Syndrome to Coercive Control," *Albany Law Review*, 1995, 58:973-1026.
- Swan, S. C., and D. L. Snow, "A Typology of Women's Use of Violence in Intimate Relationships," *Violence Against Women*, March 2002, 8(3):286.

## **Appendix D**

Materials from the Ethnographic Interviews

## **Appendix D**

### **MATERIALS FROM THE ETHNOGRAPHIC INTERVIEWS**

#### **GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY Consent to Participate in Research**

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Aileen Worrell, M.S.W.                   **Telephone:** 301-215-9100 ext 294

**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

*The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board office: 202-687-1506.*

**Introduction:** You are invited to consider participating in this research study. We will be evaluating aspects of power and control in relationships. This form will describe the purpose and nature of the study, its possible risks and benefits, other options available to you, and your rights as a participant in the study. Please take whatever time you need to discuss the study with anyone you care to talk with. The decision to participate or not is yours. If you decide to participate, please sign and date the last line of this form.

**Background and purpose of the study:** We will be developing an instrument to measure aspects of power and control in relationships particularly in relationships where one person has been violent towards another person. We are conducting this study to better understand the nature of violence in relationships. Prior studies on violent relationships have focused mostly on the level of violence in the relationship and not as much on the level of power and control in the relationship. By developing an instrument to measure aspects of power and control in relationships, we hope to learn about the differences in violent couples beyond the level of violence alone.

**Total number of people:** A total of about 60 people will take part in this phase of the study.

**General plan of the study:** We will conduct interviews with individuals over 18 years of age who are in relationships in which at least one incident of violence has occurred. All interviews will be conducted on a one-on-one basis. The interviews will take approximately one hour and will be held in a location that is convenient for you and ensures privacy. The interviews will be tape-recorded and we will take notes of the interview. You will be asked such questions as “were there times in your relationship when you felt controlled by your partner?” Following the interview, we will spend a few minutes talking about what the interview was like for you. If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have after the interview, we will give you information about resources where you can talk with someone.

**Length of the study for each subject:** We expect that you will be in the study for one hour.

**Possible benefits of participating in the study:** There are no direct benefits to you for participating in this study. However, the information you share with us during the study will help to develop specific questions

for a questionnaire to measure power and control in violent relationships. You may also benefit from having an opportunity to talk about these issues in your own relationship.

**Possible risks of participating in the study:** You may feel uncomfortable or become upset when you talk about your experiences. However, you may find that talking with the interviewer about your experiences feels supportive or is helpful to you in some way, although participation in this project is not considered counseling of any other type of therapeutic service.

**Who can participate in the study:** Anyone over 18 years of age who is in a relationship in which at least one incident of violence has occurred within the last 12 months may participate in the study.

**Confidentiality of the data collected during the study:** Your responses to the interview questions will remain confidential and anonymous. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded on the questionnaire, in the notes, or on the tape recorder. We will code your interview with a number. The research team will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The interview and tape recordings will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. Only the research team will have access to the interview and tape recordings. No names or identifying details will be used in any publication or other documents resulting from this study.

We have identified two possible risks to the confidentiality of the data collected during the study. First, if you tell us about a child who is being abused or about your intent to hurt someone, we may be required by law to report that information to authorities. Second, if an abusive partner finds out about your participation in the study, you could be at increased risk of violence or other forms of retaliation.

**Costs to you for participating:** There are no costs to you for participating in this study.

**Payments to you for participating:** You will be paid \$20 for your time for participating in this study.

**Your rights as a participant in the study:** Participation in this study is entirely voluntary. You have the right to leave the study at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. Leaving the study will not result in any penalty or loss of benefits to which you are entitled. Should you decide to leave the study, just tell the interviewer that you no longer wish to participate.

**Questions:** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Dr. Mary Ann Dutton at 202-687-1997. If you have any questions about your rights as a research subject, call the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board office at 202-687-1506.

**Investigator's statement:** I have fully explained this study to the subject. I have discussed the procedures, the possible risks and benefits, the standard and research aspects of the study, and have answered all of the questions that the subject and the subject's family members have asked.

Signature of investigator \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

**Subject's consent**

I have read the information provided in this Informed Consent Form or it was read to me by the investigator. All my questions were answered to my satisfaction. I voluntarily agree to participate in this study. I also agree to allow my comments in the interview to be tape-recorded.

[Upon signing, you will receive a copy of this form. The original will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study.]

Your signature \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Signature of witness \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_



## INDIVIDUAL INTERVIEWS FOR MCC PROJECT

### SECTION 1: BACKGROUND INFORMATION

1. What is your age? \_\_\_\_\_

2. What is your gender? \_\_\_\_\_

3. What is your ethnicity? 3a. \_\_\_\_\_ African American/Black

3b. \_\_\_\_\_ Anglo

3c. \_\_\_\_\_ Latina/Latino

*Check all that apply* 3d. \_\_\_\_\_ Asian American or Pacific Islander

3e. \_\_\_\_\_ American Indian

3f. \_\_\_\_\_ Other

4. How many children do you have? \_\_\_\_\_

5. How many of your children live with you? \_\_\_\_\_

6. What is your job situation? 6a. \_\_\_\_\_ Working full-time

6b. \_\_\_\_\_ Working part-time

6c. \_\_\_\_\_ In the military

6d. \_\_\_\_\_ Unemployed

*Check all that apply* 6e. \_\_\_\_\_ Retired and not working

6f. \_\_\_\_\_ A student

6g. \_\_\_\_\_ A homemaker

6h. \_\_\_\_\_ Other

7. What type of work do you usually do, if you have a job or have had one recently?

---

8. Are you receiving federal or state assistance?

*Check one* \_\_\_\_\_ Yes

\_\_\_\_\_ No

9. What is the highest level of school you have completed?

9a. \_\_\_\_\_ Less than 8th grade

9b. \_\_\_\_\_ 9th grade

9c. \_\_\_\_\_ 10th grade

9d. \_\_\_\_\_ 11th grade

9e. \_\_\_\_\_ 12th grade

9f. \_\_\_\_\_ Trade School

9g. \_\_\_\_\_ Some college (or in college)

9h. \_\_\_\_\_ 2-year Associates Degree

9i. \_\_\_\_\_ 4-year college degree (BA/BS)

9j. \_\_\_\_\_ Attended graduate school

**10. What is your relationship with the partner you are here about?**

*Check one*

- 10a. \_\_\_\_\_ Married  
10b. \_\_\_\_\_ Married but separated  
10c. \_\_\_\_\_ Divorced  
10d. \_\_\_\_\_ Boyfriend  
10e. \_\_\_\_\_ Ex-boyfriend  
10f. \_\_\_\_\_ Dating, but not boyfriend  
10g. \_\_\_\_\_ Other

**11. What is your current living arrangement with the partner you are here about?**

*Check one*

- 11a. \_\_\_\_\_ Living together  
11b. \_\_\_\_\_ Staying together off and on  
11c. \_\_\_\_\_ Not living together

If not living together, have you EVER lived together? \_\_\_\_\_ Yes \_\_\_\_\_ No

**12. For how long were you, or have you been, involved with this person?**

\_\_\_\_\_ # of years \_\_\_\_\_ # of months



*The next set of questions is about the background of the partner you are here about today.*

**13. What is his/her first name?** \_\_\_\_\_

**14. What is his/her gender?** \_\_\_\_\_

**15. What is his/her age?** \_\_\_\_\_

**16. What is his/her ethnicity** *Check all that apply*

16a. \_\_\_\_\_ African American/Black  
16b. \_\_\_\_\_ Anglo  
16c. \_\_\_\_\_ Latino/Latina  
16d. \_\_\_\_\_ Asian American or Pacific Islander  
16e. \_\_\_\_\_ American Indian  
16f. \_\_\_\_\_ Other

## **SECTION 2: CONTROL BY PARTNER**

### **Opening**

1. Would you please describe generally your relationship with your partner?

*PROBE for both positive and negative aspects of the relationship:*

- 1a. Would you describe generally those parts of your relationship that are working well or parts of your partner that are the most positive?
- 1b. Would you describe generally those parts of your relationship that aren't working so well or parts of your partner that are a problem for you?

### **Nature of Demand, Request, or Expectation**

2. We would like to ask you about times in your relationship when you felt controlled by your partner.

*PROBE FOR examples in the following categories. (Continue to add to list as examples are obtained in each category.)*

- a. Personal activities (e.g., coming and going, eating, sleeping, attire)
  - b. Social life, contact with friends and family
  - c. Household tasks or chores (other than child care)
  - d. Employment-related, financial, transportation, property
  - e. Children/parenting
  - f. Intimate/romance
  - g. Safety/violence

2b. Would you describe situations when your partner kept you from doing something you did want to do. Specifically, what did your partner keep you from doing?	Was this a demand, request, or expectation?		How much did you want to do what it was your partner kept you from doing?			
	Demand	Expectation	Moderately	A little bit	Quite a bit	A lot

### Coercive Tactics/Actual Consequences

Now we want to talk with you about how your partner gets you or tries to get you to do what s/he wants you to do.

*Probe for the following types of negative consequences:*

- a. Physical harm to you
- b. Emotional harm to you
- c. Threats or risks to children
- d. Threats or risks to other family members or friends`
- e. Threats or risks to property or financial security
- f. Legal threats or risks

3. Describe any times when you believed that your partner would do something to hurt you or make things worse off for you in some way if you didn't do what s/he wanted you to do.	How did your partner let you know that s/he would do these things if you didn't do what s/he wanted? For example, did s/he tell you directly?	How bad would it be if your partner actually did what s/he threatened to do?	Has your partner actually carried out the threat? (Yes/No)	How can you tell when or if your partner is going to actually carry out the threat?
			Extremely bad	
			Very bad	
			Moderately bad	
			A little bad	
			Not at all bad	
			It was a "rule."	
			"Just knew"	
			Nonverbal threat	
			Explicit verbal threat	

4. How are the times you just told me about different from other times when your partner persuaded you or you came to agree that what s/he wanted you to do was something that you wanted to do.

5. How are the times you just told me about different from the other times when you believe your partner has the right to demand, request, or expect you to do something that you don't want to do (or not do things you want to do).
  
  
  
  
  
6. How are the times you just told me about different from the other times when your partner physically forced you to do something that you didn't want to do (or not do things you wanted to do).

### **Breadth of Control**

7. How much of the time or in how many areas of your life did/do you feel that you were or are being controlled by your partner?

*PROBE for circumscribed situations versus overall sense of being constrained.*

8. Would you say that your partner controls you (choose one):
  - a. in almost all areas of your life or most of the time.
  - b. in many, but not all, areas of your life or much of the time.
  - c. in only a few areas of your life or a little bit of the time.
  - d. in no, almost no, areas of your life or none or almost none of the time.

## Prior Experiences with Control

9. Has anyone else other than your partner been involved in making or carrying out threats if you didn't do what s/he expected?

## Setting the Stage for Coercion

Next we want to talk to you about what, if anything, makes you take your partner seriously—that is, what lets you know that he/she is willing, able, and ready to carry out the threat.

10. Sometimes people make threats even though they really would not carry them out. In the past, when your partner has made threats, generally did you believe s/he was actually willing to carry them out? Yes No
11. If yes to 10, what made you believe or know your partner was WILLING to do the things s/he threatened to do if you didn't do what s/he wanted? (*Generate list.*)
12. If yes to 10, were any of the following reasons why you believed your partner was willing to do what s/he threatened to do? (Circle *Yes or No* for each.)
- |   |     |    |
|---|-----|----|
| a. My partner has actually done the thing s/he threatened to do before.     | Yes | No |
| b. My partner said s/he would do it.  | Yes | No |
| c. My partner acted like (although didn't say) that s/he would do it.       | Yes | No |
| d. Because of the circumstances or situation, I knew that s/he would do it. | Yes | No |
| e. Other reasons  | Yes | No |

13. Sometimes people who make threats aren't actually able to carry them out. At the time, did you think that your partner was not willing but able to carry out the threats s/he made to you?      Yes      No
14. If yes to 13, what made you believe or know that your partner generally had the ability or skill to carry out the threats s/he made to you in the past? (*Generate list.*)
15. If yes to 13, were any of the following reasons why you thought your partner was able to carry out the threats s/he made to you? (*Circle Yes or No to each one.*)
- |  |     |    |
|--|-----|----|
| a. My partner could keep something from me to carry out the threat.                                      | Yes | No |
| b. My partner could use special skills to carry out the threat.  | Yes | No |
| c. My partner could use or withhold information as a way of carrying out the threat.                     | Yes | No |
| d. My partner has the right or the authority to carry out the threat.                                    | Yes | No |
| e. My partner doesn't love me (or my children, if relevant) as much as I love her/him (or the children). | Yes | No |

### **Surveillance**

16. How would or could your partner know whether or not you were doing what s/he wanted? (*Generate list.*)

### **Compliance/Resistance**

17. What would happen if you DID do what your partner wanted you to do (i.e., any external consequences)?
18. Are there times when you go along with what your partner wants you to do?

19. When you go along with what your partner wants you to do—even though you don’t want to—because of what you think will happen if you don’t, how does this leave you feeling?
20. When you don’t go along with what your partner wants you to do—even though you think something bad might happen if you don’t, how do you avoid doing it? (Generate list.)

<b>21. Overall, have you ever done the following to avoid doing what your partner wanted you to do:</b>	<b>Yes/No</b>	<b>How well has it (for each strategy) worked to avoid doing what your partner wanted?</b>	<b>What happened when you did (for each strategy)?</b>
Refuse or just tell him/her that you’re not going to do it.			
Say “yes,” or tell him/her that you did it, but you didn’t or undo it later.			
Get help from someone else - like family or friends.			
Get help from the authorities.			
Physically fight back.			
Try to talk him/her out of it or get him/her to change his/her mind.			
Other:			

22. What vulnerabilities or weaknesses have or does your partner take advantage of in order to get you to do things that you don't want to do (or not do things that you want to do)?

*Probe for the following:*

- a. Your physical limitations, disabilities, illnesses,
- b. Your emotional problems
- c. Your financial problems or lack of money
- d. Your family responsibilities
- e. Your legal problems
- f. Prior history of your being hurt by someone else.

### SECTION 3: CONTROL OF PARTNER

**Introduction:** Now we would like to ask you about ways that you get your partner to do things s/he doesn't want to do.

#### Nature of Demand, Request, or Expectation

1. We would like to ask you about times in your relationship when you might try to control your partner.

*PROBE FOR examples in the following categories. (Continue to add to list as examples are obtained in each category.)*

- a. Personal activities (e.g., coming and going, eating, sleeping, attire)
- b. Social life, contact with friends and family
- c. Household tasks or chores (other than child care)
- d. Employment-related, financial, transportation, property
- e. Children/parenting
- f. Intimate/romance
- g. Safety/violence

1a. Would you describe situations when you demanded, requested or expected that your partner do something s/he did not want to do. Specifically, what did you try to get your partner to do?	Was this a demand, request or expectation?			How much did your partner not want to do what it was you wanted him/her to do?				
	Demand	Request	Expectation	Not at all	A little bit	Moderately	Quite a bit	A lot

	Was this a demand, request, or expectation?	How much did your partner want to do what it was you kept him/her from doing?							
		A lot	Quite a bit	Moderately	A little bit	Not at all			
	Demand	Expectation	Request						
<b>1b. Would you describe situations when you kept your partner from doing something that s/he wanted to do. Specifically, what did you keep your partner from doing?</b>									

### Coercive Tactics/Actual Consequences

Now we want to talk with you about how you get your partner to do something you want him/her to do.

*Probe for the following types of negative consequences:*

- a. Physical harm to her/him
- b. Emotional harm to her/him
- c. Threats or risks to children
- d. Threats or risks to other family members or friends
- e. Threats or risks to property or financial security
- f. Legal threats or risks

3. How are the times you just told me about different from other times when you persuaded your partner or s/he came to agree that what you wanted her/him to do was something that s/he wanted to do.

4. How are the times you just told me about different from other times when your partner believed you had the right to demand, request, or expect s/he do something that s/he didn't want to do (or not do things s/he wanted to do).
  
  
  
  
  
5. How are the times you just told me about different from other times when you physically forced your partner to do something that s/he didn't want to do (or not do things s/he wanted to do).

### **Breadth of Control**

6. How much of the time or in how many areas of your partner's life did/do you feel that you are controlling your partner?

*PROBE for circumscribed situations versus overall sense of being constrained.*

7. Would you say that you control your partner (choose one):
  - a. in almost all areas of his/her life or most of the time.
  - b. in many, but not all, areas of his/her life or much of the time.
  - c. in only a few areas of his/her life or a little bit of the time.
  - d. in no, almost no, areas of his/her life or none or almost none of the time.

## Prior Experiences with Control

8. Besides you, has anyone else been involved in making or carrying out threats if your partner didn't do what you expected?

## Setting the Stage for Coercion

Next we want to talk to you about what, if anything, makes your partner take you seriously—that is, what lets your partner know that you are willing, able, and ready to carry out the threat.

9. Sometimes people make threats even though they really wouldn't carry them out. In the past, when you made threats, generally do you think your partner believed that you were actually willing to carry them out? Yes No
10. If yes to 9, what made your partner believe or know that you were WILLING to do the things you threatened to do if s/he didn't do what you wanted? (*Generate list.*)
11. If yes to 9, were any of the following reasons why your partner believed you were willing to do what you threatened to do? (*Circle Yes or No for each.*)
- |   |     |    |
|---|-----|----|
| a. You have actually done the thing you threatened to do before.                | Yes | No |
| b. You said you would do it.  | Yes | No |
| c. You acted like (although didn't say) that you would do it.                   | Yes | No |
| d. Because of the circumstances or situation, he/she knew that you would do it. | Yes | No |
| e. Other reasons  | Yes | No |
12. Sometimes people who make threats aren't actually able to carry them out. At the time, did your partner think that you were not willing but able to carry out the threats you made? Yes No

13. If yes to 12, what made your partner believe or know you were ABLE to do the things you threatened to do if he/she doesn't do what you wanted? (*Generate list.*)
14. If yes to 12, were any of the following reasons why your partner thought you were able to carry out the threats you made to him/her? (*Circle Yes or No for each.*)
- |   |     |    |
|---|-----|----|
| a. You could keep something from your partner to carry out the threat.  | Yes | No |
| b. You could use special skills to carry out the threat.  | Yes | No |
| c. You could use or withhold information as a way of carrying out the threat.                                 | Yes | No |
| d. You have the right or the authority to carry out the threat.   | Yes | No |
| e. You don't love your partner (or your children, if relevant) as much as he/she loves you (or the children). | Yes | No |

### **Surveillance**

15. How would or could you know whether or not your partner was doing what you wanted? (*Generate list.*)

### **Compliance/Resistance**

16. What would happen if your partner DID do what you wanted him/her to do (i.e., any external consequences)?
17. Are there times when your partner goes along with what you want him/her to do?
18. When your partner goes along with what you want him/her to do—even though he/she doesn't want to—because of what he/she thinks will happen otherwise, how does this leave him/her feeling?

19. When your partner doesn't go along with what you want him/her to do—even though he/she thinks something bad might happen if he/she doesn't, how does he/she avoid doing it? (*Generate list.*)

<b>20. Overall, has your partner ever done the following to avoid doing what you wanted him/her to do:</b>	<b>Yes/No</b>	<b>How well has it (for each strategy) worked to avoid doing what you wanted?</b>	<b>What happened when your partner did (for each strategy)?</b>
Refuse or just tell you that s/he is not going to do it.			
Say "yes," or tell you that s/he did it, but didn't or undo it later.			
Get help from someone else - like family or friends.			
Get help from the authorities.			
Physically fight back.			
Tried to talk you out of it or get you to change your mind.			
Other:			

21. What vulnerabilities or weaknesses do you take advantage of in order to get your partner to do things that he/she doesn't want to do (or not do things that s/he wants to do)?

*Probe for the following:*

- a. Your partner's physical limitations, disabilities, illnesses
- b. Your partner's emotional problems
- c. Your partner's financial problems or lack of money
- d. Your partner's family responsibilities
- e. Your partner's legal problems
- f. Prior history of your partner being hurt by someone else

## SECTION 4: VIOLENCE AND ABUSE

 In the next section, we will be asking a series of questions about the violence and abuse you have experienced from the partner you are here about today.

<b>Question: In the last year....</b>	<b>(Circle One)</b>	
1. He/she grabbed me.	Yes	No
2. He/she pushed or shoved me.	Yes	No
3. He/she threw something at me that could hurt.	Yes	No
4. He/she slapped me.	Yes	No
5. He/she twisted my arm or hair.	Yes	No
6. He/she kicked me.	Yes	No
7. He/she punched or hit me with something that could hurt.	Yes	No
8. He/she slammed me against a wall.	Yes	No
9. He/she choked or strangled me.	Yes	No
10. He/she burned or scalded me on purpose.	Yes	No
11. He/she beat me up.	Yes	No
12. He/she used or threatened to use a knife or gun.	Yes	No
13. He/she forced me to have sex.	Yes	No
14. He/she used threats to make me have sex.	Yes	No
15. He/she refused to wear a condom during sex.	Yes	No
16. I had sex with him/her because I was afraid of what he/she would do if I didn't.	Yes	No

 The next few questions are about whether you have done any of the following things to your partner. Please tell me whether you...

	<b>(Circle One)</b>	
17. Grabbed him/her?	Yes	No
18. Pushed or shoved him/her?	Yes	No
19. Thrown something at him/her that could hurt?	Yes	No
20. Slapped him/her?	Yes	No
21. Twisted his/her arm or hair?	Yes	No
22. Kicked him/her?	Yes	No
23. Punched or hit him/her with something that could hurt?	Yes	No
24. Slammed him/her against a wall?	Yes	No
25. Choked or strangled him/her?	Yes	No
26. Burned or scalded him/her on purpose?	Yes	No
27. Beat him/her up?	Yes	No
28. Used or threatened to use a knife or gun on him/her?	Yes	No

**INTERVIEWER:**

- ☛ If the participant says “yes” to any of the items from 17-28 above, ask #29-42.
- ☛ If the participant says “no” to all of the items from 17-28 above, skip to #43 on page 15.

*Question: “As far as you know, have any of the acts you just mentioned resulted in...”*

(Circle One)

29.	His/her having a sprain, bruise, or small cut [because of your violence toward him/her]?	Yes	No
30.	His/her passing out [from your violence against him/her]?	Yes	No
31.	His/her having a broken bone [because of your violence toward him/her]?	Yes	No
32.	His/her going to a doctor [because of your violence toward him/her]?	Yes	No
33.	His/her needing to see a doctor [because of your violence], but not seeing one?	Yes	No

34. *Question: “Can you describe what led you to do these things to your partner?”*

**INTERVIEWER:** Write down his/her answer word for word.

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

**INTERVIEWER:** The following two percentages should add up to 100 percent.

*Question: “When you have done these things to him/her, what percent of the time—from 0 to 100 percent, or somewhere in between...”*

35. \_\_\_\_\_ ...were you the first one to use physical violence?”
36. \_\_\_\_\_ ...were you physically violent during or a short time after your partner was violent with you?”

**INTERVIEWER:** If the participant already mentioned the reason on page 14, #34, then circle “yes.” Ask only those items not mentioned on page 14, #34.

**Question:** *“You may have done these things to your partner for many different reasons. I am going to ask you about some of those reasons. Please tell me which of the following reasons explain why you did these things to him/her, by answering yes or no.”*

			(Circle One)	
37.	You wanted to protect yourself from him/her hurting you at the time?		Yes	No
38.	You wanted to keep him/her from hurting you in the future?		Yes	No
39.	You were trying to start the fight to get it over with because you knew it was coming?		Yes	No
40.	You wanted to hurt him/her for no reason but just to hurt him/her?		Yes	No
41.	You wanted to hurt him/her because he/she had hurt you before?		Yes	No
42.	You just wanted to scare him/her, not to hurt him/her?		Yes	No

**Question:** *“In the last year....*

			(Circle One)	
43.	You felt physical pain that still hurt the next day because of his/her abuse.		Yes	No
44.	You had a sprain, bruise, or small cut because of his/her abuse.		Yes	No
45.	You passed out from being hit on the head by him/her.		Yes	No
46.	You had a broken bone from his/her abuse.		Yes	No
47.	You went to a doctor because of his/her abuse.		Yes	No
48.	You needed to see a doctor because of his/her abuse, but didn't.		Yes	No
49.	He/she followed or spied on you.		Yes	No
50.	He/she kept you awake so that you could not get enough sleep.		Yes	No
51.	He/she sent or left you unwanted letters or note.		Yes	No
52.	He/she made unwanted phone calls to you.		Yes	No
53.	He/she made threats if you looked for (or got) a job or went to school.		Yes	No
54.	He/she stood outside your home, school or work place.		Yes	No
55.	He/she controlled you money or transportation so that it was difficult to work or go places.		Yes	No
56.	He/she showed up at places you were even though he had no business being there.		Yes	No
57.	He/she destroyed your property.		Yes	No
58.	He/she hurt or killed your pet or pets.		Yes	No

<i><b>Question: "In the last year....</b></i>		<b>(Circle One)</b>	
59.	He/she threatened to report you to child protective services, welfare, the police, or other authorities.	Yes	No
60.	He/she withheld or threatened to withhold filing of your immigration papers.	Yes	No
61.	He/she withheld or threatened to withhold medical attention or care for you.	Yes	No
62.	He/she withheld or threatened to withhold medical insurance for you.	Yes	No

## **SECTION 5: CONCLUSION**

1. Is there anything else that you would like us to know about your relationship before we end?
  2. Are there types of outside help that might have helped you deal with the issues that we have been discussing?
  3. Were there any questions we should have asked to understand coercion or control in your relationship?
  4. What was it like for you to talk with me about these issues today?

**PROVIDE CONTACT INFORMATION FOR APPROPRIATE STAFF MEMBER AT EACH SETTING FOR ALL PARTICIPANTS IF PARTICIPANT NEEDS/WANTS TO DISCUSS THESE ISSUES FURTHER.**

Thank you very much for taking the time to talk to me today. The information you have given us will allow us to help others in the future. As you know, we will be giving you \$20 for your time today.



## **Summary of Observations For Ethnographic Interviews with Individuals**

Following are some of the themes that evolved during the ethnographic interviews. The themes are categorized by the constructs being assessed in the coercive control measure.

### **1. Communication of Demand, Request, or Expectation**

- Most of the women who were IPV victims reported that they felt controlled in almost all areas of their lives by their partners and felt they had no control at all over their partners.
- In explaining why it was okay for him to tell his partner how to dress, a batterer stated: “She’s my woman so I can tell her how to dress; that’s not controlling.”
- One batterer said that he used reverse psychology to control his partner. He knew what buttons to press and would say things to have her do what he wanted. He knew that she liked to take care of people and he played the role of someone who needed care. He also believed that his wife’s nagging was her way of controlling him.
- In terms of the domains in which they felt controlled, interviewees reported:
  - “I never felt like I had my own life. I was very isolated and lost contact with friends. He was against birth control; I was always watching the children (6). I couldn’t do what I wanted to do on my own. I felt he controlled everything.”
  - “He didn’t want me to work. He used my family against me; he would call them and say I did things that I had not done and they would believe him.”
  - “When I tried to get a protection order against him, his supervisor (the chief of police) came to talk to me and told me that I needed to be more supportive and learn to take it when he needed to vent.”
  - “I felt there was overall control; friends, family, groceries (he went with me to the store). He would take something off me if he did not like what I was wearing.”
  - “I couldn’t get a job, couldn’t go to the store, couldn’t drive. The only place I was allowed to go was my mother’s house. I couldn’t go to my friend’s house unless she was with me. She bought all my clothes and gave me money.”

## **2. Communication of the Threat of a Meaningful Negative Consequence**

- The threat to leave the relationship was a statement common in nearly all of the interviews. The threat to leave the relationship was expressed by both the batterer and the partner of the batterer. In two situations, the batterers knew that threatening to leave the relationship would cause their partner to give in or help get their way.
- Threatening to leave the relationship was also common in interviews with gay men. The central coercive dynamic was: “You love me more than I love you so I can make you do things. If you don’t do what I say, I’ll end the relationship.”
- For most of the female IPV victims, the central coercive dynamic was the threat of physical harm.
- One woman in a lesbian relationship was threatened with disfigurement if she did not do what her partner wanted and, on one occasion, her partner actually cut the woman’s face.
- One woman was told by her abuser that he would beat up her parents. She did not believe him and he actually did beat up her parents.
- One batterer reported that his partner would always use his child as a means of controlling his behavior. She would threaten to leave the state or file kidnapping charges if bills were not paid or money was needed. Another batterer stated that his wife would threaten to call child protective services and go to court to get child support if he did not start acting right.
- Another batterer reported threatening his partner with drug treatment: “I’ll put you in detox if you don’t clean up [get off drugs].”
- Other common threats included:
  - threatening to take away the children or not pay child support if she leaves; and
  - threatening not to give them money or pay the bills;

## **3. Perceived Threat of Coercion**

- Once violence had occurred in the relationship, all of the women interviewed believed their partners were willing to carry out a threat of physical harm again because they had done so (often repeatedly) in the past.
- Two women reported feeling controlled in a few areas of their lives by their partner but one of these women also felt she controlled her partner in a few

areas. These two women were involved in relationships in which they and their partners sold and used drugs. On the occasions when they had the drugs and the money and their partners did not, they felt they could get their partners to do what they wanted in exchange for drugs.

- One batterer had little insight that what he was doing was coercive: “She was dancing with another guy so I pulled her out of the club by her hair because she’s my woman.”

#### **4. Compliance/Resistance as Coercive Outcome**

- In terms of compliance, one gay man reported that: “My partner would start crying and then I would give in and do what he wanted me to do.”
- Another gay man reported: “I do what he says to avoid public embarrassment (including public outing).”

#### **5. Other Effects of the Coercive Process**

#### **6. Agent’s Surveillance**

- “I used to call a lot to check up on her because I loved her.”
- “He would follow me, watch me with binoculars, and call me constantly. He also would show up at work to check up on me to see what time I arrived, took lunch breaks, or left work.”
- “He would question me a lot.”
- “He answered all phone calls and would not let me talk to my friends.”
- Fellow co-workers (police officers) of one batterer would let him know when they say one victim in town.

#### **7. Setting the Stage for Coercion**

- To set the stage for coercion, interviewees noted the following coercive tactics being used:
  - telling the women that they will have nothing in terms of money or possessions if they leave;
  - telling the women that “good women” or “good mothers” keep a clean house, do not work outside the home, or take care of themselves; and

- accusing the women of seeing other men or doing things they were not doing.

## **8. Social Ecology Surrounding Coercion**

- The only time some of the women felt their partner had a “right” to tell them what to do was when their partner was the only one working and bringing in money to pay bills.
- One gay man thought that his partner could tell him what to do because they lived in his partner’s space.
- In two interviews, the batterers felt that the system overly protected the women (and that the system was targeted against men).

## **9. Target’s Increased Vulnerability**

- In response to vulnerabilities of their partner - two batterers said that they could take advantage of their partners because they knew their partners loved them more and that they could get away with doing things.
- Several women who had been sexually abused by a family member reported that their partners would use the knowledge against her in an argument or in demeaning remarks.

## **10. Motivation, Intention, Personal Gain**

- Two batterers stated that they had a right to demand because they were right. In response to question 4 (partner believes you had the right to demand): “I tell her because I believe I am right or in the right. It’s the way I was, I was in control and I was right.”
- After describing incidences of violence, control, and coercion one batterer stated that “these questions are for men who force their partners to do stuff. I do normal relationship stuff, I don’t force her.”

## **Appendix E**

Materials from the Interviews with Professionals

## Appendix E

### MATERIALS FROM THE INTERVIEWS WITH PROFESSIONALS

#### GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY/COSMOS CORPORATION Consent to Participate in Research

##### Interviews with Professionals

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Aileen Worrell, M.S.W.                   **Telephone:** 301-215-9100 x294

**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board Office: 202-687-1506.

**Purpose.** The purpose of the study is to develop and validate a measure of coercive control for use in the measurement of intimate partner violence.

**Procedures.** We plan to conduct interviews with individuals who work with intimate partner violence in their professional roles. All interviews will be conducted on a one-on-one basis. The interviews will take approximately one hour and will be held in a location that is convenient for the participant and that ensures privacy. The researcher will take notes of the interview. You will be asked such questions as "from your experience with victims or perpetrators of intimate partner violence, can you describe interactions you have heard about that appeared to be coercive?"

**Risks.** You may feel uncomfortable or become upset when you talk about some aspects of your work experiences. Your participation is completely voluntary. If you choose to participate, you may withdraw your consent at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. If you choose to discontinue your participation in this study, there will be no penalty.

**Benefits.** There are no direct benefits to you. However, the information obtained during this study will help to develop specific questions for an instrument to measure coercive control.

**Compensation.** You will be paid \$20 for participating in this study.

**Confidentiality.** Your responses to the interview questions will be confidential. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded in the notes. The researcher will code

your interview with a number. The researcher will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The interview notes will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. No names or identifying details will be used in any publications or other documents resulting from this research. All data collected from this study will be presented as a group, so that no one can identify any one individual within the study.

**Questions.** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Aileen Worrell at 301-215-9100 ext 294. If you have any questions about your rights as a participant in a research study, please contact the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board at 202-687-1506.

**Certification.** I have read and I understand this Informed Consent document. I understand the purpose of the research project and all my questions have been answered satisfactorily. I understand that I may withdraw my participation at any time and that I can refuse to answer any questions. I understand that my name and any personally identifiable information will be kept confidential and will not be used in publications or in any other document. I have received a copy of this signed Informed Consent.

**Signatures:**

Participant Name: \_\_\_\_\_

Signature: \_\_\_\_\_

Date: \_\_\_\_\_

Researcher Name: \_\_\_\_\_

Signature: \_\_\_\_\_

Date: \_\_\_\_\_



## **PROFESSIONAL INTERVIEW FOR MCC PROJECT**

### **General Framework**

1. Tell us a little about the work that you do.
  
  
  
  
  
  
2. Tell us about stories you've heard about your clients being controlled by or controlling their partners. By controlled, we mean an individual can't do what they want or they are doing things they don't want to do because of threats if they didn't comply.
  
  
  
  
  
  
3. Can you give some examples?

### **Extent of Influence**

4. Can you give us examples of the domains in which your clients are most commonly controlled by or control their partners?

#### **PROBE FOR:**

- Personal activities
- Social life
- Household
- Work related/economic/money
- Children/parenting
- Intimate/romance
- Safety/violence

5. Can you distinguish between the kinds of relationships where one person controls most of the activities of his/her partner vs. relationships where control occurs but is more limited?

### **Influence Tactics/Actual Consequences**

6. Can you give some examples of how your clients or their partners get the other to do things they don't want to do by threatening them with negative consequences if they don't comply?

### **Power Bases**

7. What are the kinds of things that make your clients or their partners take the other's demands seriously? That is, what lets them know that the other is willing and able to carry out a threat?

### **Surveillance**

8. What would be some of the ways that your clients or their partners would know that the other was complying with their demands?

### **Compliance/Resistance**

9. Can you give examples of times when your clients or their partners came to think that what the other was demanding with a threat was actually the right thing to do?

### **Control vs. Coercion**

10. Can you give some examples of where your clients or their partners were forced to do things when they absolutely had NO choice?



## **Summary of Observations For Interviews with Professionals**

Following are some of the themes that evolved during the interviews with professionals who work with victims and batterers. The themes are categorized by the constructs being assessed in the coercive control measure.

### **1. Communication of Demand, Request, or Expectation**

- Most of the clients we see are controlled in all domains. There is usually a systematic pattern of control. The men control all the resources and the women often do not work outside the home because they are told that only bad mothers go to work.
- There is a range of control levels in the clients I see. In some, the men have complete control. In others, for example, a man could give the women free reign with money but be extremely jealous and controlling of her social and familial relationships.
- It has been my experience that a controlling person will try to control in as many areas as he can get away with. For example, if she is a stay-at-home mother, he can get away with more control than if she works outside the home.
- Specific demands, requests, or expectations included:
  - She is only allowed to use the telephone when he is there to give his permission.
  - She has to obey and adhere to his standards of cleanliness in housekeeping. When he doesn't think the kitchen floor is clean enough, she has to get down on her hands and knees and lick it clean with her tongue.
  - She cannot socialize (talk with) certain people at social gatherings.
  - At parties, she is not allowed to speak with someone that he does not approve of. If she does so, he will tap his wrist indicating she will be in handcuffs when they get home and will get a beating. (He is a police officer).
  - He comes home drunk and demands sex. She refuses. He grabs her by both ears and slams her head repeatedly against the rail of their bed. She suffers a concussion and damage to bones in her neck.

- He demands her paycheck. She says no. He is driving and steps on the gas and says he will kill them both and the kids in the back seat. She hands over her paycheck.
- She is told she will undergo artificial insemination. She refused and her husband beat her with a bullwhip until she consented.

## **2. Communication of the Threat of a Meaningful Negative Consequence**

- Threats of physical force are used against her (i.e., beat her up or kill her), against the children (e.g., hurt or kill the children, or take them away), and against family members if she does not do what he wants.
- Batterers also will threaten to kill women if they leave the relationship or tell them they will have nothing if they leave and that he will not pay child support.
- An abuser will threaten to prove she is a bad mother and take the children away and she stays with him.
- Women are often threatened with guns in rural communities and a lot of the women have had guns pointed at them.
- A lot of the control tactics used by these men are comparable to those used on prisoners of war.
- Once violence has occurred in the relationship, the threat is always there that it will be used again whether the batterer actually says so or not. The violence hangs over the relationship. The violence is often random and so you come to believe that it is possible every time. Once violence is used, the batterer just has to say “I will get you or beat you up if you don’t do whatever I want.”

## **3. Perceived Threat of Coercion**

- Many women say they always listened for the tone of his voice.
- Women say that something just clicks inside when they know he will follow through or is about to act. They see it in their partner’s eyes and body language, especially after so many times.
- Women who are battered get tunnel vision – this is the only choice. Another woman’s husband threatened to shoot their newborn baby. Every morning he

would leave a bullet on the kitchen counter. Although he was 30 miles away at work, she knew he would kill her or the baby if she left so she stayed.

- For one woman, she always took her abuser seriously when he arrived home drunk or having had a drink. Some men will stop to take a drink before going home and beating a woman so they can use alcohol as the excuse.
- A white rancher broke nearly every bone in both feet of a client and raped her repeatedly. She also saw him kill a cow – literally beat the cow to death so she took his threats seriously.
- Past experience. There has to be prior violence to let them know the other is willing to carry out a threat. The violence doesn't have to have been done to them. It may have been directed at the children, pets or other relatives.
- It is usually based on past experience. If she had her hair yanked out the last time she refused to comply, chances are he won't have to yank out her hair again. He only has to remind her.
- There may be indicators in the relationship initially but as the relationship progresses the indicators become so well masked that it is hard to decipher them. It isn't usually a cycle building phase.
- There is no way to tell which men will use what resources and come bursting through the shelter door. They cannot be predicted.

#### **4. Compliance/Resistance as Coercive Outcome**

- The women who come to the shelter have given in, often for years. Once they make it to the shelter, they have said “enough.” They know they can no longer fulfill the man’s demands. The kitchen is spotless, and he wants one more thing. Motives for complying include doing anything to provide calm and safety for the children. They will do anything at any hour to hide their conditions from the outside world and make peace, but the threshold constantly rises.
- Giving in is survival. Giving in is part of the crazy-making by the partner. She runs around making sure he is pleased, and he keeps her going trying to please him. Then he adds more for her to do, that she must do in order to ensure her safety and that of the children. However, complying guarantees nothing. Control does not happen overnight. It can begin subtly and escalate so that women believe there is no other way but to comply.
- Some women never give up trying to resist. Others are more compliant. He only uses as much control as he needs to keep her in line and his anxiety level down.

- In one case, a mother of 6 or 7 came into town to the bank with her husband and a toddler. Before going into the bank, which had a large glass window, he said, “I’ll have my eye on you so don’t get any ideas.” He went into the bank and at one point he turned away and was not watching the car. The woman grabbed the child and the gun behind the seat. She ran to safety and called for help from the shelter. She knew she had to take the gun otherwise her husband would shoot her in the back as she ran away.

## **5. Other Effects of the Coercive Process**

- In many instances, particularly when the relationship was long term, she would internalize his demands and come to believe he actually did know what was best for her. There would seem to be a disconnect in her decision-making powers.

## **6. Agent’s Surveillance**

- Often the batterers will come home unexpectedly. Or they will ask for reports from the woman with all kinds of details in the reports.
- One husband kept his wife from leaving the house by removing the car’s distributor cap or unplugging the wiring while he worked in the fields.
- Some women must be near the phone constantly as the partner may call at any time to check up on her. Men look at phone bills to see who has been called. Men check receipts. No space is sacred. Drawers, purses, and the garbage can may be searched.
- Often the batterers don’t know whether the woman has or has not done something but they will accuse them of anything. One batterer would use a white glove to check how clean the house was. He would run his gloved hand along the molding, for example, to see if the house was clean enough. If the house was not clean enough, then he would beat the woman up.
- Men know their wives comply by checking receipts after shopping, checking phone bills to see who was called, calling \*69 to check the last number dialed, talking with friends and relatives to see if the wife has spoken with them or has been seen, and checking the car odometer. The men will accuse their wives of sleeping around or talking to other men or people they are not suppose to. The locations are so isolated and far away from anything that many phone calls are long distance. Any long distance calls are questioned.
- Batterers use direct observation to check on compliance. For example, before leaving for work, a husband carefully puts talcum powder on the phone. All he had to do was check the phone to make sure the powder was not disturbed.

For that reason, the woman never opened a window for fear a breeze might blow it away. The clean freak mentioned previously would run his finger along the kitchen floor. It was seldom clean enough for him.

- Many times a woman does not go into town unless the man has business in town.
- In some cases, women are allowed to go places but they would not dare linger. The men time the errands or activities and are waiting when they get home. The women must get permission to do activities and would not dream of doing something without asking first. If they go to a holiday or other party, they may stay by their men the entire time. They know by his body language if they are talking to someone they are not suppose to. If she goes to the grocery store, he will check the receipts, ask what was bought and how much was spent, why certain items were bought, and ask about any deviance from normal on the list.

## 7. Setting the Stage for Coercion

- Most abusers also are verbally abusive. One woman's husband kept telling her she was stupid because she did not have as much formal education as he did. He was constantly criticizing her pronunciation and grammar so she was literally afraid to speak.
- Women are told they are bad mothers. They are told they could never make it without their partner.
- The women are told they are bad mothers and they come to believe it. Women talk about how their partners make fun of them and ridicule their sexual abilities.
- Often there are assaults on the person – her looks or her clothes. One client was told she had fat, white legs and should never wear shorts. The women begin to feel bad about themselves.
- He also tells her she will have nothing if she leaves him. There have been quite a few abusers lately who have told the women they will kill themselves if the women leave him.
- Clients are stalked. One abuser killed the family cat in a gruesome manner. In his stalking of her, he made cat noises outside of her home. His message was that she may have a protection order but he was still there.

## **8. Social Ecology Surrounding Coercion**

- One of the first questions asked of a battered woman is why she stays. The control is often subtle. There is fear that the children will be taken if she leaves. Three or four of the clients I've seen in the last year met guys, got into drugs, got their supply from the men, and stay. The men say, "if you leave, everyone will find out about your drug use, and you will go to jail." In rural areas, there are few jobs. The women are isolated and depend on the men for their daily needs. They have little control over daily needs much less fringe items.
- Another question frequently asked of a woman is "does she has a support network?" Ninety to 95 percent say no. Women are not allowed to have friends or contact with their families. Often the man is a charmer and appears so good or befriends her family and friends. The woman is made to appear in the wrong. Many women lose their friends through control of the relationships. There is no social life. The women often are not allowed to join clubs or go out with friends. A fun night out with the girls may be turned into him accusing her of sleeping around or having other men look at her. Sometimes it is simply easier or better to stay at home and not risk what may come.
- With the rural population, there is more of a tendency toward total control over the client's life – social, monetary, intimate, parenting, and household. Sometimes women can go into town on their own for community or church meetings but that is still controlled. They must, at the very least, ask permission to go. With such isolation, control over everything is easier. The women rely on the men for everything.
- Isolation from friends and family is common.
- The women generally have nowhere to go because of a lack of resources and poverty. Batterers are very good at getting legal aid to represent them so she has no legal representation.
- Most of the women feel they have no choice. If they leave, they are homeless and often really do not have anything. To not do something or to avoid doing it, a woman has to have options or be ready to leave.
- In terms of safety, the system often allows battering to continue. Batterers know when to notify law enforcement to get the woman arrested. Often they will taunt the women, calling them names and saying really horrible things until she does something such as throwing a soda at him. In this particular example, the couple was in the car when the man began taunting the woman. After she threw the soda at him, he drove to the police station and had her arrested.

- In some relationships the control escalates when there is alcohol/drug abuse. In others, the control disappears with alcohol/drug abuse. It all depends on the M.O. of the abuser. Some only escalate control when they suspect she may leave or when something changes ie she goes to school or gets a job or gets pregnant.
- Another tactic used is religion. Men will say that the Bible states a wife must be submissive to her husband and the husband is to make decisions. The family will go to church every Sunday. The husband will smile and be friendly. When the family returns home, he will beat the wife for not keeping a child quiet enough. The men quote the Bible to their benefit. In one case, the town minister and the husband used the Bible to get the wife and child back home saying divorce is a sin and that the father can't be kept out of the home. The wife and child returned though eventually the child was taken into custody by protective services and adopted. Using religion is a common and major tactic in rural communities.
- Woman and husband belong to strict religious group. She is controlled not just by the husband but by congregation who always back him up. When husband decides she needs to be punished, congregation members come to their house and watch as he ties wife to bed and “disciplines” her.
- One abuser told a client that not only would he prove she was a bad mother and take the children away from her, but in the afterlife she would never see the children again because God does not believe in divorce. The church backed him up. The woman went to a bishop and he told her to go back and pray for her husband. Her husband beat her so badly and so many times that she needed surgery to be able to breathe properly through her nose.
- When the abuser has convinced everyone in the woman’s social context that she is crazy then she comes to believe that she must be crazy and what he wants is right. Religion also reinforces the subservient position of women and women are told they are being good mothers if they are being submissive to their husband who is suppose to be the head of the household.
- The message a lot of women hear is that “good women” have clean houses and take care of themselves so if he is upset because the house is dirty or she doesn’t look as good as he thinks she should then she must not be a good woman. Good women also do not work outside the home.
- Most clients have had no access to money that they make or they do not work and get a dole, as needed or determined by the abuser. When they come to the shelter, there are financial issues, which are difficult. Most have never managed money.

- Most clients are afraid of being found. That fears hangs over them even at the shelter. If a woman relocates, once her social security number, or a child's, is in the system through social services, work, or school, he can find her. Men may make friends with all of the resources women may use to escape in the place of reestablishment (e.g., pastor, law enforcement, courts, emergency workers). They can make it so no one will believe the women. This is especially commonplace in rural communities.

## **9. Target's Increased Vulnerability**

- When the women come to the shelter, much of what they have been told must be unlearned. The relationships must be rebuilt with their children. Many times the parent/child relationship is askew. The children become protectors of their mothers and mothers become overprotective of the children.

## **10. Motivation, Intention, Personal Gain**

## **Appendix F**

### Potential Constructs to Assess in Interview

## Appendix F

### POTENTIAL CONSTRUCTS TO ASSESS IN INTERVIEW

Item Set	Construct	Imbedded Constructs	Potential Items
A	Communication of demand or expectation (1)	<p>Personal activities</p> <p>Social life / Family members</p> <p>Household</p> <p>Work / Economic</p> <p>Children / Parenting</p> <p>Intimate / Romance</p>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>First, you will be asked questions about what your partner may demand or expect of you that goes against what you want.</i></li> <li>• <i>How much does your partner <u>demand or expect</u> you to do, or not do, certain things that you do <u>not</u> want to do, related to</i></li> </ul> <p>1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often 5-All the time</p> <p>1. Leaving or staying in the house 2. Eating 3. Sleeping 4. What you wear 5. Bathing, using the bathroom, or other personal hygiene</p> <p>6. Talking to friends or family members on the phone 7. Spending time with friends or family members</p> <p>8. Taking care of the house 9. Food or cooking 10. Where you live</p> <p>11. Working or your employment 12. Money or using credit cards</p> <p>13. Taking care of the children 14. Disciplining the children</p> <p>15. Being affectionate or physically close 16. Talking to each other 17. Having sex 18. Staying in the relationship</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>If the answer to any of the questions in A is "yes", go to B.</i></li> </ul>

## Appendix F (Continued)

B	<p>Perceived threat of contingent meaningful negative consequences for noncompliance with a demand, request, or expectation (3)</p> <p>Involvement of a third party</p>	<p>Nature of perceived threat of negative consequence</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li><i>(In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects something of you that is different from what you want.</i></li> <li><i>How much do you believe that any of the following would happen if you didn't do what he (or she) demanded or expected of you?</i></li> </ul> <p>1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often or a lot of the time 5-All the time</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Emotionally hurt you</li> <li>Emotionally hurt your children</li> <li>Take you children away from you</li> <li>Emotionally hurt your friends or family members</li> <li>Physically hurt you</li> <li>Kill you</li> <li>Physically hurt your children</li> <li>Physically hurt your friends or family member</li> <li>Destroyed or took your property</li> <li>Threaten you financially</li> <li>Threaten you with legal trouble</li> <li>Restrain you or lock you up</li> <li>Put you in a mental hospital</li> <li>Cause you to go to jail or a half-way house</li> </ol> <p><i>(If yes to any of the above)</i> <i>Are any of the following, people who you believe your partner would get to help him (or her) do any of these bad things?</i></p> <p>1 = yes 2 = no</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Police, prosecutor, judge, probation officer or someone else in the justice system</li> <li>Minister, priest, rabbi, or other spiritual leader</li> <li>Your partner's friend or family member</li> <li>Your friend or family member</li> <li>INS</li> <li>IRS</li> <li>Mafia</li> </ol>	<p>For each item answered "yes", indicate how important this is to you.</p> <p>1- Not at all important 2- A little bit important 3- Somewhat important 4-Quite important 5- Extremely important</p>
---	---	--	---

## Appendix F (Continued)

C	<p>Communication of threat of meaningful negative consequences (2)</p> <p>Nature of threatened negative consequence</p>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>(In B), you indicated that you believed certain things would happen if you didn't do what your partner expected of you.</i></li> <li>• <i>Next we want to understand better how you know these bad things would happen</i></li> <li>• <i>How much are the following reasons why you believe these bad things would happen?</i></li> </ul> <p>1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often or much of the time 5-All the time</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. In the past, when I didn't do what he (or she) expected of me, my partner has actually done some of these negative things.</li> <li>2. In the past, my partner said that he (or she) would do some of these negative things if I didn't do what he (or she) wanted, although he (or she) hasn't actually done them.</li> <li>3. In the past, my partner acted in a way that made me think he (or she) would do some of these things, even though he (or she) didn't actually say so.</li> <li>4. In the past, I "just knew" it was a "rule."</li> </ol>	
---	---	---	--

## Appendix F (Continued)

D	Compliance or Resistance(4)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• (In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects things of you that is different from what you want.</li> <li>• When that happens, how much of the time do you do each of the following?</li> </ul> <p>1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often or much of the time 5-All the time</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. I do what my partner wants</li> <li>2. I resist doing what my partner wants by saying "no" or refusing to do it</li> <li>3. I resist doing what my partner wants by delaying or putting off doing what my partner wants me to do.</li> <li>4. I resist doing what my partner wants by saying "yes," but not really doing it</li> <li>5. I resist doing what my partner wants, but end up doing what he (or she) wants anyway</li> </ol>	<p><i>For each item answered "yes", indicate strongly you feel the following when you do this.</i></p> <p>1- Not at all 2- A little bit 3- Somewhat 4-Quite 5- Extremely</p> <p>1. happy 2. sad 3. frustrated 4. angry 5. guilty 6. afraid 7. helpless 8. satisfied 9. upset</p>
---	-----------------------------	--	--

## **Appendix F (Continued)**

E	Other Effects of Coercive Control Process (5)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"><li>• (In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects things of you that is different from what you want.</li><li>• How much do you end up experiencing each of the following feelings when this happens?</li></ul> <p>1- Not at all 2- A little bit 3- Somewhat 4- Quite 5- Extremely</p> <p>1. happy 2. sad 3. frustrated 4. angry 5. guilty 6. afraid 7. helpless 8. satisfied 9. upset</p>	
---	---	---	--

## Appendix F (Continued)

F	Surveillance (6)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• (In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects things of you that is different from what you want.</li> <li>• How often does your partner do the following in order to know whether you have done what he (or she) wanted you to do?</li> </ul> <p style="margin-top: 10px;">1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often or much of the time 5-All the time</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. He (or she) is there with me, so he (or she) can tell</li> <li>2. He (or she) calls on the phone to find out whether I have done what he (or she) wants</li> <li>3. My partner asks the children to tell him (or her) if I have done what he (or she) wants</li> <li>4. My partner asks other people (besides the children) to tell him (or her) if I have done what he (or she) wants</li> <li>5. My partner checks the odometer on the car as a way of knowing whether I've done what he (or she) wants</li> <li>6. My partner checks my clothing or underwear to see if I've done what he (or she) wants.</li> </ol>	
---	------------------	--	--

## Appendix F (Continued)

G	Setting the Stage (7)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Cognitive set           <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>-Willing</li> <li>-Ready</li> <li>-Able</li> </ul> </li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>(In B), you indicated that you believed certain things would happen if you didn't do what your partner expected of you.</i></li> <li>• <i>At the time, how much are the following are reasons you believed your partner was <u>willing</u> to cause those bad things to happen</i></li> </ul> <p style="margin-left: 20px;">1- Not at all 2- A little bit 3- Somewhat 4- Quite 5- Extremely</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Because my partner had done those things to me before</li> <li>2. Because my partner had done those things to someone else before</li> <li>3. Because my partner said he would do those things to me</li> <li>4. Because my partner had been drinking or using drugs</li> <li>5. Because my partner was under a lot of stress</li> </ol> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>At the time, how much are the following reasons you believed your partner was <u>able</u> to cause those bad things to happen</i></li> </ul> <p style="margin-left: 20px;">1- Not at all 2- A little bit 3- Somewhat 4- Quite 5- Extremely</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Because my partner's physical size, strength, or physical skills</li> <li>2. Because my partner has access to money or other financial resources</li> <li>3. Because my partner can get other people to help</li> <li>4. Because my partner knows where my family or friends are</li> </ol> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>At the time, how soon did you believe your partner was ready to cause those bad things to happen to you if you didn't do what he wanted</i></li> </ul> <p style="margin-left: 20px;">1. Immediately 2. Within the day 3. Within the week 4. Within the month 5. Within the year 6. More than a year</p>
---	-----------------------	--	---

## Appendix F (Continued)

	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>Softening the Target</i></li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• (In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects things of you that is different from what you want.</li> <li>• How much of the time did your partner do the following things to wear down your resistance and make it more likely that you would do what he (or she) wanted</li> </ul> <p>1-Not at all 2-Infrequently or not very often 3-Sometimes 4-Often or much of the time 5-All the time</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Did things to make you feel afraid or terrified to resist what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>2. Did things to make you feel too emotionally drained to resist what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>3. Did things to keep you from sleeping so you were too tired to resist what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>4. Did things to confuse you so you couldn't resist what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>5. Did things so you didn't have money or financial resources to resist doing what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>6. Got you to use alcohol or drugs so that physically you couldn't resist doing what he (or she) wanted</li> <li>7. Did things to physically hurt or injury you so that you couldn't resist doing what he (or she) wanted</li> </ol>	
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>Exploiting vulnerabilities</i></li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• (In A), you indicated that your partner demands or expects things of you that are different from what you want.</li> <li>• To what extent did your partner use the following experiences of yours to get you to do what he (or she) wanted</li> </ul> <p>0- Does not apply 1- Not at all 2- A little bit 3- Somewhat 4- Quite 5- Extremely</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Your having been physically or sexually abused as a child</li> <li>2. Your having been neglected as a child</li> <li>3. Your having grown up in a family with little money</li> <li>4. Your having lost a parent during childhood</li> <li>5. Your having been previously sexually assaulted or raped</li> <li>6. Your having been hit or physically hurt by a previous partner</li> <li>7. Your having been mugged or assaulted by someone other than a previous partner</li> <li>8. Your having a serious physical condition</li> <li>9. Your having emotional problems</li> <li>10. Your having lost a child</li> <li>11. Your feeling sorry for your partner because of his (or her) background or previous experiences</li> </ol>	

## Appendix F (Continued)

H	Social Ecology (8)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Economic and tangible resources           <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Income</li> <li>2. Employment</li> <li>3. Access to credit cards</li> <li>4. Own or lease a residence in your name</li> <li>5. Own or lease a car in your name</li> <li>6. Have medical insurance for self               <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>-independently</li> <li>-on partner's policy</li> </ul> </li> <li>7. Have medical insurance for children               <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>-independently</li> <li>-on partner's policy</li> </ul> </li> </ol> </li>   <li>• Institutional context           <p><i>To what extent in the following true of you and your partner:</i></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1- Not at all</li> <li>2- A little bit</li> <li>3- Somewhat</li> <li>4- Quite</li> <li>5- Extremely</li> </ol> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. My partner has been previously arrested</li> <li>9. I have been previously arrested</li> <li>10. My partner has previously spent time in jailed</li> <li>11. I have previously spent time in jail</li> <li>12. My partner has previously been convicted of a crime</li> <li>13. I have previously been convicted of a crime</li> <li>14. I have had or currently have a protection order against my partner</li> <li>15. My partner has had or currently has a protection order against me</li> <li>16. My partner is involved in a church or temple</li> <li>17. (If yes to #16), my partner's religion encourages men to be the head of the household</li> <li>18. I am involved in a church or temple</li> <li>19. (If yes to #18), my religion encourages men to be the head of the household</li> <li>20. My partner has been or is involved in mental health counseling</li> <li>21. I have been or am involved in mental health counseling</li> </ol> </li>   <li>• Cultural and social context           <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>22. Race / ethnicity</li> <li>23. Racial identity</li> <li>24. Religious identity</li> <li>25. Immigration status</li> <li>26. Sexual orientation</li> <li>27. Urban/suburban/rural</li> <li>28. Age cohort</li> </ol> </li> </ul>	
---	--------------------	---	--

## Appendix F (Continued)

	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Social network -Family, friends</li>   <li>-Partner</li>   <li>• Individual context -Cognitive</li>   <li>-Physical status / state</li> <li>-Mental health</li> <li>-Behavioral skills or deficits</li> </ul>	<p>29. Social support inventory (e.g., ISEL)</p> <p>30. I have friends or family who support me in resisting doing thing my partner demands or expects me to do that I don't want to do</p> <p>31. My partner has family or friends who support him (or her) in his (or her) demands or expectations that I do things even though I don't want to do them</p> <p>32. Relationship cohesion measure?</p> <p>33. In spite of our problems, at times my partner and I are good friends</p> <p>34. In spite of our problems, at times I enjoy spending time with my partner</p> <p>35. In spite of our problems, at times my partner and I have a satisfying sexual relationship</p> <p>36. My partner is an important person (legitimate power)</p> <p>37. My partner is a smart person and know how to do a lot of things (expert power)</p> <p>38. My partner is a very important person in my life (referent power)</p> <p>39. My partner has information that I don't have (informational power)</p>	
--	--	--	--

## Appendix F (Continued)

I	Increased Vulnerability (9)		No items here	
J	Motivation, Intention, Personal Gain (10)		<p>2. <i>(In B), you indicated that you believed certain things would happen if you didn't do what your partner expected of you.</i></p> <p>3. <i>To what extent do you believe the following to be true</i></p> <p>1- Not at all      2- A little bit      3- Somewhat      4- Quite      5- Extremely</p> <p>1. My partner intentionally wants to control me      2. My partner gains something by controlling or trying to control me</p>	

## **Appendix G**

Development of Coercive Control Measure: Conceptual Framework and Model

## **Appendix G**

### **DEVELOPMENT OF COERCIVE CONTROL MEASURE: CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK**

#### **Working Definition of Coercion:**

**IPV COERCION:** Communication of a credible threat of contingent and negative meaningful consequences for an intimate partner's noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

**APPRAISAL OF IPV COERCION:** Understanding or perception of the likelihood that one's partner would (or would try) to deliver contingent and meaningful negative consequences for one's noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

#### **Other Components of the IPV Coercion Model:**

**RESPONSE TO COERCION:** The act of responding to IPV coercion and/or the appraisal of IPV coercion along two non-orthogonal dimensions of compliance and resistance.

**SURVEILLANCE:** The act of monitoring an intimate partner's response to coercion.

**DELIVERY OF THREATENED (OR OTHER) CONSEQUENCES:** Carrying out threatened (or other) consequences for an intimate partner's actual (or assumed) noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

**OUTCOMES OF IPV COERCION:** The emotional, cognitive, behavioral, social, or physiological outcomes associated with exposure to IPV Coercion or with meaningful levels of Appraisal of IPV Coercion.

**SETTING THE STAGE FOR IPV COERCION:** Exploiting or creating vulnerabilities in one's intimate partner that reduces the capacity or likelihood of resistance to IPV Coercion.

**VULNERABILITY TO COERCION:** Emotional, cognitive, behavioral, social, or physiological conditions that reduce one's capacity or likelihood of resistance to IPV Coercion.

**MOTIVATION, INTENTION, OR PERSONAL GAIN FOR IPV COERCION:** The conscious or unconscious motivation or intention to engage in IPV Coercive acts or the potential of personal gain for doing so.

**Underlying Assumptions / Points of Clarification or Discussion:**

1. Social power plays a role in all interpersonal relationships, including intimate partner relationships (French & Raven, 1959).
2. Coercion is one of several forms of social power. Both social power and coercion are found in most intimate partner relationships, although there is a great deal of variance in forms and severity of coercion (Molm, 1997; Raven, 1993; Raven, Center, & Rodriguez, 1975). Distinguishing “acceptable” vs. “unacceptable” forms of coercion is determined by social norms. An example of “unacceptable” coercion might be the threat of a beating for not coming home on time. An example of an “acceptable” coercion might be the threat of calling the police if the abusive partner does not put down the gun.
3. Control is influencing someone to do something they would not otherwise do. Control is neither positive nor negative; it is the product of inevitable social power in relationships. The construct of control encompasses coercion, as well as force, persuasion, and authority, and other forms of social power. It is coercion that is the focus of the development of this measure.
4. Coercion is a fluid process. An individual can be both a “target” and an “agent” of coercion—sometimes within the same interaction. The level or severity of coercion between the two partners may or may not differ dramatically.
5. Coercion is the act of getting someone to act or think in a particular way by using or threatening with negative consequences for noncompliance. As such, coercion is a specific mechanism of control. An act of coercion requires a “target” and an “agent.”
6. Coercion is different from “force.” Force involves “lack of volition” where—given sufficient force—it is physically impossible to resist.
7. Coercion involves “choice,” but not “free choice.” By definition, there is a “cost” for choosing noncompliance. When that “cost” is meaningful to the “target” of coercion, then socially or clinically significant coercion exists.
8. The agent’s awareness of his/her intention or motivation to control the target through coercion is not necessary for the coercive process to occur or for coercive outcomes to result.

**Purpose of Developing a Measure of Coercive Control:**

1. To develop a measure capable of assessing the type, severity, and extent of coercion within intimate partner relationships.
2. To apply the new measure of coercive control in the study of violent intimate partner relationships in order to test a range of hypotheses, including, for example that types

of intimate partner violence can be distinguished by the level of coercive control they involve (Johnson, 1995; Johnson & Ferraro, 2000) or that some criminal conduct is the result of coercive control in intimate relationships (Colvin, Cullen, & Vander Ven, 2001; Stark, 1995).

### **Elaboration of the Model of Coercive Control in Intimate Relationships:**

#### **COERCIVE PROCESS**

##### **1. Communication of Demand, Request, or Expectation**

- a. Coercion requires that the “agent” demand, request, or expect the “target” to do something that the target does NOT want to do.
- b. Coercion doesn’t require—although may involve—an explicit “demand,” especially in ongoing relationships where current expectations are made clear through past interactions. Likewise, a seemingly pleasant “request,” that appears to be non-coercive when observed from outside the interaction, may functionally be a demand, again depending on past interactions between the target and agent. (Komter, 1989)
- c. Demands, requests, or expectations can occur in any domain. The more domains in which coercion occurs, the more pervasive is the pattern of coercion in the relationship.
  1. Personal activities (e.g., coming and going, eating, sleeping, dressing)
  2. Social life
  3. Household (nuclear family and extended family living in same house)
  4. Family members (extended family not living in same house)
  5. Work related/economic/money
  6. Children/parenting
  7. Intimate/romance

##### **2. Communication of the Threat of a Meaningful Negative Consequence**

- a. Coercion requires the communication of a contingent “meaningful” negative consequence for noncompliance.
- b. Communication of a contingent negative consequence for noncompliance may be established through a) a prior actual contingent negative consequence delivered by the agent for noncompliance or b) a threatened one.
- c. Communication of the threat of future negative consequence may be explicit (e.g., direct verbal statement) or implicit (e.g., gesture or words that carry the meaning of threat, even though they are not overtly stated).

- d. Communication of a threat of a contingent negative consequence may involve “invoking the power of third parties” (Raven, 1993).
- e. The contingent negative consequence may be the application of an aversive consequence (i.e., punishment) or the removal of something positive (i.e., response cost)—both of which function to increase the likelihood of compliance.

The “meaningfulness” of the threatened consequence helps to determine “how much cost.” Some negative consequences may be slight (e.g., refusal to talk), while others may have tremendous impact on the target’s life (e.g., having one’s children taken away), and yet others are life-threatening (e.g., being killed). Understanding the “weight” or “cost” of the consequence to the target is essential to understanding the coercive process. The weight or meaning of a particular negative consequence is unique to the target—determined by many factors (Cartwright, 1959).

## COERCIVE OUTCOME

### 3. Perceived Threat of Coercion

- a. The target’s perception that her/his partner is sufficiently ready, willing, and able to engage in a threatened and meaningful negative consequence for noncompliance with a demand, request, or expectation by the agent provides the cognitive component of the definition of coercive outcome (Outcome1). That is, coercion has been “successful” when the target behaves “as though” the contingent punishment would occur, regardless of whether it actually would occur.
- b. The perception of “sufficiently ready, willing, and able” should incorporate the potential for doubt—since the criteria would not likely need to be 100% certain in order that one modify one’s behavior (e.g., comply) with a demand, request, or expectation. Given a sufficiently high threshold consequence (e.g., being killed, having one’s children taken away), the target’s perceived likelihood that such a consequence for noncompliance would occur may need only be minimal in order to coerce compliance.
- c. It is probably necessary that the agent has engaged in at least some form of coercive acts—allowing for disagreement in report between agent and target. Otherwise, the target may be experiencing the situation as coercive, but it would be based on other factors (e.g., prior relationship experience, disordered psychological state).

#### **4. Compliance / Resistance as Coercive Outcome**

- a. The target's response to the demand, request, or expectation may be in the form of compliance or resistance. Note that resistance may not be sufficiently strong and eventually lead to compliance, so both may occur in response to threat.
- b. Coercion is an interactive process—not a static phenomenon. The “demand/response interaction” is iterative and several sequences may occur in the coercive process. For example, the sequence may be demand/resist/demand/resist/demand/comply—each time the demand becoming stronger.
- c. The target's behavioral response to coercion involves elements of two dimensions, which may occur alone or together.
  1. Compliance—doing what the target demands
  2. Resistance—resisting what the target demand.
    - a) Direct resistance may involve confrontation or an overt resistance of the demand.
    - b) Indirect resistance involves resisting, but in a way that is “softer” or doesn't involve a direct confrontation of the agent (e.g., delaying, rather than refusing; saying “yes” to the “request” but then not doing it).

#### **5. Delivery of Threatened Negative Consequences**

- a. In some cases, the threat of negative consequence is actually delivered—for actual or perceived noncompliance. Generally, these acts fit the definitions of various forms of IPV.

### **MEDIATING AND MODERATING CONSTRUCTS RELATED TO COERCION**

#### **6. Other Effects Of The Coercive Process**

- a. Emotional and cognitive responses associated with compliance or resistance are many. Examples include sadness, fear, helplessness, futility, anger, hope).
- b. The “meaning” of the compliance and resistance behavior is also important. Compliance now may be viewed as an interim step (e.g., to buy time) until the target can resist more successfully later. Or, compliance may mean to the target she/he has “given up” resisting the agent's demands, at least for now.

#### **7. Agent's Surveillance**

- a. Coercive power requires the agent to be able to conduct surveillance to detect compliance vs. noncompliance. Examples of this in intimate partner violence

include the batterer checking the odometer to determine whether the partner came right home as demanded, frequent phone calls to determine whether the partner has left the home, required reports by the target to the agent, or “checking” underwear to determine whether the partner had had sex with someone else.

## 8. Setting The Stage For Coercion

Coercion often involves some type of “setting the stage” or preparation of the target to increase the likelihood that subsequent coercive tactics will be effective.

**a. Creating Vulnerability.** The agent may soften the target—that is, communicating to the target that the agent is “willing,” “able,” and “ready” to impose a negative consequence. It is “important to demonstrate to the target that not only are the means available for coercion (i.e., ability), but that the agent is ready and willing to pay the costs that coercion implies” (Raven, 1993).

1. Communication of “willingness” of agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.
  - a) Communication of willingness occurs when the agent has previously imposed negative consequences (i.e., has done it before) on the target or someone else that the target knows about.
  - b) Communication of willingness occurs when the target states explicitly that he/she is going to engage in threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it).
2. Communication of “ability” of agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.
  - a) Agent’s ability to administer the negative consequence is based on the target’s perception of an uneven power difference between the agent and the target. Perceived power differences—which alone or in combination provide a basis from which to persuasively communicate the ability to engage in the threatened negative consequences—can be derived from one or more sources, including, but not limited to the following:
    - Actual IPV
    - Physical size and strength
    - Access to money and other economic resources
    - Access to weapons
    - Ability to utilize third party resources (e.g., individuals, institutional systems, INS, IRS) to invoke consequences

- Access to the “target” or “target’s” family and friends
- Access to other resources that increase power

3. Communication of agent’s “readiness” to engage in threatened negative consequence against agent (Raven, 1993).
  - a) Communication of readiness answers the “why now?” question in terms of the target’s response to coercion. This is especially important when explaining the target’s resistance (vs. compliance).
  - b) Communication of readiness may occur by means of the agent saying explicitly—or in some other way communicating—that he/she is going to impose the threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it) within a particular timeframe.
- b. Softening the target/Wearing down target’s resistance.** Setting the stage for coercion may also occur through wearing down the target’s resistance. Wearing down resistance can involve the agent’s reducing the target’s emotional (e.g., inducing a state of terror/fear, emotionally wearing down), physical (e.g., injury, sleep deprivation), cognitive (e.g., creating mental confusion in the target), or economic (e.g., making it necessary for the target to use up her/his resources) resources—some of which may be necessary to resist.
- c. Exploiting target’s prior vulnerabilities.** Coercion may also be made more possible because the agent exploits the target’s prior vulnerabilities (e.g., childhood abuse, prior victimization, mental disorder or disability, physical disability).

## 9. Social Ecology Surrounding Coercion

Coercion occurs in the context of a relationship. Characteristics of intimate coercive relationships may vary enormously. An ecological model (Bronfenbrenner, 1979; Dutton, 1996) is helpful to organize these contextual factors, as potential moderators and mediators of the impact of coercion, as well as on coercive tactics, per se. Examples are:

- a. Economic and Tangible Resources Context
  1. Level of economic and tangible resources available to the target independent of the agent (e.g., threats to withhold child support payments will be more salient for someone with no job).
- b. Institutional Context
  1. Level and type of institutional involvement of each partner
  2. Public policies, including, but not limited to:

- a) Public housing policy of zero tolerance for violence (“one strike and you’re out” initiative).
  - b) Welfare reform
  - c) Institutional support of ideology of family patriarchy (see work by Michael D. Smith and Walter DeKeseredy)
- c. Cultural and Social Context
- 1. Socioeconomic/social class status
  - 2. Race/ethnicity
  - 3. Religion
  - 4. Immigration status/citizenship/country of origin
  - 5. Sexual orientation
  - 6. Urban/suburban/rural
  - 7. Age cohort
- d. Social Network
- 1. Family, friends, co-workers, neighbors, and acquaintances
    - a) Social networks may influence coercion. Example: The agent’s extended family that lives with the target may make noncompliance more costly, since it may invoke the disapproval of others, in addition to the agent’s threat.
    - b) Isolation from social network may increase vulnerability of the target, or serve to increase agents’ coercive tactics and motivation to coercion.
    - c) Target’s social support may bolster the target’s efforts at noncompliance with coercive threats.
    - d) Agent’s involvement in patriarchal all-male social networks—and the pro-abuse male peer support it may provide—may provide support to bolster the agent’s coercive (and other violent and abusive) tactics.
  - 2. Partner
    - a) Other forms of social power ascribed to the partner—in addition to coercion—that may form the basis of coercion, influence, or other forms of control.
      - 1) Reward power—ability to provide or withhold positive social consequence directly or indirectly (e.g., through third party).
      - 2) Legitimate power to influence is seen as legitimate by means of social norms (e.g., gender roles), status in the community (e.g., religious or community leader), position of authority (e.g., police

officer), and agent's legal immigration status. Thus, the agent's greater legitimate status relative to the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., the religious community supports the role of husband in making demands of female partner, agent threatens to withhold information about filing immigration papers unless the target complies). Legitimate power can also be used by the partner to the benefit of the other.

- 3) Expert power to influence is based on target's perception of agent's specific expertise (e.g., black belt, skillful verbal negotiation skills). Thus, an agent's greater expertise, relative to the target, provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent has knowledge about cars which support his threats to tamper with the car to make it unsafe). The partner can also use her/his expert power to the benefit of the other.
- 4) Referent power to influence based on target's identification or emotional connection with agent (e.g., emotional attachment, identity as "husband"). An agent's lesser attachment or commitment to the relationship relative to the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent threatens to leave the relationship unless the target complies) by the partner.
- 5) Informational power to influence based on agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target (e.g., where the checkbook is kept). Thus, the agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target provides the opportunity for coercion (e.g. partner tells target that she will lose custody of the children if she calls the police because he is a citizen and she is not). The partner may also use his/her informational power to the benefit of the other.

### 3. Physical power

- a) The agent's physical size and strength, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use physical force as a threat.

### 4. Economic autonomy and resources

- a) The agent's economic autonomy and resources, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use economic reasons as a tool of coercion.

#### a. Individual Context

##### 1. Target's strengths/resilience and vulnerabilities

- a) Cognitive
  - 1) Target's intellectual problem-solving abilities may enhance her/his ability to not comply, without incurring the threatened consequence.
- b) Physical status/physiological state
  - 1) Alcohol/drug use and abuse
    - i. Intoxication may impair her/his ability to resist a coercive demand.
    - ii. Chronic alcohol/drug use or addition
  - 2) Physical disabilities
  - 3) Chronic illness (e.g., cancer, HIV/AIDS)
- c) Mental health/mental status
  - 1) Chronic mental illness
  - 2) Disorientation or confusion
  - 3) Depression
  - 4) PTSD and anxiety
- d) Behavioral Skills / Deficits
  - 1) Proficiencies and abilities (e.g., karate, firearms)
  - 2) Skill deficits (e.g., inability to drive a car)

## **10. Target's Increased Vulnerability**

This element of the target's increased vulnerability following "setting the stage" tactics is not essential to the model of coercive control in that it is not essential that it occur. However, it may be of interest in better studying the dynamics of the coercion process.

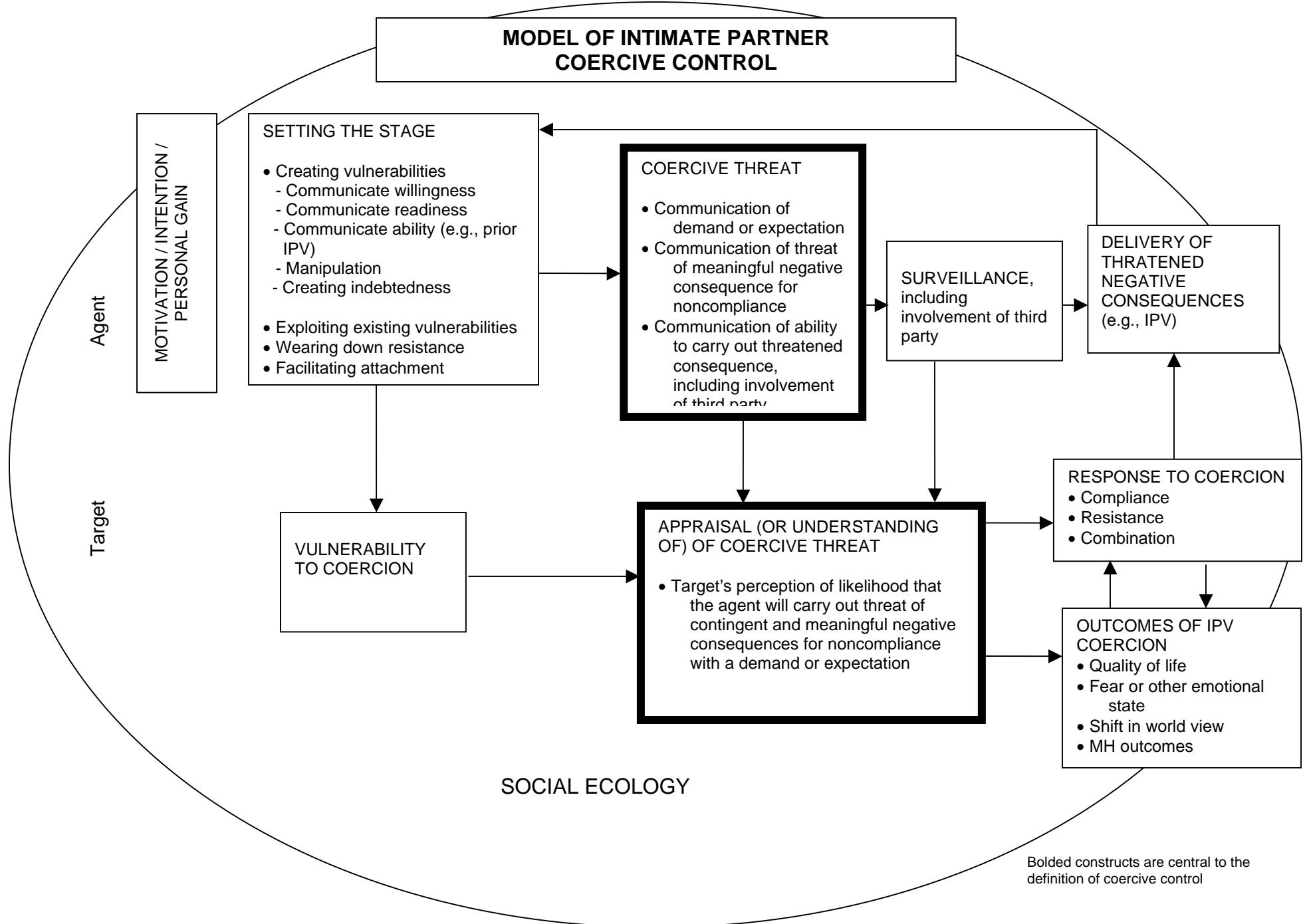
## **11. Motivation, Intention, Personal Gain**

The question of the agent's motivation, intention, or personal gain is complex, and difficult to assess, especially given social desirability and psychological defense (e.g., denial, projection) considerations. An awareness of intent to coerce seems not necessary in order to engage in acts that would be objectively judged as coercive. Yet, this construct is an important one to consider further.

## References

- Bronfenbrenner, U. (1979). *The ecology of human development: Experiments by nature and design*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Cartwright, D. (1959). A field theoretical conception of power. In D. Cartwright (Ed.), *Studies in social power* (pp. 183-220). Ann Arbor, MI: Institute for Social Research.
- Colvin, M., Cullen, F. T., and Vander Ven, T. (2001). Coercion, social support, and crime: An emerging theoretical consensus. *Criminology*, 40(1), 19-42.
- Dutton, M. A. (1996). Battered women's strategic response to violence: The role of context. In J. L. E. Z. C. Eisikovits (Ed.), *Future interventions with battered women and their families* (pp. 105-124). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.
- French, J. R. P., and Raven, B. H. (1959). The bases of social power. In D. Cartwright (Ed.), *Studies in social power* (pp. 150-167). Ann Arbor, MI: Institute for Social Research.
- Johnson, M. P. (1995). Patriarchal terrorism and common couple violence: Two forms of violence against women. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 57, 283-294.
- Johnson, M. P., and Ferraro, K. J. (2000). Research on domestic violence in the 1990s: Making distinctions. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 62, 948-963.
- Komter, A. (1989). Hidden power in marriage. *Gender & Society*, 3(12), 187-216.
- Molm, L. D. (1997). *Coercive power in social exchange*. Cambridge, United Kingdom: Cambridge University Press.
- Raven, B. H. (1993). The bases of power: Origins and recent developments. *Journal of Social Psychology*, 49(4), 227-251.
- Raven, B. H., Center, and Rodriguez. (1975). The bases of conjugal power. In D. H. Olson (Ed.), *Power in families*. New York: Wiley.
- Stark, E. (1995). Re-presenting woman battering: From battered woman syndrome to coercive control. *Albany Law Review*, 58, 973-1026.





## **Appendix H**

Materials from the Advisory Panel Meeting

## **Appendix H**

### **MATERIALS FROM THE ADVISORY PANEL MEETING**

### **NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE**

### **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence Advisory Panel Meeting**

**COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, MD 20814**

**March 13-14, 2003**

### **Agenda**

#### **March 13, 2003**

8:30 am - 9:00 am      Continental Breakfast

9:00 am - 9:45 am      Welcome and Introductions

9:45 am - 10:15 am      Overview of Grant and Purpose of the Study

*Mary Ann Dutton, Principal Investigator,  
Georgetown University Medical Center*

10:15 am - 10:30 am      Break

10:30 am - 12:30 pm      Overview and Discussion of the Conceptual Model

*Mary Ann Dutton*

12:30 pm - 1:30 pm      Lunch (provided)

1:30 pm - 3:00 pm      Review and Discussion of the Preliminary Ethnographic Interviews

*Mary Ann Dutton*

*Lisa Goodman, Co-investigator, Boston College*

*Aileen Worrell, Project Coordinator, COSMOS Corporation*

3:00 pm - 3:15 pm      Break

3:15 pm - 4:30 pm      Discussion of the Implications for Revisions of the Conceptual Model

*Mary Ann Dutton*

### **March 14, 2003**

8:30 am - 9:00 am      Continental Breakfast

9:00 am - 10:15 am      Review and Discussion of Proposed Questionnaire Items

*Mary Ann Dutton*

10:15 am - 10:30 am      Break

10:30 am - 11:30 am      Review and Discussion of Proposed Questionnaire Items

11:30 am - 12:30 pm      Review and Discussion of Validation Study Design

*Mary Ann Dutton*

**National Institute of Justice**

**Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure  
for Intimate Partner Violence  
Advisory Panel Meeting**

**COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, MD 20814**

**March 13-14, 2003**

**PARTICIPANT LIST**

**Advisory Panel Members**

**David Adams, Ed.D.\***

Program and Research Director  
Emerge  
2380 Massachusetts Avenue, Suite 101  
Cambridge, MA 02140  
Phone: 617-547-9879  
E-mail: dadams9@msn.com

**Joyce Chung, M.D.**

Clinical Associate Professor of Psychiatry  
Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
3800 Reservoir Road, NW  
Washington, DC 20007  
Phone: 202-687-8609  
E-mail: chungjy@georgetown.edu

**Sarah Cook, Ph.D.**

Assistant Professor  
Department of Psychology  
Georgia State University  
140 Decatur Street, 11th Floor  
Atlanta, GA 30303  
Phone: 404-651-2283  
E-mail: scook@gsu.edu

\*Unable to attend

**Shamita Das Dasgupta, Ph.D.\***  
Co-founder and Development Coordinator  
Manavi  
7 Fletcher Drive  
Montville, NJ 07045  
Phone: 973-334-7356  
E-mail: shamitadas@hotmail.com

**Walter DeKeseredy, Ph.D.**  
Professor  
Department of Sociology and Anthropology  
Ohio University  
Athens, OH 45701  
Phone: 740-593-1376  
E-mail: dekesere@ohio.edu

**Ed Gondolf, Ed.D.**  
Associate Director of Research, Mid-Atlantic Addiction Training Institute  
Professor of Sociology, Indiana University of Pennsylvania  
1098 Oakland Avenue  
Indiana, PA 15705  
Phone: 724-357-4749  
E-mail: egondolf@grove.iup.edu

**Michael Johnson, Ph.D.**  
Associate Professor of Sociology, Women's Studies and  
African & African American Studies  
Associate Head, Department of Sociology  
The Pennsylvania State University  
211 Oswald Tower  
University Park, PA 16802  
Phone: 814-865-2527  
E-mail: mpj@psu.edu

**Lucy Laufe, Ph.D.**  
Associate Professor, Department of Anthropology and Sociology  
Montgomery College  
20200 Observation Drive  
Germantown, MD 20876  
Phone: 301-353-1965  
E-mail: llaufe@mc.cc.md.us

**Charles Lidz, Ph.D.\***  
Director, Center for Research on Mental Health Services  
Department of Psychiatry  
University of Massachusetts Medical Center

55 Lake Avenue North  
Worcester, MA 01655  
Phone: 508-856-5498  
E-mail: chuck.lidz@umassmed.edu

**Leslye Orloff, J.D.**  
Senior Staff Attorney and Program Director  
Immigrant Women Program  
NOW Legal Defense and Education Fund  
1522 K Street, NW, Suite 550  
Washington, DC 20005  
Phone: 202-326-0040  
E-mail: lorloff@nowldef.org

**Sue Osthoff**  
Director  
National Clearinghouse for the Defense of Battered Women  
125 S. 9th Street, Suite 302  
Philadelphia, PA 19107  
Phone: 215-351-0010  
E-mail: sueo@ncdbw.org

**Ellen Pence, Ph.D.\***  
Executive Director  
Praxis International  
202 East Superior Street  
Duluth, MN 55802  
Phone: 218-722-4820  
E-mail: praxisep@aol.com

**Rose Pulliam, M.S.W.**  
Statewide Coordinator  
Vermont Network Against Domestic Violence and Sexual Assault  
P.O. Box 405  
Montpelier, VT 05601  
Phone: 802-223-1302  
E-mail: rose@vtnetwork.org

**Rachel Rodriguez, Ph.D.**  
Assistant Professor, School of Nursing  
University of Wisconsin  
600 Highland Avenue  
Madison, WI 53792  
Phone: 608-262-0051  
E-mail: rarodri1@facstaff.wisc.edu

**Beverly Wilkins\***  
Owner and Consultant  
Peaceful Nations  
1208 San Pedro, N.E., #212  
Albuquerque, NM 87110  
Phone: 505-268-5863  
E-mail: bjwilkins@msn.com

**Oliver Williams, Ph.D.\***  
Executive Director  
Institute on Domestic Violence in the African American Community  
School of Social Work  
University of Minnesota  
290 Peters Hall  
1404 Gortner Avenue  
St. Paul, MN 55108  
Phone: 612-624-5357  
E-mail: owilliam@tc.umn.edu

### **National Institute of Justice Participants**

**Leora Rosen, Ph.D., M.P.H.**  
Senior Social Science Analyst  
National Institute of Justice  
Office of Research and Evaluation  
Violence and Victimization Division  
810 Seventh Street, NW  
Washington, DC 20531  
Phone: 202-616-2452  
E-mail: rosenl@ojp.usdoj.gov

**Bernard Auchter**  
Senior Social Science Analyst  
Office of Research and Evaluation  
Violence and Victimization Division  
810 Seventh Street, NW  
Washington, DC 20531  
Phone: 202-307-0154  
Email: auchter@ojp.usdoj.gov

### **Project Team**

**Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.**  
Principal Investigator  
Professor  
Department of Psychiatry

\*Unable to attend

Georgetown University Medical Center  
620 Kober Cogan Hall  
Washington, DC 20007  
Phone: 202-687-1997  
E-mail: mad27@georgetown.edu

**Lisa Goodman, Ph.D.**  
Co-Investigator  
Assistant Professor  
Department of Counseling & Developmental Psychology  
Boston College  
310 Campion Hall  
Chestnut Hill, MA 02467  
Phone: 617-552-1725  
E-mail: goodmalc@bc.edu

**Aileen Worrell, M.S.W.**  
Project Coordinator  
COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, MD 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100 ext 294  
E-mail: aworrell@cosmoscorp.com

**NIJ-MCC Advisory Panel Meeting**  
**March 13, 2003**

**Welcome and Introductions**

**Overview of Grant and Purpose of the Study**

Mary Ann provided an overview of the grant. Some of the impetus was written into the proposal was the debate around gender symmetry. There was an early controversy in late 70s and early 80s that faded away; more recently the debate has come back in terms of women's use of violence, is the violence the same as men, does the violence have the same impact and is it of the same type. The resurgence led us to think about how we address this. Thanks to Mike's work and Evan Stark which point at that not only do we need to look at the different violent acts but also to look at the aspect of coercion. If we can develop some measure of this aspect of coercion perhaps we can gain a better understanding of the difference in violence between women and men. Before we can get to measurement development, we had to get a conceptual framework in place. The first step of the project was to develop a conceptual framework. Second step is measurement development. Third step is the psychometric analysis. Fourth step is to do a preliminary analysis of the instrument with Mike's work to see what does the instrument tell us. Hopefully, this project will provide preliminary work to this question.

Mike shared his thinking regarding the whole issue of coercion and violence. It's important to make a distinction between the types and levels of violence. For his typology, control is imperative and it is important for him to know information about both partners in the relationship. Most instruments do not look at the aspect of control and violence in both partners. Most instruments focus on the violence of one partner. Mike explained the four types of violence: intimate terrorism, which is rare; mutual couple violence; violent resistance; situational couple violence (formerly common couple violence). SCV can be very severe and fatal and can be frequent if there is a pattern of arguing over a particular issue or situation (such as when couples are drinking). Generally, SCV does not contain a pervasive pattern to control. Gender debate came to Mike's attention when he went to Vietnam. What you see in a national survey is situational couple violence but what you see in shelters is intimate terrorism. What you see in the difference between the two types of violence is the results to victims. In the data sets, most of the women are predominate in violent resistant. Same sex distinctions cannot be made because we do not have the data.

Ed wanted to know the level of analysis. He hears that there is a difference in the level of violence but he sees a range of different incidents in his work and patterns that ebb and flow that look like coercion. When do incidents and patterns become an analysis of the relationship?

Mike agreed that Ed raised 4 important questions. He looks at patterns over time or over domains to define a relationship. He is primarily looking at victim reports of violence for

data analysis. The individual versus the dyadic? He is looking at the dyadic data but is making an analysis of the individual.

Walter proposes if you really want to test the typology need to look at item 10 of model regarding motivation. In order to identify the different types of control you need to go to the source of the problem and understand the motivation of the agent.

Mary Ann agreed that we do need to look at that dimension.

Walter states tapping into this will push the argument further.

Lucy stated that understanding the motive of the agent will affect the decision made by the target.

Rose asked Mike what we the aspect that made violence resistance from situation couple violence; Mike responded that the difference is that in violence resistance the batterer is a terrorist.

Leora expressed that there may be other types of violence out there that we are not aware of that has nothing to do with gender symmetry. We should not restrict ourselves to looking at only 4 types of violence. Things are complex and there are different types of relationships with overlap between the types ex., he may be a terrorist but there may be times when she engages in situational couple violence.

Leslye agreed that we need to understand aspect of coercion.

Walter said a lot of the large scale surveys have not been designed to get at this aspect of coercion. People have not looked at the factors of motivation. And we need to look at the question "why" to understand the difference of violence among men and women. There seems to be a golden opportunity to look at the issue of motivation.

Mike continued his discussion of the 4 points Ed raised: continuous versus points in time – when do you cut off the time period you are looking at to assess the relationship. The other point is that: change over time; a particular relationship could change among the different types of violence over time. There is not a lot of work on motivation. Holtzworth and Munroe is his favorite work. Most of Mike's assessments have come from shelter victims. Mike encounters people who are very anxious for a measure.

## **Purpose of the Study**

Mary Ann reviewed the proposal. Conceptually, we came from this grant from the theories of power. The aspects of reward and punishment were studied from the dimension of the coercion. The social aspects of power went into the foundation of the proposal.

The context of violence and coercion is important to include in looking at the conceptual framework. Lisa stressed the difference between immigrant women and other women where “if you don’t do this I will leave you” will have a different impact based on the context (i.e., an immigrant woman who relies on her abuser for everything including communicating).

### **Overview of the Conceptual Model**

Diagram of the model was reviewed. The motivation is an internal process which with a person may or may not have awareness of or insight into. The bold boxes in the model are the essential components of the model. The rest of the model is useful in defining the construct but would not necessarily explain the construct. Setting the stage helps us explain how someone got to this point in time so we can understand why a person would respond the way she did (i.e., if one heard objectively why someone did something they may wonder why someone would do something unless you knew what led up to the event).

Psychological abuse and how it is part of setting the stage was discussed over the listserv discussion. If someone already comes to the relationship with prior incidents that can be exploited by the target, such as child abuse, etc... then that person may be more vulnerable to being coerced.

Separating the two outcomes: Outcome 1 is the perception of the target that the target is willing, able, and ready. Sue and Leslye stressed that the word “perception” will not have an impact with judges because women are always thought to be “making this stuff up.” Sue and Leslye suggested that the word “understanding” would be better.

Softening the target as it expressed in the model seems more pervasive where in reality it is usually more unpredictable and the unpredictability of the situation and the punishment is in itself a “softening” of the target because it keeps the person off guard.

Manipulation may result if coercion does not work. The form of manipulation may make the coercive process easier.

Coercive process involves two processes that are contingent: communication of a demand, request, or expectation; and communication of a threat of meaningful negative consequence. In our definition and measure, we need to struggle with demand, rule, expectation, and the contingent threat or consequence.

Ed thought process was too strong a word, perhaps an act would be better term to look at the act as part of the whole process.

Surveillance also is important to knowing whether the act occurred.

What is also important is the coercive outcome in terms of the response. The response does not define whether it is a coercive act. We can look at whether there is compliance

to something you did not want to do. What if it was something you did not really mind doing, is it really compliance? The affect on the agent may alter changes and coercive process in terms of whether there is compliance or resistance.

How to track change over time? In terms of compliance or resistance, the affect and result will change over time. It's hard to measure this dimension with this methodology. Especially, with violent resistance when a woman will comply for years until finally she physically resists which is not a good response either but she gets labeled as being as abusive as her partner when she was trying to stop the violence.

Social ecology – could ask about a particular strategy she used and why did she choose to use this strategy now. We are also looking at patterns over time. This type of question comes out of Hierarchy of Resort literature in medical anthropology; first you try this when your child is sick, then you do call the doctor if that does not work, etc.

Surveillance – Sarah questioned whether there really has to be surveillance. Some batterers can not be involved in surveillance but accuse their partner of not doing it to keep the crazy making going. Women often cannot predict the outcome of their actions. Surveillance does not necessarily have to happen; she just has to believe it's possible.

If one of the outcomes of the coercive process is to put someone in a subservient position and state of uncertainty. Because the person does not know what you will do next, there is a constant state of uncertainty.

Fighting Back by June Bryant who killed her husband after years of abuse discusses many of these issues.

Walter – batterers often state that they “lost control” and hit her.

Mary Ann – do we want to think about the thing we are measuring as requiring these 3 dimensions of the outcome (1), or focus on the act itself. Walter suggested that open-ended questions could be added to an instrument to understand the act. Rose thought the act was the focus and the surveillance helps explain the act.

Mike – the issue that the judge needs a dichotomy but we will not be able to provide a dichotomy without looking at the patterns and a relationship.

Walter – if you limit it to specific situations, the judge may not buy it but will want to see a pattern.

Mary Ann – does the definition have to have all of the components to be sufficient for judging an act to be coercive.

Walter – a lot of women talk that they see themselves in major of danger of being killed but the coercion they experience is typically beyond the purview of the law.

Rose – it's the act within the context that we are looking at. I would hate to see a laundry list of acts. Doesn't think it is possible to look at the acts outside of the context. We need to be able to look at the coercive process in terms of how meaning is made of the acts.

Mary Ann suggested we get specific about the boxes to see if we A, B, and C to define coercion or is it A, B, or C or can you have B only but A and C help explain B.

Walter thinks coercion will differ among different ethnic groups who's definition of coercion will differ.

Lucy – the tension between the culture and the individual in terms of raising issues.

Walter – once you try to narrow the definition we will exclude a lot of acts that some may consider coercive.

### **Setting the Stage: Creating Expectancy or Developing the Cognitive Set**

Page 5 of the revised model, number 7

The willingness of the agent to engage in a threatened consequence must be communicated to the target. The communication may not be explicit.

The question of whether a person is not only willing to do an act but also able to do it. Ability can be based on many things such as physical strength, access to money or weapons, or ability to use a third party's resources.

Physical size is an important dimension but also age is important. A lot of men will look for a younger woman because she is perceived as easier to manipulate and control. Age should be added as a variable.

Rose – some things are not communicated but are inherent to culture or who and where you are. Methodologically, we can look at both but we need to look at the target's perception of these things. For example, size and age are not communicated but are inherent.

Leslye – how does the understanding of the meaning by the target get formed.

Lisa – it's her understanding of the situation. Some of the things he has never communicated; it is just the way it is.

Walter – from a social context he thinks that will come into play. The studies of bystander involvement in social psychology to see how people will react.

Lucy – the meaning and how it is created so that the target and agent have the same meaning of the act.

Rose – the aspect of ready, willing, and able are good to look at.

Sue – but a lot of people are ready, willing, and able but whether I care or not is important.

Walter – but the social context would get at that.

Sue – felt a lot of women are willing to try a lot of things in terms of being ready, willing, and able but the consequences are insignificant.

Leora – if there was a way to present the information to a judge so you look at both pieces or what both partners do instead of just counting violent acts.

Rose – but that is dangerous.

Lisa – then maybe the Setting the Stage box needs to be bold. It's necessary to understand whether the target has the ability to deliver rather than the ability to try.

Mary Ann - Is the box “Setting the Stage” necessary to have coercion?

Walter – ability to deliver is subjective too.

Lisa – in the eyes of the victim is the target able to carry through on a threat.

Sarah – it appears that we have a very structural model. Would some of the constructs fit better under mediating or moderating factors?

Lisa – it's only my ability to deliver that distinguishes my saying to my child “Go to your room” from him saying “No, you go to your room.”

Walter – you could have variations of coercive control; a broad definition of coercive control with various components. Might want to consider breaking down the one instrument into different components. Then you may have an instrument for each component. So you would have one global scale with subscales that people could use depending on what is indicated by each scenario.

Mary Ann – if we assume for the moment that we have a construct overall and look to see where the individual pieces fit.

Sue – when you start pulling pieces of the model apart to develop separate subscales, my danger flags start going off (Rose agreed) and you begin looking at the situation out of context.

Walter – there is only so much you can administer or measure to individuals.

Rose – if we look at the model overall first instead of cutting it up now I would be less anxious instead of carving up the model into parts now.

Sarah – I’m thinking about moderating and mediating factors and precursors to the act.

Mike – is this discussion similar to the one on the listserv regarding the difference between coercion and control? I may be coercive but was I successful.

Mary Ann – did the agent’s expectation get delivered to the target? Someone could understand the danger and choose to take the risk or not to take the risk.

Mary Ann – if we come back to what is central to coercion, are there pieces of the model that need to be relocated on the model.

Ed – what strikes him is that there are really 3 dimensions: the demand, the threat, and communicate the willingness and ability to carry through on the act. Much of the work they do in the BIP is to identify these 3 dimensions with the batterer. We do not focus on the reasons that lead to the 3 dimensions and the results of the act; but are behaviorally specific.

Walter – you will have these indicators to define whether coercion occurred but at the end of the day a judgement will have to be made. Maybe what needs to be done is to operationalize coercion.

Mary Ann – let’s ponder over lunch whether to move ability over to the Coercive Process box.

Recap – two versions: someone’s understanding of being a target of coercion, and the agent’s motivation. We have a process of coercion now.

Ed – ability also has a component of communication. Do you let the agent know that you have the ability (i.e., you own a gun and you tell the target that you have a gun).

Walter – there is a danger of “everything but the kitchen sink” that can trivialize everything.

### **Softening the Target/Wearing Down Target’s Resistance**

Mary Ann – once a coercive act occurs, it makes someone more vulnerable.

Walter – does that mean we need a linear model: coercive outcome1 to coercive outcome2 and loop back to Softening the target.

Leora – other actions that can be taken into account when setting the stage are things that have an impact much later on such as convincing her to quit her job or criticizing her family and friends leading eventually to cutting them off from their friends and family.

Rachel also said love can be used to soften the target, “oh, stay with me tonight, I love you.” Using the love and jealousy dynamic to get someone “hooked” on the relationship and setting the stage for coercive. Giving gifts and softening someone up so they think they are really being loved but in fact are being softened up.

Joyce – where does the aspect of isolation come in? It’s especially important in rural areas.

Sue – softening someone up creates vulnerability.

Rachel – in cultural context (Latino) women are taught to handle situations in relationships in a certain way (her mother could get her father to do anything she wanted as long as she let him think it was her idea). A lot of times, it may be manipulative but it doesn’t look like it from the outside. The question of what is a demand is difficult. What is the difference between a demand and an expectation?

Leslye – that is the key: what you understand the consequences to be.

Lisa – but it’s more to it than that because if she doesn’t care if he gets angry, than it may not be coercive.

Leora – cultural expectations in terms of gender roles and expectations there are defined roles. Does a particular justify the use of violence? If so, then what? In our own culture/society because nothing or little was done in terms of battering that in itself is a form of tolerance for violence.

Lisa – are we going to define coercion for a community that sees violence as legitimate.

Ed – assumptions (number 2) states that distinguishing “acceptable” versus “unacceptable” forms of coercion is determined by social norms.

Leslye – would like to take the physical aspect (i.e., beating) out of the discussion. She gets uncomfortable when we talk about violence being acceptable by certain cultures because it gets muddied. If we take a beating out of the discussion, is there a negative consequence that the agent experiences other than a beating.

Rachel – need to distinguish between legitimacy versus reality. Violence is not acceptable in Latino culture; we fight that stereotype all the time. We need to take “acceptable” out of the discussion and focus on what she accepts as the reality of the situation or what she understands will be a negative consequence.

Leslye – if you get the behavior and how it affects her that is what is important.

Walter – you will need to let others tailor it to fit their communities.

Lisa – to make the instrument concrete we are going to need concrete items which means culture will come into play because we can't leave culture out but we will have to have concrete items that will be able to be used with people from multiple cultures.

Walter – to develop a standardized measure (9 parts art; one part science) you need to come up with items that will have appeal to the greatest audience.

Ed – or you may come up with a list of items that “trips” something in the person being interviewed so they understand what you are meaning with your question.

Walter – as researchers we are often caught in a quagmire, because people from different ethnic groups are telling them all the time that there is so much variation within their own culture that the questions will not capture all the variation in the community.

Rose – her concern is that you develop a measure that you think is culturally competent and you find variation among the different groups, you think your results are the answer (Latinos are like this and African Americans are like that) but really that may not be the results at all but the instrument is erroneously giving you those results because it did not really capture the true item being measured.

Mike – perhaps explore the idea of having passed a certain number of thresholds to put you in a category of coercive.

Mary Ann – understanding coercion is a flip side of the equation.

Sue – her understanding of the why is key.

Walter – when you want to understand why someone is doing something you need to go to the source, which is the agent. Need to focus most of your attention to the agent in terms of motivation. For data, you can get this information from the target.

Ed – the biggest factor in risk assessments is “likelihood” and he has found that the women are very good at assessing likelihood.

Walter – agree with Ed although likelihood doesn't tell you anything about why.

Sarah – does not see Outcome 1 as a flip side of the act.

Ed – outcome 1 is really risk perception.

Leslye – it seems to be if she sees him as able and feels afraid and if you weigh in the “readiness” piece you may kick out people who actually feel coerced.

Mary Ann – does coercion mean a separate assessment of each component of willingness, ability, and readiness? Everything in the box is about perception or understanding.

Leslye and Mike – include likelihood and take out the “why now” piece.

Ed – the term “communication” indicates that you have a sender and a receiver of communication.

Walter – you are going to have discrepancies between the sexes in terms of accounts of violence.

Mike – agent and target will differ in what they say.

Lisa – initially we will not be administering the instrument to couples so we will not be able to assess the differences.

Lisa – if a woman feels coerced and acts on that perception, isn’t that coercion?

Walter – if you are not interviewing couples, you do not have the interactive data set.

Mike – when you asking about the “why” you will get different answers between the agent and target, but if you focus on the behaviors you will get more agreement.

### Compliance versus Resistance

Mary Ann – the difference between compliance and resistance is not always that clear cut.

Mike – “indirect resistance” can be compliance. Indirect resistance may mean I’m going to go along to mitigate the violence today so that I can plan to leave tomorrow.

Mary Ann – Compliance and resistance are a dichotomy and are melded.

Leora – it’s often a way of coping.

Walter – interactive dynamic; compliance one time, resistance another time. A continuum almost where at first it starts as compliance then leads to resistant compliance to outright resistance.

Lisa – couldn’t all resistance be considered “resistance.” Lisa proposed the term strategic response.

Lucy – suggested adaptive response may be a better term than strategic response.

Walter – thought we will get feedback that compliance initially was done to please their partner.

Mary Ann – the compliance again was to avoid a negative consequence.

Leslye – the negative consequence could be her partner's displeasure.

Mary Ann – the measure may not be able to capture the relationship over time. But could capture the responses over time. With some of the research Lisa and I have done we found that often people placated more over time.

Walter – the measure is also taking “choice” into consideration which is good because we often think of humans as hollow beings.

Leslye – we should get a lot of rich data because often women are seen as doing nothing but they often have done a lot. We should be able to get quantifiable data that would detail some of the strategies women use.

Rose – you will still have women say they did nothing when that is really doing something.

Mary Ann – there are many variations to doing nothing and what would doing nothing look like.

Joyce – external versus internal involvement; it may appear that they are complying externally but internally they are disengaged.

Walter – especially with extreme violence, you will often hear someone say “I left my marriage years ago” when they mean internally because they are still living together.

Ed – passive aggressive behavior is another dynamic.

Mary Ann – you say “sure I'll do it” but you have no intention of doing it.

Rose – you have people saying “I wanted to do that myself, anyway” where it may not appear to be compliance but is a form of passive behavior or lack of insight on the part of the target who did not want to acknowledge the compliance and the reasons for it.

Mary Ann – “I'm not being controlled because I wanted to do it.”

Walter – are you going to ask for outcomes for each coercive act. Mary Ann said no. Then Walter said we may want to ask about the most recent coercive event or what you did most commonly and what was the outcome. Then you be looking at patterning.

Mike – separate from the measurement issue is the level of compliance and resistance.

Lucy – in my own research when I have had to grapple with a tx issue, I have asked “have you ever done this or that” to develop a list.

Sue – is there an assumption that violence has been used in every relationship. Group said no. Perhaps need to know when the violence occurred in the relationship because

the compliance and coercion may have changed after the point of time when violence occurred. Fear in a very direct way is an issue. I can be compliant but not fearful. One of the things between men and women who are violent is the aspect of fear.

Rose – fear and severity of the outcome comes into play with coercive outcome 2 with compliance and resistance.

Lisa – the threat of negative consequences are some of the items we will need to consider.

Rose – the meaning of what people define is “meaningful” is instrumental.

Lisa – what came out to her in doing these interviews was the fear of him leaving the relationship.

Sue – if women are describing that him leaving her is as bad as being beaten or deportation, she doesn’t know what to do with that .

Leslye – there may be no threat of deportation or leaving but a threat of embarrassment or harassment is coercive.

Rose – we want to attempt to tease out what is different from coercion in most everyday relationships from real coercive in violent relationships. Maybe we need to consider what is it about him or her leaving that we need to define (psychological versus pragmatic).

Ed – maybe we want a clinical instrument as opposed to a self-administered instrument.

Mary Ann – we are going to look at the difference between the self report surveys versus the indepth interviews we conduct following the self-report questionnaires.

Ed – In terms of outcome 2, we have looked at what is the agent’s response to the target’s compliance or resistance. Mary Ann stated that was a good point

Walter – severity of the violence is deceiving; Michael D. Smith found that a slap can knock out teeth; a shove can cause a concussion.

Mike – some of the criticisms he has heard about violence against women is that the research leaves out the coercive things that women do.

Leslye – we need to look at the coercive tactics that coexist with violence and social issues and that applies to men and women. Does coercive tactics used by women also include threats to deport someone, take away the kids, kill you, etc. We may find that threats to leave the relationship are as devastating to the target as the other threats but the research may also lead to controlling patterns of behavior that is quantifiably different for targets and agents.

Rose – suppose we have a range of things that are considered threatening and we find out that women are as coercive as men – so what. I’m interested in how the coercion is different. If we tease out the differences, perhaps we can come up with some indicators that tells us something about the severity of the violence.

Ed – the end point will be different for men and women because of all the contextual things. We don’t know from the model what the outcome of Box 5 will be. Men are more likely to become physical.

Rachel – shared having been in a coercive relationship without the violence. “I will never leave you” is the coercive tactic used in her relationship. She was told “I will kill myself” if you leave and I will never leave you unless you make me. The coercion plays on you and never leaves you – 15 years later the feeling is still with her.

Leslye and Rachel – how do you capture that feeling that 20 years later I am still afraid as a result of the coercive relationship. How has your life changed?

Walter – the issue of surveillance is important. How many men are hunted down by the ex-partners and killed?

Ed – we can let the target decide on the severity of the coercion and how it is affecting her life. I think Dobash’s instrument is trying to do that to capture fear and uncertainty. The fear can vary based on the severity of the coercion.

Rachel – look at the outcome in terms of how it affects the quality of your life.

Walter – coercion and control are very different based on gender. The rest of the instrument will uncover the difference. Degrees of seriousness will show a sharp difference based on power and the ability of men to exercise more power and have access to more resources than women generally.

Sue – does the threat to leave the relationship actually control the behavior?

Lisa – is it control when the threat makes the target change her behavior?

Rachel – it’s control when you have to think about your behavior.

Walter – or perhaps if it changes your biology or physiology; example when a friend of his hears a racial remark, it ruins his week.

Mary Ann – I wonder when I think of Coercive Outcome 1 it seems that it’s just trying to measure the understanding of coercion but if we consider that state of being “controlled”.

Leora – son told her country music on the radio was child abuse.

Ed – definition of control on page 1 of the draft model (section 4) presses us more to define coercion. Coercion and control can be a noun or adjective.

Mike – the Dobash's Quality of Life instrument is worth looking at as a possible way to measure the aspect of 15 years later she is still afraid.

Lisa – by definition anyone who is controlled is being coerced. So we need to pick one. I think what women experience they have more choice. Women would not want to say that I am being controlled always.

Mary Ann – one could ask control of what? Control of my behavior, thoughts, or what aspects. Get at not only that a person has engaged in a coercive act but it altered her thoughts and actions.

Sue – if we say every aspect of coercion is a form of control then it worries me that we look at all demands as coercive. People make demands all the time.

Rachel – that's why we have to couple it with the quality of life issue. Looking at one without the other is where you get lost.

Rose – there is coercion that matters and that does not.

Rachel – it's the what it does to you that matters.

Leslye – the items would be did it change my behavior, affect your life.

Lucy – the target makes every decision thinking of the agent first.

Mike – the aspect of violence.

Lisa and Leora – that it's an empirical question.

Tomorrow – look at measurement development.

**NIJ-MCC Advisory Panel Meeting**  
**March 14, 2003**

Mary Ann – reviewed changes to model (schematic).

Ed – the word “request” doesn’t work for him because it’s usually not a request that the target do something.

Leora – perhaps the word “instruct” would fit better or to put request in quotes.

Mike – I’ve added a box labeled “increased expectancy” that increases over time from past experiences.

Walter – asked how we were going to test the model.

Mary Ann – this is a conceptual model and we will not be able to test the model as it is in this state. The model attempts to look at coercion in the social context.

Leora – given the demand and threat; may need to consider the cultural context regarding whether the expectation is legitimate in that culture.

Lucy – an example could be dress, in some cultures women’s dress is proscribed and if the envelope is being pushed then a particular culture may deem it appropriate for the man to intervene and demand that his wife dress more appropriate.

Walter – ask within your sociodemographic section, what culture do you identify with. Often we are asked about racial identity, people will respond American or White Canadian, etc so you may want closed categories.

Leora – culture is something to consider in the results.

Mary Ann – we could ask how they or their group identify a “demand” based on their legitimacy. We would not define the demand as coercion.

Rose – so what do we do with this?

Leora – the information could be used so it does not discriminate against someone or a particular culture. It makes you take into consideration how the results fit in with a particular culture.

Walter – the sample will contain a variety of people so chances are you will get primarily from European background. You may not be able to get all the representation from the different ethnic groups.

Ed – I thought a lot of this information would come from the social context.

Leslye – I have concern about what people think is legitimate and where is that going to get us. A lot of time people are told something is legitimate when it is not. I don't know if we need to go there.

Leora – I think this has relevance in terms of interventions. If people are told that something is legitimate, then we need to be aware of this when providing services or trying to help victims.

Sue – the word legitimate makes her nervous.

Mary Ann – would the word “approve” be better. Would people in your culture approve of your doing this?

Rose – the word culture is so broad; community means different things to different people.

Walter – I think we need to broaden the definition. Ask an open ended question, what ethnic or cultural group do you identify with? Someone within a particular community such as the Hmong may want to tailor the questionnaire to their culture.

Lisa – asking if people in your community would think this is an okay way to behave would be a good question.

Mary Ann – when we have left the ethnic question open, then we have gotten responses such as “Baptist” so it’s worked better to provide closed categories.

Ed – on the surveillance box on the model; the range that can be involved in surveillance. Some people just surmise; a lot of men act as judge, jury, and executioner/prosecutor (see Barbara Hart). A lot of men don’t need the evidence from surveillance because they have already have made up their mind. They know you can’t be trusted so they do not have to conduct surveillance.

Lucy – suggested that verification might be a better word for surveillance and surveillance would be a subset of verification.

Mary Ann reviewed draft instrument (tab 7)

Mary Ann – attempting to tap into each of the constructs being assessed. Are these the correct constructs and the correct domains?

Rose – what concerns me about asking how important this is to you. Once there is a threat involved, then that sets the frame for whether you wanted to do something or not.

Leora – how would you distinguish between a relationship where one partner tells the other something to do and the other does it willingly from one that is overall controlling.

Mary Ann – the demands by themselves are not enough to judge coercion. For example, could you lower the shades are not in itself coercive unless there is also a threat of negative consequences. If it is something I really want to do then you can't coerce me. The importance of the target's actions are related to the severity of the threat. Example, yes, I wanted to do it because I did not want to die or get beat up.

Rose and Mary Ann – suggested leaving out how important this was to you from the questionnaire.

Sarah – expressed concern in terms of sexual assault when the issue of consensual sex is raised.

Walter – Mary Koss's measures of sexual assault are very good to identify whether someone wanted to engage in sexual encounters.

Walter – suggested an expansion of the preamble to let respondents know what we are looking for with our questions.

Mary Ann – what about the domains or potential items.

Sue – the range of the demands that batterers expect is so broad and a lot of those things are not included in these items. Perhaps we could include another category.

Mary Ann – I agree that the list is endless.

Sarah – is it important to include every little type of incident or to get a sample of responses from a range of people. When we do pilot tests, we include another category and if a particular item keeps coming up then we add it to the questionnaire.

Walter – those that use supplementary open-ended questions increase the responses they get from participants.

Lisa – will these items provide a continuous score.

Mary Ann – that raises the question how do you construct the score.

Ed – some of these are psychometric questions that may become clearer.

Mary Ann – I think we can construct the score as we go along.

Sarah – some of the problems to come from how you use these scores together. Lisa agreed.

Leslye – so you are trying to weigh how bad the incident.

Leora – do you also want to add “kept you from doing something.”

Mary Ann – we did that during the ethnographic interviews and it became cumbersome.

Sarah – you may need to have more specificity; some of the questions are too abstract. Example: “related to leaving or staying in the house” is not concrete enough for people to respond.

Walter – agreed with Sarah but also stressed that you want to get the multiplicity of the responses. You may want to include some examples in parenthesis but keep it broad to get as many types of incidents.

Rachel – you may want to include “how you use money.”

Sue – how you use the car is another one; having sex with others.

Walter – pornography is a big one.

Rose – whether she can participate in outside activities.

Leslye – whether she can do an activity without being monitored.

Rachel – is she allowed to do things by herself or on her own.

Ed – coerced to use alcohol or drugs, perform illegal acts.

Rachel – health needs to be added; some men prevent women from coming to clinic by selling car, discourage them from losing weight or encourage them to lose weight.

Ed – can use other under each domain to get a list of items instead of adding too many and making the instrument too lengthy.

Rose – need to change the word “important.”

Walter – put it in the preamble.

Lisa – is there a way to cut or combine some of these items so it is not as lengthy.

Leora – there is; she has seen it done with the CTS. Group the items into what you consider logical groups.

Sue – if you grouped the items I think you could lose the nuances.

Walter – don’t rank items by severity.

Mary Ann – do we want to know how much they did or did not want to do something?

Walter – I don't think it's important to include that question.

Lucy – may not be able to answer this question now; try a pilot and see what you get.

Sue – I think the importance part is key. I think it's important to know this information before going to the next step.

Rachel – from a qualitative point, I don't think I would know what this meant. I don't think this will get that information for you.

Mary Ann – reviewed the perceived threat (Item b).

Ed and Sue – asked for clarification for discrete threats.

Mike – you are trying to maintain the contingency with the demands.

Mary Ann – agreed. Want to distinguish between a relationship in which there are demands but no threats and threats but no demands.

Ed – it seems that you ask have these things happen to you then you ask how likely these things would happen if you did not do what you wanted.

Sarah – Mark Warr (1985, J of Social Problems) has developed an instrument on these type of questions.

Leslye – the threat of deportation needs to be included in list on page 2 and never to see kids again (which is different from taking them away), threatening to destroy papers or things they brought away from their country.

Walter – threatening with notification of authorities regarding public housing or threatening to do something so she loses her job.

Leora – there could be other threats in terms of exposure (outing, telling your employer that you have mental problems).

Ed – a methodological point is that it seems like all we have done is elaborate all the controlling and threats that are out there. It seems there should be something more. The instrument doesn't seem to give us the dimension of coercion we are trying to get at.

Mike – in one way everything we have is in the control wheel but this theoretical framework made me realize why we need all these things in there to have a coercive relationship. The whole top row of boxes are coercion.

Ed – why not use the power and control wheel.

Rachel – there is something missing; there seems to be more going on; there is something that makes this relationship coercive. I think it's going to be difficult to measure that aspect.

Walter – Page 7 of proposal states what coercion implies and requires. When you bring up the thing power; you got to have something about the person's power. Not only to have enough power to punish but the target's perception of power becomes critical.

Lisa – doesn't likelihood and ability imply that the person has the power?

Rose – it depends on whether we are talking about the bolded boxes or concrete coercive acts.

Lisa – you need to ask about the threat with the acts so it's contingency. The threat with a demand is needed to capture the contingency.

Mary Ann – you need the demand and the threat plus the ability to carry through.

Lisa – could you ask for threats within each domain.

Ed – it gets you closer.

Rose – why would you need to know for each demand the specific threat.

Mike – I'm hearing 3 different levels of specificity: for each demand, what was the threat; if you had demands and you had threats; and then the more general by domains and asking what were the threats in each domain.

Sue – it still doesn't get to implied threat and I don't know how you're going to get that.

Lisa – could have 3 columns with the acts, threats, and your understanding of the threat.

Mary Ann – instead of measuring two co-occurring sets of behaviors, we need to connect the demand with the threat. Does she think these things are just going to happen or does she think that these things are going to happen if she doesn't comply.

Mike – the contingency is central. Can we ask straight out if you didn't do this did you think something would happen?

Lisa – but how does this get at the implied threat.

Walter – patterning will get you to the information you want.

Lisa – the laundry list of items may give us the pervasiveness of the coercion.

Walter – may want to ask about relationships that occurred within the past 2 years or over a lifetime.

Mary Ann – do we ask for an index relationship or across relationships?

Walter – ask across relationships; have you ever had a relationship in which this happened.

Mike – that approach is risky because you get a lot of different responses that you will not be able to connect.

Lisa and Sarah – we think we need to ask about a particular relationship. Sarah tried asking about any relationship they have had and the data was not compelling.

Walter – if you are going to look at people in cohabitating relationships; people drift in and out of relationships all the time.

Joyce – if you focus on most recent relationship than you get the specificity you want and you may under detect.

Walter – asking for all relationships, then we get to the prevalence of coercion.

Mike – we want to get at the incidence and pattern of coercion in a relationship and that's why we need to focus on one relationship.

Lisa – Mike, have you defined when a pattern is a pattern.

Mike – I have discussed it but have not defined it. You can do cluster analysis and look at the relationship between that and a simple scale.

Ed – there is something about the frequency of these things over a period of time.

Walter – if you have a large number in each subset of the population; what are you going to say – will you generalize to the population.

Mike – think you can ask community sample about most recent relationship and ask identified victims or batterers about their violent relationship. It is important to have more of the checklist from existing surveys should be in our questionnaire to check to see if things are highly correlated.

Walter – Smith's instrument on attitudes toward women is a good measure.

Lisa – what instruments are important to include to help us understand coercion: autonomy will be low when coercion is high for discriminant validity but how do you measure autonomy in relationship in which the partner does not want to be autonomous.

Sarah – ambivalent sexism by Glick and Fiske instrument.

Ed – rationalizations and minimalization are two areas where we think this “typifies” batterers.

Leora – a curious thing she came across was the National Comorbidity Study that looked at psychiatric illness but they also included the CTS and she came across a variable that asked about power in a relationship: The questions were “in your relationship, who has more say in making a final decision you or your spouse? Who has more power you or your spouse? Then there was a range of the power you have in the relationship. The ones that felt they had no control, had the most violence.

Walter – Blood and Wolfe’s instrument is the one Leora was referring to.

Ed – what comes first to mind is the Straus and Gelles measure where they found two extremes. Narcissism with the inflated self esteem shows up predominately.

Mike – Holtzworth Monroe found this to be the case.

Leora – a study she did which will appear in VAW she found two predictors of male violence: little to no male peer support and alcohol use.

Walter – he has five measures that test for indebtedness that he will send to Lisa.

Leora – thinks the coercive control instrument will be able to pick up the discrepancy between actions and what they believe.

Walter – power and sex go hand in hand. Sex is the number one source seen as coercion by men and this is where you will see the most entitlement by men.

Ed – a way to get this contingency may be to put two columns and have severity of threat from zero to five and the degree of the likelihood. Then ask the type of demand. The demand itself isn’t as important as the severity of the threat. The severity is in the tactic. The demand is the door you go in first.

Rose – I think we lose something with this approach because if I think you are going to do something then the threat is more severe.

Mary Ann – what if go to consequences which are tied to the agent (consequences to him).

## **Appendix I**

Transmittal E-Mail and Consensus Rating Survey

## **Appendix I**

### **TRANSMITTAL EMAIL AND CONSENSUS RATINGS SURVEY**

# **National Institute of Justice**

## ***Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence***

August 22, 2003

Re: Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

### **REQUEST TO PARTICIPATE IN CONSENSUS RATINGS**

Dear Colleague:

We are requesting your assistance in our efforts to develop a measure of nonviolent coercive control. We are developing and validating this measure as part of the project, 'Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence,' which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As part of this project, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts. Now, we are requesting your assistance; the input of professionals in the field is the final important step in finalizing the development of this measure prior to validation testing.

We are requesting that you complete a consensus rating survey. The survey asks you to rate the extent to which items on the newly developed measure capture the construct of coercive control. You may complete the survey online at <http://www.cosmoscorp.com/mcc/>. For your convenience, both e-mail and plain text versions of the survey are attached to this message. The consensus ratings survey will take approximately 10-15 minutes to complete. We are hopeful that you can complete and submit the survey by September 10, 2003.

If you have any questions or concerns, please contact our project coordinator, Darci Terrell, at (405) 969-3078; dterrell@cosmoscorp.com. Thank you again for your assistance on this important project.

Sincerely,

Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D., Principal Investigator  
Lisa Goodman, Ph.D., Co-Principal Investigator

Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Professor  
Department of Psychiatry  
620 Kober Cogan Hall  
Georgetown University  
Washington, D.C. 20007  
Phone: (202) 687-1997

Lisa Goodman, Ph.D.  
Assistant Professor  
Department of Counseling Psychology  
Boston College  
140 Commonwealth Avenue  
Chestnut Hill, MA 02467  
Phone: (617) 552-1725

# National Institute of Justice

## *Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence*

**Instructions    Section A    Section B    Section C    Section D    Section E**

You must click the button at the bottom of each page in order to save your answers.

Thank You for taking the time to complete this questionnaire. The purpose of this survey is to collect information from a wide range of professionals who work with intimate partner violence to assess how well each item in the questionnaire measures the construct of coercive control. Your responses will help us develop an instrument to measure coercive control in intimate partner relationships. At the end of the survey, space is provided for you to share your comments about the questionnaire (e.g., wording of statements or omissions that should be included, etc.)

### **INSTRUCTIONS:**

- Please use the final question to share your comments about the questionnaire itself.
- If desired, use the Print button on the last page to create a personal report.
- When finished, use the Submit button on the last page to send your responses.

### **CONTACT INFORMATION:**

COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, MD 20814  
Attn: Darci Terrell  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
E-mail: [dterrell@cosmoscorp.com](mailto:dterrell@cosmoscorp.com)  
Fax: 301-215-6969

### **ELECTRONIC VERSIONS:**

If you prefer to print the questionnaire, an electronic version of the IPV Questionnaire is available for download via the links below. These may be printed, mailed, sent as an e-mail attachment, or faxed to the contact person listed above.

- IPV Questionnaire (MS Word format)
- IPV Questionnaire (WordPerfect format)
- IPV Questionnaire (Adobe Acrobat, PDF, format)
- IPV Questionnaire (Rich Text format)

### **IDENTIFYING INFORMATION**

Items marked with an asterisk\* are required.

<b>First Name:</b>	<input type="text"/>	*
<b>Last Name:</b>	<input type="text"/>	*
<b>E-mail Address:</b>	<input type="text"/>	
<b>Profession:</b>	Select from this list:	<input type="button" value="▼"/>
<b>Or enter another category:</b> <input type="text"/>		

The submit button for this information is at the bottom of the page.

## **DEFINITIONS OF INTIMATE PARTNER COERCIVE CONTROL**

**COERCIVE THREAT:** Communication of a credible threat of a contingent and meaningful negative consequence for an intimate partner's noncompliance with an expectation or demand.

You will be asked to make ratings concerning two components required to define coercive threats: 1) expectations or demands, and 2) threatened negative consequences required to define "coercive threat."

### **1) Partner's expectations or demands**

We assume that expectations (and sometimes demands) are part of most intimate relationships. Thus, we do not believe that the nature of the demand or expectation, alone, defines coercion. However, we are interested to know about the breadth and types of demands or expectations made by an intimate partner who also makes threats for noncompliance. Thus, we ask you to rate how much you agree that each item should be included in a list of things a partner might demand or expect from the other in this context. We also ask for suggestions of other items reflecting expectations or demands made by an intimate partner.

### **2) Partner's threatened contingent negative consequences for noncompliance**

This is the core element we will use to measure coercive control. Regardless of what is expected or demanded, if one communicates a threat for noncompliance, we consider it to be a coercive threat. We ask you to rate how much you agree that each item should be included as a threatened consequence for noncompliance. We also ask for suggestions of other items reflecting threatened contingent negative consequences made by an intimate partner.

**COERCIVE CONTROL SURVEILLANCE METHODS:** One partner's surveillance of the other following the communication of an expectations or demand.

Sometimes a partner will check to see whether the other person did what he (or she) expected or demanded. We ask you to rate how much you agree that each item should be included as a method of doing this checking. We also ask for suggestions for other items reflecting methods of surveillance of demands or expectations by an intimate partner.

**THIRD-PARTY INVOLVEMENT IN INTIMATE PARTNER COERCIVE CONTROL:** Communication of a third party's involvement in enforcing a demand or expectation.

Sometimes a partner will threaten to involve a third party in enforcing a demand - or delivering a threatened contingent negative consequence for noncompliance. We ask you to rate how much you agree that each item should be included as someone who one partner might threaten to involve in coercive threats.

**COMPLIANCE OR RESISTANCE TO COERCIVE THREAT:** A partner's response to the communication of a credible threat of contingent and meaningful negative consequence for noncompliance with an expectation or demand.

A partner who receives coercive threats may respond in a number of ways. We ask you to rate how much you agree that each item should be included as possible response to a coercive threat. We also ask for suggestions of other items reflecting responses to a coercive threat by an intimate partner.

[Submit Identifying Information and go to Section A](#)

[Cancel and Leave](#)

# National Institute of Justice

## *Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence*

Instructions

Section A

Section B

Section C

Section D

Section E

You must click the button at the bottom of each page in order to save your answers.

### CONSENSUS REVIEWER RATINGS

#### SECTION A. - Partner's Expectations or Demands

The first set of questions pertains to a list of demands or expectations that one partner may make of the other under the threat of a hurtful consequence for noncompliance. For each activity listed, please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that the item should be included to measure "demand or expectation" involved in coercive threat.

1= Strongly disagree

2= Disagree

3= Neither agree or disagree

4= Agree

5= Strongly agree

#### Types of Activities

1	2	3	4	5
---	---	---	---	---

#### Personal activities

1. Leaving the house.	<input type="radio"/>				
2. Eating.	<input type="radio"/>				
3. Where I sleep.	<input type="radio"/>				
4. When I sleep.	<input type="radio"/>				
5. What clothes I wear.	<input type="radio"/>				
6. Going out socially without my partner.	<input type="radio"/>				
7. Using TV, radio, or the Internet.	<input type="radio"/>				
8. Viewing sexually explicit material.	<input type="radio"/>				
9. Bathing or using the bathroom.	<input type="radio"/>				
10. Answering the phone when my partner calls.	<input type="radio"/>				
11. What I read.	<input type="radio"/>				

#### Support/Social life/Family

12. Talking to others on the phone.	<input type="radio"/>				
13. Spending time with friends or family members.	<input type="radio"/>				
14. Going to church, school, or other community activities.	<input type="radio"/>				
15. Talking to a counselor, clergy, or someone else about personal or family matters.	<input type="radio"/>				

**Household**

16. Taking care of the house.		<input type="radio"/>				
17. Buying or preparing foods.		<input type="radio"/>				
18. Where I live.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Work/Economics/Resources**

19. Working or not.		<input type="radio"/>				
20. Having a particular kind of job.		<input type="radio"/>				
21. Amount of time spent working.		<input type="radio"/>				
22. Spending money using credit cards.		<input type="radio"/>				
23. Learning another language.		<input type="radio"/>				
24. Going to school.		<input type="radio"/>				
25. Using the car or truck.		<input type="radio"/>				
26. Using the checkbook.		<input type="radio"/>				
27. Talking to my partner when he (or she) is at work.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Health**

28. Using street drugs.		<input type="radio"/>				
29. Using alcohol.		<input type="radio"/>				
30. Going to the doctor.		<input type="radio"/>				
31. Taking medication or prescription drugs.		<input type="radio"/>				
32. Using birth control.		<input type="radio"/>				
33. Having an abortion.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Intimate Relationship**

34. Separating or leaving the relationship.		<input type="radio"/>				
35. Having sex.		<input type="radio"/>				
36. Talking with my partner.		<input type="radio"/>				
37. Spending time with my partner.		<input type="radio"/>				
38. Doing certain sexual behaviors.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Legal**

39. Opening mail.		<input type="radio"/>				
40. Talking to police or other legal authorities.		<input type="radio"/>				
41. Doing things that are against the law.		<input type="radio"/>				
42. Carrying a gun or knife.		<input type="radio"/>				
43. Talking to child protection authorities.		<input type="radio"/>				
44. Talking to landlord or housing authorities.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Children/Parenting**

45. Taking care of children.		<input type="radio"/>				
46. Disciplining the children.		<input type="radio"/>				
47. Making everyday decisions about the children.		<input type="radio"/>				
48. Making important decisions about the children.		<input type="radio"/>				
49. Getting pregnant.		<input type="radio"/>				

**Please list and rate any other demands or expectations:**

50. Other 1: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				
51. Other 2: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				
52. Other 3: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				

**53. Concensus Rater:** Please list any other demands or expectations that you think would be examples of coercive control and that you would like to suggest be added to the list.



**Save and Continue**

**SECTION B. - Partner's Surveillance Methods**

Following is a list of things that someone may do to check to see whether his or her partner complied with a demand or expectation. For each item, please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that the item should be included to measure "surveillance" as a component of coercive threats.

1= Strongly disagree  
2= Disagree  
3= Neither agree or disagree  
4= Agree  
5= Strongly agree

**Types of Things to Check Compliance**

1. Called you on the phone.	<input type="radio"/>				
2. Checked the car (odometer, where parked).	<input type="radio"/>				
3. Asked children or someone else.	<input type="radio"/>				
4. Told you to report your behavior to him (or her).	<input type="radio"/>				
5. Used audio or video tape recorder.	<input type="radio"/>				
6. Checked your clothing.	<input type="radio"/>				
7. Checked the house.	<input type="radio"/>				
8. My partner didn't need to check; my partner just acted like he (or she) knew.	<input type="radio"/>				
9. Other: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				

**10. Concensus Rater:** Please list other things that someone may have actually done to check to see whether his (or her) partner complied with a request or demand.



**Save and Continue**

### SECTION C. - Threatened Negative Consequences

Following is a list of the types of things someone could do (or try to do) if his or her partner did not comply with a demand or expectation. For each type of consequence, please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that the item should be included to measure coercive threats.

1= Strongly disagree

2= Disagree

3= Neither agree or disagree

4= Often or a lot of the time

5= Strongly agree

#### Types of Consequences

	1	2	3	4	5
1. Say something mean or hurtful to you.	<input type="radio"/>				
2. Embarrass or humiliate you.	<input type="radio"/>				
3. Say something mean or hurtful to your friends or family members.	<input type="radio"/>				
4. Keep you from seeing or talking to family or friends.	<input type="radio"/>				
5. Tell someone else personal or private information about you.	<input type="radio"/>				
6. Keep you from leaving the house.	<input type="radio"/>				
7. Physically hurt you.	<input type="radio"/>				
8. Try to kill you.	<input type="radio"/>				
9. Scare you.	<input type="radio"/>				
10. Physically hurt a friend or family member.	<input type="radio"/>				
11. Have sex with someone else.	<input type="radio"/>				
12. Try to kill a friend or family member.	<input type="radio"/>				
13. Leave the relationship or get a divorce.	<input type="radio"/>				
14. Not let you take medication.	<input type="radio"/>				
15. Put you in a mental hospital.	<input type="radio"/>				
16. Destroy or take something that belongs to you.	<input type="radio"/>				
17. Cause you to lose your job.	<input type="radio"/>				
18. Keep you from going to work.	<input type="radio"/>				
19. Cause you to lose your housing.	<input type="radio"/>				
20. Destroy you financially.	<input type="radio"/>				
21. Destroy legal papers.	<input type="radio"/>				
22. Threaten you with legal trouble.	<input type="radio"/>				
23. Have you arrested.	<input type="radio"/>				
24. Threaten to have you deported.	<input type="radio"/>				
25. Not let you see your child or take your children from you.	<input type="radio"/>				
26. Physically hurt or kill your pet or other animal.	<input type="radio"/>				

27. **Concensus Rater:** Please list any other things that someone would do or try to do if his or her partner did not comply with a request or a demand.

Save and Continue

## Section D. - Third-Party Involvement

Following is a list of persons that a partner may get to help him (or her) enforce a demand or carry out a threatened negative consequence against the other partner. Please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that the following items should be included to measure third-party involvement in coercive threats.

- 1= Strongly disagree
- 2= Disagree
- 3= Neither agree or disagree
- 4= Agree
- 5= Strongly agree

### Types of People

	1	2	3	4	5
1. Police, prosecutor, judge, probation officer, or someone else in the justice system.	<input type="radio"/>				
2. Minister, priest, rabbi, or other spiritual leader.	<input type="radio"/>				
3. Your partner's friend or family member.	<input type="radio"/>				
4. Your friend or family member.	<input type="radio"/>				
5. Doctor, nurse, counselor, or someone else in health care.	<input type="radio"/>				
6. INS	<input type="radio"/>				
7. IRS	<input type="radio"/>				
8. Mafia	<input type="radio"/>				
9. Other: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				

10. **Concensus Rater:** Please list other people that someone may get help from to do any of the types of consequences above.

[Save and Continue](#)

## SECTION E. - Response to Coercive Threats

Following is a list of ways one may respond when his or her partner makes a coercive threat. For each item, please indicate on a scale of 1 (strongly disagree) to 5 (strongly agree) the extent to which you agree that each of the following items should be included to measure partner's response to a coercive threat.

1= Strongly disagree  
2= Disagree  
3= Neither agree or disagree  
4= Agree  
5= Strongly agree

Types of Responses	1	2	3	4	5
1. Did what my partner wanted, even though I didn't want to.	<input type="radio"/>				
2. Told myself that I wanted to do what my partner wanted, even though I originally didn't want to.	<input type="radio"/>				
3. Did nothing - did not do what my partner wanted.	<input type="radio"/>				
4. Told my partner I wasn't going to do it.	<input type="radio"/>				
5. Tried to talk my partner out of wanting me to do it.	<input type="radio"/>				
6. Resisted doing what my partner wanted by trying to buy time.	<input type="radio"/>				
7. Sought help from someone else to resist doing what my partner wanted me to do.	<input type="radio"/>				
8. Resisted doing what my partner wanted in some other way.	<input type="radio"/>				
9. Distracted my partner so he (or she) forgot about what he (or she) wanted me to do.	<input type="radio"/>				
10. Other: <input type="text"/>	<input type="radio"/>				

11. **Concensus Rater:** Please list any other ways someone may respond when his or her partner threatened to do something hurtful if he or she did not do what his or her partner demanded or expected.

Please share any comments you would like to make about the questionnaire  
(e.g., wording of statements or omissions that should be included, etc.).

[Save and Continue](#)

## **Appendix J**

Coercive Control Survey, In-depth Interview Protocol, and Consent Forms

J-1 Coercive Control Survey Consent Form and Questionnaire

J-2 In-depth Interview Consent Form and Protocol

J-3 Coercive Control Survey Consent Form and Questionnaire—Spanish

J-4 In-depth Interview Consent Form, Protocol, and Debriefing—Spanish

## **Appendix J-1**

Coercive Control Survey Consent Form and Questionnaire

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Consent to Participate in Research**

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Darci Terrell                                   **Telephone:** 405-969-3078  
**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

*The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board office: 202-687-1506.*

**Introduction:** You are invited to consider participating in this research study. We will be evaluating aspects of control in relationships. This form will describe the purpose and nature of the study, its possible risks and benefits, other options available to you, and your rights as a participant in the study. Please take whatever time you need to discuss the study with anyone you care to talk with. The decision to participate or not is yours. If you decide to participate, please sign and date the last line of this form.

**Background and purpose of the study:** We are conducting this study to better understand ways in which men and women's attempts to control each other affect their relationships. Prior studies on violent relationships have focused mostly on the level of violence in the relationship and not as much on the level of control in the relationship. By conducting this study, we hope to learn about the differences in violent couples beyond the level of violence alone.

**Total number of people:** A total of about 600 people will take part in this phase of the study.

**General plan of the study:** Researchers will administer questionnaires to individuals over 18 years of age. It should take you about one hour to fill out the questionnaire and we will provide a space where you can do so in privacy. You will be asked to answer such questions as "Were there times in your relationship when you felt controlled by your partner?" After you fill out the questionnaire, we will spend a few minutes talking about what participating in this study was like for you. If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have after completing the questionnaire, we will give you information about resources where you can talk with someone.

**Length of the study for each subject:** We expect that you will be in the study for one hour.

**Possible benefits of participating in the study:** There are no direct benefits to you for participating in this study. However, the information you share with us during the study will help us to understand more about relationships where one or both partners attempt to control the other. The results of this study will also be helpful to improve the effectiveness of intervention programs.

**Possible risks of participating in the study:** If your partner finds out about your participation in the study, you could be at increased risk if he or she chooses to retaliate in some way. Also, the questions in the questionnaire may raise uncomfortable or upsetting issues for you. However, you may find that having the opportunity to think about your experiences is helpful to you in some way, although participation in this study is not considered counseling or any other type of therapeutic service.

**Who can participate in the study:** Anyone over 18 years of age who is in a relationship in which at least one incident of violence has occurred within the last 12 months may participate in the study.

**Confidentiality of the data collected during the study:** Your responses to the interview questions will remain confidential. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded on the questionnaire you fill out. This form will be stored in a locked cabinet separately from your completed questionnaire. The researcher will code your questionnaire with a number. The researcher will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The questionnaire will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. Only the research team will have access to the questionnaire. No names or identifying details will be used in any publication or other documents resulting from this study. All data collected from this study will be presented as a group, so that no one can identify any one individual within the study.

If you tell us of a child who is being abused or of your intent to harm someone else or yourself, we are obligated break to report that information to the appropriate authorities.

**HIPPA Compliance:** This project does not involve obtaining any information about you from any medical or other health care records.

**Costs to you for participating:** There are no costs to you for participating in this study.

**Payments to you for participating:** You will be paid \$20 for your time for participating in this study, and additionally, by completing and submitting the survey you will be eligible to receive one of three \$100 raffles. Also, if needed, child care and transportation costs of up to \$10 will be provided.

**Your rights as a participant in the study:** Participation in this study is entirely voluntary. You have the right to leave the study at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. Leaving the study will not result in any penalty or loss of benefits to which you are entitled. Should you decide to leave the study, just tell the interviewer that you no longer wish to participate.

**Questions:** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Dr. Mary Ann Dutton at 202-687-1997. If you have any questions about your rights as a research subject, call the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board office at 202-687-1506.

**Investigator's statement:** I have fully explained this study to the subject. I have discussed the procedures, the possible risks and benefits, the standard and research aspects of the study, and have answered all of the questions that the subject and the subject's family members have asked.

Signature of investigator \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

**Subject's consent**

I have read the information provided in this Informed Consent Form or it was read to me by the investigator. All my questions were answered to my satisfaction. I voluntarily agree to participate in this study.

[Upon signing, you will receive a copy of this form. The original will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study.]

Your signature \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Signature of investigator/witness \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_



# SECTION 1

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

1. What is your age?

1a. What is your sex?      Male       Female

2. What is your ethnicity/race?

Shade in all that apply

- African American/Black
- Caucasian
- Latina/Latino
- Asian American or Pacific Islander
- American Indian
- Other \_\_\_\_\_

2a. In which country were you born?  
\_\_\_\_\_

2b. If other than U.S., how many years have you lived in the US?

3. How many children do you have?

4. What is your job situation?

Shade in all that apply

- Working full-time
- Working part-time
- In the military
- Unemployed
- Retired and not working
- A student
- A homemaker
- Other \_\_\_\_\_

5. Are you receiving any federal or state assistance?       No       Yes

34632



34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**6. What is the highest level of school you have completed?**

*Shade in only one circle*

- Less than 8th grade
- 9th grade
- 10th grade
- 11th grade
- 12th grade
- Trade school
- Some college (or in college)
- 2 Year Associates Degree
- 4 Year College Degree (BA/BS)
- Attended graduate school

**7. Including income from all sources, such as work, child support, public assistance, and family help, about how much money did you personally receive in 2002 before taxes?**

*Shade in only one circle*

- Less than \$5,000
- \$5,000 to \$10,000
- \$11,000 to \$15,000
- \$16,000 to \$20,000
- \$21,000 to \$25,000
- \$26,000 to \$30,000
- \$31,000 to \$35,000
- \$36,000 to \$40,000
- \$41,000 to \$45,000
- \$46,000 to \$50,000
- \$51,000 to \$55,000
- Over \$55,000

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

8. Are you currently involved with an intimate partner?       No       Yes - (if yes, skip to question 8b)

8a. If you are not currently involved with an intimate partner, how long has it been since you were involved in your most recent relationship with an intimate partner?

*Shade in only one circle*

Less than 6 months ago     6 months to 12 months ago     1 to 2 years ago

8b. How long have you been involved in your current relationship or, if you are not currently in an intimate relationship, how long were you involved in your most recent intimate relationship?

*Shade in only one circle*

Less than 6 months       10 to 11 years

6 months to 12 months       11 to 12 years

1 to 2 years       12 to 13 years

2 to 3 years       13 to 14 years

3 to 4 years       14 to 15 years

4 to 5 years       15 to 16 years

5 to 6 years       16 to 17 years

6 to 7 years       17 to 18 years

7 to 8 years       18 to 19 years

8 to 9 years       19 to 20 years

9 to 10 years       More than 20 years

9. What is the relationship status with your current intimate partner or, if you are not currently in an intimate relationship, what was the relationship status with your most recent intimate partner?

*Shade in only one circle*

Legally married     Committed relationship     Dating     Casual relationship

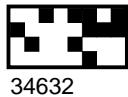
10. What is your living arrangement with your current intimate partner or, if you are not currently in an intimate relationship, what was your living arrangement with your most recent intimate partner?

*Shade in only one circle*

Living together     Living together on and off     Living separately

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 2A

**Answer the following questions in relation to your current intimate partner if you have one - or your most recent intimate partner if you are not currently in an intimate relationship.**

**Sometimes people demand things from their intimate partners even without saying it in words. We are interested in knowing what your partner has demanded from you.**

**Question:** In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did YOUR PARTNER demand something related to

**Personal activities/Appearance**

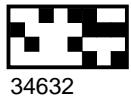
1. Leaving the house (e.g. not want you to leave).----->  Yes  No
2. Eating.----->  Yes  No
3. Sleeping in certain places or at certain times.----->  Yes  No
4. Wearing certain clothes.----->  Yes  No
5. Maintaining a certain weight.----->  Yes  No
6. Using TV, radio, or the internet.----->  Yes  No
7. Viewing sexually explicit material.----->  Yes  No
8. Bathing or using the bathroom----->  Yes  No
9. Answering the phone.----->  Yes  No
10. Reading certain things.----->  Yes  No

**Support / Social life / Family**

11. Talking on the phone.----->  Yes  No
12. Spending time with friends or family members.----->  Yes  No
13. Going to church, school, or other community activities.----->  Yes  No
14. Talking to a counselor, clergy, or someone else about personal or family matters.----->  Yes  No
15. Taking care of dependent relatives.----->  Yes  No
16. Taking care of pets.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Question:** In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did YOUR PARTNER demand something related to

**Household**

17. Taking care of the house.----->  Yes  No  
18. Buying or preparing foods.----->  Yes  No  
19. Living in certain places.----->  Yes  No

**Work / Economic / Resources**

20. Working.----->  Yes  No  
21. Spending money, using credit cards or bank accounts.----->  Yes  No  
22. Learning another language.----->  Yes  No  
23. Going to school.----->  Yes  No  
24. Using the car or truck.----->  Yes  No

**Health**

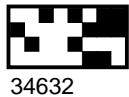
25. Using street drugs.----->  Yes  No  
26. Using alcohol.----->  Yes  No  
27. Going to the doctor.----->  Yes  No  
28. Taking medication or prescriptions drugs.----->  Yes  No

**Intimate Relationship**

29. Talking to your partner.----->  Yes  No  
30. Spending time with your partner.----->  Yes  No  
31. Separating or leaving the relationship.----->  Yes  No  
32. Having sex.----->  Yes  No  
33. Using birth control/condoms.----->  Yes  No  
34. Doing certain sexual behaviors.----->  Yes  No  
35. Having sex in exchange for money, drugs, or other things.----->  Yes  No  
36. Photographing you nude or while having sex.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Question:** In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did YOUR PARTNER demand something related to

**Legal**

37. Talking to police or lawyer.----->  Yes  No  
38. Doing things that are against the law.----->  Yes  No  
39. Carrying a gun or knife.----->  Yes  No  
40. Talking to landlord or housing authorities.----->  Yes  No

**Immigration (Answer only if you are an immigrant to this country)**

41. Filing citizenship papers.----->  Yes  No  
42. Talking to the immigration authorities.----->  Yes  No  
43. Immigration sponsorship.----->  Yes  No

**Children / Parenting (If no children skip to question #49)**

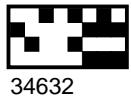
44. Taking care of children.----->  Yes  No  
45. Disciplining the children.----->  Yes  No  
46. Making every day decisions about the children.----->  Yes  No  
47. Making important decisions about the children.----->  Yes  No  
48. Talking to child protection authorities.----->  Yes  No

**Please list any other expectations or expectations by your partner.**

49. \_\_\_\_\_  
50. \_\_\_\_\_

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 2B

### How would YOUR PARTNER know whether you did what he (or she) demanded?

Please shade "yes" or "no" to indicate which of the things your current or most recent partner has done in order to see whether you did what he (or she) demanded.

1. Checked or opened your mail or personal papers/journal.----->  Yes  No
2. Kept track of telephone/cell phone use.----->  Yes  No
3. Called you on the phone.----->  Yes  No
4. Told you to carry a cell phone or pager.----->  Yes  No
5. Checked your clothing.----->  Yes  No
6. Checked the house.----->  Yes  No
7. Checked receipts/checkbook/bank statements.----->  Yes  No
8. Checked the car (odometer, where parked).----->  Yes  No
9. Asked the children, neighbors, friends, family or coworkers.----->  Yes  No
10. Told you to report your behavior to him/her.----->  Yes  No
11. Used audio or video tape recorder.----->  Yes  No
12. Spied on, followed, or stalked you.----->  Yes  No
13. Your partner didn't need to check; your partner just acted like he/she knew.----->  Yes  No

Please list other things that your partner has done to check whether you complied with an expectation or demand.

14. Other ( \_\_\_\_\_ )
15. Other ( \_\_\_\_\_ )
16. Other ( \_\_\_\_\_ )

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 2C

**In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did YOUR PARTNER make you think that he/she MIGHT do the following IF you didn't do what he/she wanted?**

### Harm to you

1. Say something mean, embarrassing or humiliating to you.----->  Yes  No
2. Keep you from seeing or talking to family or friends.----->  Yes  No
3. Tell someone else personal or private information about you.----->  Yes  No
4. Keep you from leaving the house.----->  Yes  No
5. Limit your access to transportation.----->  Yes  No
6. Physically hurt you.----->  Yes  No
7. Try to kill you.----->  Yes  No
8. Scare you.----->  Yes  No
9. Have sex with someone else.----->  Yes  No
10. Leave the relationship or get a divorce.----->  Yes  No
11. Not let you take medication.----->  Yes  No
12. Put you in a mental hospital.----->  Yes  No
13. Cause you to lose your job.----->  Yes  No
14. Keep you from going to work.----->  Yes  No
15. Cause you to lose your housing.----->  Yes  No
16. Hurt you financially.----->  Yes  No
17. Cause you legal trouble.----->  Yes  No
18. Have you arrested.----->  Yes  No
19. Threaten to have you deported.----->  Yes  No
20. Force you to engage in unwanted sex acts.----->  Yes  No
21. Force you to participate in or observe sex acts with others.----->  Yes  No
22. Destroy legal papers.----->  Yes  No
23. Destroy or take something that belongs to you.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did YOUR PARTNER make you think that he/she MIGHT do the following IF you didn't do what he/she wanted?**

**Harm to you**

24. Physically hurt or kill your pet or other animal.----->  Yes  No  
25. (Skip if no children) Not let you see your child or take your children from you.----->  Yes  No

**Harm to Partner**

26. Threaten to commit suicide.----->  Yes  No  
27. Actually attempt to harm or kill himself/herself.----->  Yes  No

**Harm to others**

28. Say something mean or hurtful to your friends or family members.----->  Yes  No  
29. Physically hurt a friend or family member.----->  Yes  No  
30. Try to kill a friend or family member.----->  Yes  No  
31. Destroy property of family members or friends.----->  Yes  No

**Please list any other things that your partner lead you to believe he/she might do if you did not do what he/she wanted.**

32. Other ( \_\_\_\_\_ )

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 2D

**Question:** During the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship has YOUR PARTNER made you think that he or she would get any one to help him/her to enforce a demand?

Yes If yes, who (e.g. Friends, Kids) \_\_\_\_\_

No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 2E

**Question: During the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship which of the following have you done when YOUR PARTNER expected or demanded something of you that you did not want to do?**

1. Did what your partner wanted, even though you didn't want to.----->  Yes  No
2. Refused to do what he/she said.----->  Yes  No
3. Tried to talk your partner out of wanting you to do it.----->  Yes  No
4. Lied about having done what your partner wanted.----->  Yes  No
5. Sought help from someone else.----->  Yes  No
6. Tried to distract your partner.----->  Yes  No
7. Tried to avoid him/her.----->  Yes  No
8. Fought back physically.----->  Yes  No
9. Used/threatened to use a weapon against him/her.----->  Yes  No
10. Left home to get away from him/her.----->  Yes  No
11. Ended (or tried to end) the relationship.----->  Yes  No
12. Argued back verbally.----->  Yes  No
13. Did nothing - just didn't do it.----->  Yes  No
14. Filed for a civil protection order.----->  Yes  No
15. Called the police.----->  Yes  No
16. Tried to get criminal charges filed.----->  Yes  No
17. Other \_\_\_\_\_

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 3A

**Answer the following questions in relation to your current intimate partner if you have one - or your most recent intimate partner if you are not currently in an intimate relationship.**

**Sometimes people demand things from their intimate partners, even without saying it in words. We are interested in knowing what you have demanded from your partner.**

**Question: In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship how often did YOU demand something of your partner related to**

**Personal activities**

1. Leaving the house (e.g. not want partner to leave).----->  Yes  No
2. Eating.----->  Yes  No
3. Sleeping in certain places or at certain times.----->  Yes  No
4. Wearing certain clothes.----->  Yes  No
5. Maintaining a certain weight.----->  Yes  No
6. Using TV, radio, or the internet.----->  Yes  No
7. Viewing sexually explicit material.----->  Yes  No
8. Bathing or using the bathroom.----->  Yes  No
9. Answering the phone.----->  Yes  No
10. Reading certain things.----->  Yes  No

**Support / Social life / Family**

11. Talking on the phone.----->  Yes  No
12. Spending time with friends or family members.----->  Yes  No
13. Going to church, school, or other community activities.----->  Yes  No
14. Talking to a counselor, clergy, or someone else about personal or family matters.----->  Yes  No
15. Taking care of dependent relatives.----->  Yes  No
16. Taking care of pets.----->  Yes  No

**Household**

17. Taking care of the house.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ⚡

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Question: In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship how often did YOU demand something of your partner related to**

**Household**

18. Buying or preparing foods.----->  Yes  No  
19. Living in certain places.----->  Yes  No

**Work / Economic / Resources**

20. Working.----->  Yes  No  
21. Spending money, using credit cards or bank accounts.----->  Yes  No  
22. Learning another language.----->  Yes  No  
23. Going to school.----->  Yes  No  
24. Using the car or truck.----->  Yes  No

**Health**

25. Using street drugs.----->  Yes  No  
26. Using alcohol.----->  Yes  No  
27. Going to the doctor.----->  Yes  No  
28. Taking medication or prescriptions drugs.----->  Yes  No

**Intimate Relationship**

29. Talking to you.----->  Yes  No  
30. Spending time with you.----->  Yes  No  
31. Separating or leaving the relationship.----->  Yes  No  
32. Having sex.----->  Yes  No  
33. Using birth control/condoms.----->  Yes  No  
34. Doing certain sexual behaviors.----->  Yes  No  
35. Having sex in exchange for money, drugs, or other things.----->  Yes  No  
36. Photographing your partner nude or while having sex.----->  Yes  No

**Legal**

37. Talking to police or lawyer.----->  Yes  No  
38. Doing things that are against the law.----->  Yes  No  
39. Carrying a gun or knife.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ⚡

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Question: In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship how often did YOU demand something of your partner related to**

**Legal**

40. Talking to landlord or housing authorities.----->  Yes  No

**Immigration (Answer only if you are an immigrant to this country)**

41. Filing citizenship papers.----->  Yes  No

42. Talking to the immigration authorities.----->  Yes  No

43. Immigration sponsorship.----->  Yes  No

**Children / Parenting (If no children skip to question #49)**

44. Taking care of children.----->  Yes  No

45. Disciplining the children.----->  Yes  No

46. Making every day decisions about the children.----->  Yes  No

47. Making important decisions about the children.----->  Yes  No

48. Talking to child protection authorities.----->  Yes  No

**Please list any other expectations or demands you have of your intimate partner.**

49. \_\_\_\_\_

50. \_\_\_\_\_

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 3B

**How would you know whether your partner did what you demanded that she (or he) do?**

**Please shade "yes" or "no" to indicate which of the things you have done in order to see whether your current or most recent partner did what you demanded.**

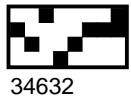
1. Checked or opened your partner's mail or personal papers/journal. ----->  Yes  No
2. Kept track of telephone/cell phone use.----->  Yes  No
3. Called your partner on the phone.----->  Yes  No
4. Told your partner to carry a cell phone or pager.----->  Yes  No
5. Checked your partner's clothing.----->  Yes  No
6. Checked the house.----->  Yes  No
7. Checked receipts/checkbook/bank statements.----->  Yes  No
8. Checked the car (odometer, where parked).----->  Yes  No
9. Asked the children, neighbors, friends, family, or coworkers.----->  Yes  No
10. Told partner to report behavior to you.----->  Yes  No
11. Used audio or video tape recorder.----->  Yes  No
12. Spied on, followed, or stalked your partner.----->  Yes  No
13. Didn't need to check, you just know.----->  Yes  No

**Please list other things that you have done to check whether your partner complied with your expectations or demands.**

14. Other \_\_\_\_\_
15. Other \_\_\_\_\_
16. Other \_\_\_\_\_

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 3C

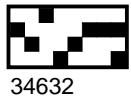
**Question:** In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did you make your partner think that you MIGHT do the following IF she/he didn't do what you wanted?

### Harm to partner

1. Say something mean, hurtful, embarrassing or humiliating to your partner.--->  Yes  No
2. Keep your partner from seeing or talking to family or friends.----->  Yes  No
3. Tell someone else personal or private information about your partner.----->  Yes  No
4. Keep your partner from leaving the house.----->  Yes  No
5. Limit your partner's access to transportation.----->  Yes  No
6. Physically hurt your partner.----->  Yes  No
7. Try to kill your partner.----->  Yes  No
8. Scare your partner.----->  Yes  No
9. Have sex with someone else.----->  Yes  No
10. Leave the relationship or get a divorce.----->  Yes  No
11. Not let your partner take her/his medication.----->  Yes  No
12. Put your partner in a mental hospital.----->  Yes  No
13. Cause your partner to lose her/his job.----->  Yes  No
14. Keep your partner from going to work.----->  Yes  No
15. Cause your partner to lose her/his housing.----->  Yes  No
16. Destroy your partner financially.----->  Yes  No
17. Threaten your partner with legal trouble.----->  Yes  No
18. Have your partner arrested.----->  Yes  No
19. Threaten to have your partner deported.----->  Yes  No
20. Force your partner to engage in unwanted sex acts.----->  Yes  No
21. Force your partner to participate in or observe sex acts with others.---->  Yes  No
22. Destroy legal papers.----->  Yes  No
23. Destroy or take something that belongs to your partner.----->  Yes  No
24. Physically hurt or kill your partner's pet or other animal.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Question:** In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship, did you make your partner think that you MIGHT do the following IF she/he didn't do what you wanted?

**Harm to partner**

25. (skip if no children) Not let your partner see her/his child or take a child from her/him.----->  Yes  No

**Harm to self**

26. Threaten to commit suicide.----->  Yes  No

27. Actually attempt to harm or kill yourself.----->  Yes  No

**Harm to others**

28. Say something mean or hurtful to your partner's friends or family members.>  Yes  No

29. Physically hurt a friend or family member.----->  Yes  No

30. Try to kill a friend or family member.----->  Yes  No

31. Destroy property of family members or friends.----->  Yes  No

**Please list any other things that you lead your partner to believe you might do if she/he didn't do what you wanted.**

32. Other \_\_\_\_\_

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

### SECTION 3D

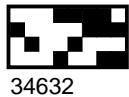
**Question:** During the last 12 months of your current or most recent intimate relationship, have you made your partner think that you would get any one to help you to enforce a demand?

Yes If yes, who (e.g. Friends, Kids) \_\_\_\_\_

No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 4A

**In this section, we want to know how you have felt over the past month.**

Shade in one circle for each question

**Question: In the past month...**

	Rarely or none of the time	Some or a little of the time	Occasionally or a moderate amount of time	Most or all of the time
1. I was bothered by things that usually don't bother me.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
2. I did not feel like eating; my appetite was poor.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
3. I felt that I could not shake off the blues even with help from my family or friends.--->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
4. I felt that I was just as good as other people.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
5. I had trouble keeping my mind on what I was doing.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
6. I felt depressed.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
7. I felt that everything I did was an effort.--->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
8. I felt hopeful about the future.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
9. I thought my life had been a failure.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
10. I felt fearful.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
11. My sleep was restless.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
12. I was happy.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
13. I talked less than usual.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
14. I felt lonely.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
15. People were unfriendly.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
16. I enjoyed life.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
17. I had crying spells.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
18. I felt sad.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
19. I felt that people disliked me.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
20. I could not get going.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>

34632





34632

**SECTION 5A****ID NUMBER**

--	--	--	--	--

**In this section, you will be asked questions about whether you may have experienced the following during the last 12 months of your current or most recent intimate relationship. Please shade "yes" or "no"**

1. My partner grabbed me.----->  Yes  No
2. My partner pushed or shoved me.----->  Yes  No
3. My partner threw something at me that could hurt.----->  Yes  No
4. My partner slapped me.----->  Yes  No
5. My partner twisted my arm or hair.----->  Yes  No
6. My partner kicked me.----->  Yes  No
7. My partner punched or hit me with something that could hurt.----->  Yes  No
8. My partner slammed me against a wall.----->  Yes  No
9. My partner choked or strangled me.----->  Yes  No
10. My partner burned or scalded me on purpose.----->  Yes  No
11. My partner beat me up.----->  Yes  No
12. My partner used or threatened to use a knife or gun.----->  Yes  No
13. My partner forced me to have sex.----->  Yes  No
14. My partner used threats to make me have sex.----->  Yes  No
15. My partner refused to wear a condom during sex.----->  Yes  No
16. I had sex because I was afraid of what might happen if i didn't.----->  Yes  No
17. I felt physical pain that still hurt the next day because of my partner's abuse.----->  Yes  No
18. I had a sprain, bruise, or small cut because of my partner's abuse.----->  Yes  No
19. I passed out from being hit on the head by my partner.----->  Yes  No
20. I had a broken bone from my partner's abuse.----->  Yes  No
21. I went to a doctor because of my partner's abuse.----->  Yes  No
22. When was the FIRST time you experienced ANY of these types of abuse from ANY intimate partner?  

--	--

 years ago (if less than 1 year ago, shade this circle in --->

--	--

years ago (if less than 1 year ago, shade this circle in ---> 

34632





PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5A1

**In this section, you will be asked questions about whether you may have done any of the following during the last 12 months of your current or most recent intimate relationship. Please shade "yes" or "no"**

1. I Grabbed my partner.----->  Yes  No
2. I pushed or shoved partner.----->  Yes  No
3. I threw something at my partner that could hurt.----->  Yes  No
4. I slapped partner.----->  Yes  No
5. I twisted my partner's arm or hair.----->  Yes  No
6. I kicked my partner.----->  Yes  No
7. I punched or hit my partner with something that could hurt.----->  Yes  No
8. I slammed my partner against a wall.----->  Yes  No
9. I choked or strangled my partner.----->  Yes  No
10. I burned or scalded my partner on purpose.----->  Yes  No
11. I beat my partner up.----->  Yes  No
12. I used or threatened to use a knife or gun.----->  Yes  No
13. I forced my partner to have sex.----->  Yes  No
14. I used threats to make my partner have sex.----->  Yes  No
15. I refused to use birth control or wear a condom during sex.----->  Yes  No
16. I made my partner afraid of what might happen if he/she didn't have sex with me.----->  Yes  No
17. My partner felt physical pain that still hurt the next day because of my abuse.----->  Yes  No
18. My partner had a sprain, bruise, or small cut because of my abuse.----->  Yes  No
19. My partner passed out from being hit on the head by me.----->  Yes  No
20. My partner had a broken bone from my abuse.----->  Yes  No
21. My partner went to a doctor because of my abuse.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5B

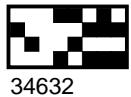
**In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship has your partner done the following. Please shade "yes" or "no"**

**Question:** In the last year...

1. My partner called me names.----->  Yes  No
2. My partner swore at me.----->  Yes  No
3. My partner yelled and screamed at me.----->  Yes  No
4. My partner treated me like I was less than he or she is.----->  Yes  No
5. My partner watched over my activities and insisted I tell him or her where I was at all times.----->  Yes  No
6. My partner used our money or made important financial decisions without talking to me about it.----->  Yes  No
7. My partner was jealous or suspicious of my friends.----->  Yes  No
8. My partner accused me of having an affair.----->  Yes  No
9. My partner interfered with my relationships with other family members.----->  Yes  No
10. My partner tried to keep me from doing things to help myself.-->  Yes  No
11. My partner controlled my use of the telephone.----->  Yes  No
12. My partner told me my feelings were crazy.----->  Yes  No
13. My partner blamed me for his/her problems.----->  Yes  No
14. My partner tried to make me feel crazy.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5B1

**In the last 12 months of your current or most recent relationship have you done any of the following? Please shade "yes" or "no".**

**Question:** In the last year...

1. You called your partner names.----->  Yes  No
2. You swore at your partner.----->  Yes  No
3. You yelled and screamed at your partner.----->  Yes  No
4. You treated your partner like she/he was less than you are.---->  Yes  No
5. You watched over your partner's activities and insisted he/she tell you where he/she was at all times.----->  Yes  No
6. You used your money or made important financial decisions without talking to your partner about it.----->  Yes  No
7. You were jealous or suspicious of your partner's friends.---->  Yes  No
8. You accused your partner of having an affair.----->  Yes  No
9. You interfered with your partner's relationships with other family members.----->  Yes  No
10. You tried to keep your partner from doing things to help him/her self.----->  Yes  No
11. You controlled your partner's use of the telephone.----->  Yes  No
12. You told your partner his/her feelings were crazy.----->  Yes  No
13. You blamed your partner for your problems.----->  Yes  No
14. You tried to make your partner feel crazy.----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

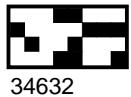
## SECTION 5C

**The following questions refer to your relationship with your current or most recent partner. Please shade "yes" or "no".**

1. You have a right to know everything your partner does.----->  Yes  No
2. You insist on knowing where your partner is at all times.----->  Yes  No
3. You have a right to be involved with anything your partner does.----->  Yes  No
4. You try to keep your partner from spending time with opposite sex friends.----->  Yes  No
5. It would make you mad if your partner did something you had said not to do.----->  Yes  No
6. You tend to be jealous.----->  Yes  No
7. Your partner should not keep any secrets from you.----->  Yes  No
8. You understand if there are some things your partner may not want to talk about with you.----->  Yes  No
9. It bothers you when your partner makes plans without talking to you first----->  Yes  No

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5D

### In this section, you will be asked about your relationships with PEOPLE IN GENERAL.

Shade in one circle each question

1. There is at least one person I know whose advice I can really trust.-->  True  False
2. There is really no one I can trust to give me good financial advice.-->  True  False
3. There is really no one who can give me feedback about how I'm handling my problems.----->  True  False
4. When I need suggestions for how I deal with a personal problem I know there is someone I can turn to.----->  True  False
5. There is someone who I feel comfortable going to for advice about sexual problems.----->  True  False
6. There is someone I can turn to for advice about handling hassles over household responsibilities.----->  True  False
7. I feel that there is no one with whom I can share my most private worries and fears.----->  True  False
8. If a family crisis arose not many of my friends would be able to give me good advice about handling it.----->  True  False
9. There are not many people I trust to help solve my problems.----->  True  False
10. There is someone I could turn to for advice about changing my job or finding a new one.----->  True  False

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ⚡

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5E

**The next set of questions include a list of problems or difficulties that people sometimes have in response to trauma, such as being attacked or abused. Using the scale on the right, circle how much you have felt the following, where 1 is "not at all" and 5 is "all the time."**

Shade in one circle each question

**Question:** In the past month how much have you...

Not at all <----- all the time

1. Been bothered by repeated, disturbing memories, thoughts, or images of abuse or violence?----->  1  2  3  4  5
2. Been bothered by repeated disturbing dreams about abuse?---->  1  2  3  4  5
3. Suddenly acted or felt as if a prior abuse I've experienced was happening again [as if you were reliving it]?----->  1  2  3  4  5
4. Been bothered by feeling very upset when something reminded you of abuse?----->  1  2  3  4  5
5. Been bothered by having physical reactions [e.g. heart pounding, trouble breathing, sweating] when something reminded you of abuse?----->  1  2  3  4  5
6. Avoided thinking about or talking about abuse?----->  1  2  3  4  5
7. Avoided activities or situations because they reminded you of abuse?----->  1  2  3  4  5
8. Had trouble remembering an important part of the abuse?---->  1  2  3  4  5
9. Felt a loss of interest in activities that you used to enjoy?----->  1  2  3  4  5
10. Experienced feeling distant or cut off from other people?----->  1  2  3  4  5
11. Felt emotionally numb or unable to have loving feelings for those close to you?----->  1  2  3  4  5
12. Experienced feeling as if your future will somehow be cut short?----->  1  2  3  4  5
13. Had trouble falling asleep or staying asleep?----->  1  2  3  4  5
14. Experienced feeling irritable or having angry outbursts?>  1  2  3  4  5
15. Had difficulty concentrating?----->  1  2  3  4  5
16. Experienced being "super-alert" or watchful or on guard?>  1  2  3  4  5
17. Felt jumpy or easily startled?----->  1  2  3  4  5

34632





34632

PLEASE SHADE CIRCLES LIKE THIS -> ●  
NOT LIKE THIS -> ✘ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--

## SECTION 5F

**In your opinion, how likely is it that your current or most recent partner will attempt to do each of the following things in the next year? Please answer using the scale indicated.**

Shade in one circle each question

**Question: In the next year, how likely do you think it is that your partner will...**

	Not at all likely	A little likely	Some what likely	Quite likely	Extremely likely
1. Threaten to harm you physically?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
2. Physically assault you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
3. Physically injure you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
4. Try to kill you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
5. Control or dominate you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
6. Humiliate or degrade you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
7. Cause financial problems for you?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
8. Threaten or physically harm someone you care about?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
9. Get you in trouble with the law?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
10. Destroy your property?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
11. Physically injure someone else whom you care about?--->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
12. Violate a protection order by having contact with you, if you have an order or were to get one?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
13. Track you down or find you if you have left him (or her) or if you were to leave him (or her)?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
14. Try to take away or kidnap your child or children?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
15. Try to get custody of your child or children?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
16. Cause emotional harm to your child or children?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4

Not at  
all afraid <-----> Extremely  
afraid

17. How afraid of your current or most recent partner do you feel?----->  0  1  2  3  4

34632





34632

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Please share any comments you would like to make about the questionnaire (e.g., wording of statements or omissions that should be included, etc.):**

**Thank you for participating. Your time will be most valuable to help develop a better understanding of intimate relationships.**

34632



## **Appendix J-2**

In-depth Interview Consent Form and Protocol

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Consent to Participate in Research**

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Darci Terrell                                   **Telephone:** 405-969-3078  
**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

*The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board office: 202-687-1506.*

**Introduction:** You are invited to consider participating in an additional component of this research study. We will be asking follow-up questions about the Coercive Control Survey that you just completed. This form will describe the purpose and nature of the follow-up questions, the possible risks and benefits, other options available to you, and your rights as a participant in the study. Please take whatever time you need to discuss the study with anyone you care to talk with. The decision to participate or not is yours. If you decide to participate, please sign and date the last line of this form.

**Background and purpose of the study:** We are conducting this study to better understand ways in which men and women's attempts to control each other affect their relationships. Prior studies on violent relationships have focused mostly on the level of violence in the relationship and not as much on the level of control in the relationship. By conducting this study, we hope to learn about the differences in violent couples beyond the level of violence alone.

**Total number of people:** A total of about 50 people will take part in this component of the study.

**General plan of the study:** Researchers will ask follow-up questions to selected individuals who have completed the Coercive Control Survey. It should take you about 30 minutes to answer these questions and we will provide a space where you can answer the questions in privacy. You will be asked to answer such questions as "Can you give me an example of a situation where your partner demanded that you do something?" "What were you afraid he/she would do if you didn't do it? If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have after answering the questions, we will give you information about resources where you can talk with someone.

**Length of the study for each subject:** We expect that you will be in the follow-up interview for 30 minutes.

**Possible benefits of participating in the study:** There are no direct benefits to you for participating in this component of the study. However, the information you share with us during the study will help us to understand more about relationships where one or both partners attempt to control the other. The results of this study will also be helpful to improve the effectiveness of intervention programs.

**Possible risks of participating in the study:** If your partner finds out about your participation in the study, you could be at increased risk if he or she chooses to retaliate in some way. Also, the questions in the questionnaire may raise uncomfortable or upsetting issues for you. However, you may find that having the opportunity to think about your experiences is helpful to you in some way, although participation in this study is not considered counseling or any other type of therapeutic service.

**Who can participate in the in-depth interview:** Anyone who has met the requirements to participate in the Coercive Control Survey (anyone over 18 years of age who is in a relationship in which at least one incident of violence has occurred within the last 12 months), and who has completed the Coercive Control Survey.

**Confidentiality of the data collected during the study:** Your responses to the interview questions will remain confidential. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded on the questionnaire you fill out. This form will be stored in a locked cabinet separately from your completed questionnaire. The researcher will code your questionnaire with a number. The researcher will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The interview questions will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. Only the research team will have access to the interview questions. No names or identifying details will be used in any publication or other documents resulting from this study. All data collected from this study will be presented as a group, so that no one can identify any one individual within the study.

If you tell us of a child who is being abused or of your intent to harm someone else or yourself, we are obligated break to report that information to the appropriate authorities.

**HIPPA Compliance:** This project does not involve obtaining any information about you from any medical or other health care records.

**Costs to you for participating:** There are no costs to you for participating in this study.

**Payments to you for participating:** You will be paid an additional \$20 for your time for participating in this component of study.

**Your rights as a participant in the study:** Participation in this study is entirely voluntary. You have the right to leave the study at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. Leaving the study will not result in any penalty or loss of benefits to which you are entitled. Should you decide to leave the study, just tell the interviewer that you no longer wish to participate.

**Questions:** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Dr. Mary Ann Dutton at 202-687-1997. If you have any questions about your rights as a research subject, call the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board office at 202-687-1506.

**Investigator's statement:** I have fully explained this study to the subject. I have discussed the procedures, the possible risks and benefits, the standard and research aspects of the study, and have answered all of the questions that the subject and the subject's family members have asked.

Signature of investigator \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

#### **Subject's consent**

I have read the information provided in this Informed Consent Form or it was read to me by the investigator. All my questions were answered to my satisfaction. I voluntarily agree to participate in this study.

[Upon signing, you will receive a copy of this form. The original will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study.]

Your signature \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

Signature of investigator/witness \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_



ID Number: 

--	--	--	--

Interviewer Name:

Site:

Date:

## IN-DEPTH INTERVIEW PROTOCOL

### Instruction to Interviewer:

Use the following script to introduce the In-depth Interview Protocol after the participant has completed the Coercive Control Survey

*If you are interested, we would also like to conduct a follow-up interview with you, which would take about a half hour. We would pay you an additional \$20 for your participation if you choose to do this. For the interview, we will be asking you some follow-up questions on the same topic as the survey itself. Would you be interested in participating in this second step?*

If the participant would like to participate, they must read and sign the In-depth Interview Protocol Consent Form.

The Interviewer will use the participant's completed Coercive Control Survey as a foundation for guiding the In-depth Interview. Refer to Section 2A of the completed survey. Pick at least 3 (three) items where the participant indicated "YES" that their partner DEMANDED something of them (there may be more than 3 items in this section where the participant noted "YES"; pick only 3 for the purpose of this interview (if possible, select items from different "categories" if there are more than 3 items). You will ask follow-up questions for each of the 3 items.

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #1:**

1.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

1.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

1.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

1.4 What led up to this demand that time?

1.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

1.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

1.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

1.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

1.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

1.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #2:**

2.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

2.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

2.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

2.4 What led up to this demand that time?

2.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

2.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

2.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

2.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

2.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

2.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #3:**

3.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

3.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

3.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

3.4 What led up to this demand that time?

3.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

3.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

3.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

3.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

3.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

3.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

### **Appendix J-3**

Coercive Control Survey Consent Form and Questionnaire—Spanish

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Aprobación Para Participar en el Estudio**

**Nombre del Proyecto:** Desarrollo y Validación de una Medida del Control Coercitivo en Violencia Entre Parejas Intimas

**Investigadora Principal:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.

**Teléfono:** 202-687-1997

**Coordinadora de Proyecto:** Darci Terrell

**Teléfono:** 405-969-3078

**Patrocinador:** Instituto Nacional de Justicia

*El Consejo de Revisión Institucional de la Universidad de Georgetown ha aprobado el conducto del presente estudio. Para mas información sobre sus derechos como contribuyente al estudio, puede llamar a la oficina del Consejo de Revisión Institucional, al teléfono: 202-687-1506.*

**Introducción:** Esta usted invitada/o a considerar participar en el presente estudio. Estaremos evaluando aspectos del control en las relaciones entre hombres y mujeres. El presente documento explica el propósito y naturaleza del estudio, sus posibles riesgos y beneficios, otras opciones para usted, y sus derechos como participante en el estudio. Por favor tome el tiempo necesario para discutir el estudio con cualquier otra persona que quiera. La decisión de participar o de no participar es suya. Si usted decide no participar, por favor anote la fecha y firme en la ultima línea del documento.

**Antecedentes y propósito del estudio:** Estamos realizando el estudio para mejor entender los diferentes efectos que tienen en una relación intima, las maneras en cuales los hombres y mujeres intentan controlarse a si mismos. Estudios previos que investigaban relaciones violentas se han enfocado principalmente en el nivel de la violencia, y no en el nivel de control en la relación. Al realizar el presente estudio, se espera aprender las diferencias que existen entre parejas violentas, aun más que el nivel de violencia.

**Número de participantes:** Un total de 600 personas participaran en esta fase del estudio.

**Plan de estudio:** Investigadores le presentarán la encuesta a personas mayores de 18 años de edad. Los participantes contaran con una hora para llenar la encuesta, cual podrán completar en privado. Se le harán preguntas como, "Ha habido instantes en su relación cuando sintió que su pareja la/lo controlaba?" Al terminar la encuesta, tendremos tiempo de platicar con usted acerca de su experiencia participando en el estudio. Si usted se siente mal y quiere hablar con alguien acerca de su seguridad personal o de las emociones y sentimientos que sintió después de acabar la encuesta, nosotros le daremos información de recursos o personas con quien puede hablar.

**Duración del estudio para cada participante:** Estimamos que le lleve 1 hora para acabar la encuesta.

**Posibles beneficios de participar en el estudio:** No hay beneficios directos de participar en el estudio. La información que usted nos proporcione durante el estudio nos ayudara a entender mejor las relaciones cuando uno o dos miembros de la pareja intenta controlar al otro. Los resultados del estudio también ayudara a mejorar los programas de intervención de violencia domestica.

**Posibles riesgos de participar en el estudio:** Si su pareja sabe de su participación en el estudio, usted pudiera estar en riesgo de que el/ella se vengue de alguna manera. También, las preguntas de la encuesta pudieran hacerle pensar en cosas que le molesten o hagan sentir mal. A la vez, el tener la oportunidad de pensar en sus experiencias le pudiera resultar de beneficio, pero debe saber que su participación en el estudio no va a resultar en consejos o terapia.

**Quien puede participar en el estudio:** Cualquier persona mayor de los 18 años de edad, quien esté en una relación en la cual ha tenido por lo menos un incidente de violencia en los últimos 12 meses puede participar en el estudio.

**Confidencialidad de la información reunida para el estudio:** Las respuestas que nos da en la entrevista permanecerán confidenciales. No usaremos su nombre o características personales que se puedan usar para identificarla/lo con la encuesta que entregó. Ya que firme este documento, será guardado en un archivo con candado y estará separado de la encuesta que nos entregue. Los investigadores serán las únicas personas que puedan identificar su nombre con su número de encuesta. La encuesta estará guardada en un archivo y se va a destruir cuando termine el estudio. Solamente los investigadores tendrán acceso a su encuesta. Los nombres de los participantes del estudio no serán usados en documentos que resulten del estudio. Toda la información reunida para el estudio se presentará por grupo, así que ninguna persona o individuo podrá ser identificado.

Si durante la entrevista nos cuenta de un niño a quien le están causando abuso, o de su intención de dañar a alguien o a si misma/o, estamos obligados a reportar esa información a las autoridades.

**Cumplimientos de HIPPA:** El presente proyecto no requiere que le pidamos información de sus archivos médicos.

**Gastos de participación:** No existen gastos para que usted participe en el estudio.

**Pagos por su participación:** A usted se le pagarán \$20 por su tiempo para participar en el estudio, y también, por llenar y entregar la encuesta es elegible para recibir una de tres rifas de \$100 dólares. También, si lo necesita, le podemos ayudar con \$10 para ayudar con el cuidado de niños o de transporte.

**Sus derechos como participante en el estudio:** Su participación en el estudio es completamente voluntaria. Usted tiene el derecho de terminar con el estudio cuando usted guste. No es necesario que conteste las preguntas que no quiera contestar. El dejar el estudio no le resultará en ningún castigo o perdida de beneficios a cuales tiene derecho de recibir. Si decide no continuar con el estudio, dígale a la persona que la/lo entrevistó y dígale que no quiere continuar con el estudio.

**Preguntas:** Si tiene alguna pregunta durante el estudio, por favor hable con la doctora Mary Ann Dutton al teléfono 202-687-1997. Para más información sobre sus derechos como contribuyente al estudio, puede llamar a la oficina del Consejo de Revisión Institucional de la universidad de Georgetown, al teléfono: 202-687-1506.

**Declaración del investigador:** Yo le he explicado el estudio al participante. Hemos platicado acerca del procedimiento del estudio, sus posibles riesgos y beneficios, los aspectos de la investigación, y le he contestado todas las preguntas que el participante y sus familiares me han hecho.

Firma del investigador \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_

**Aprobación del participante**

Yo he leído la información dada en el presente documento, o la información fue leída por el investigador. Todas mis preguntas fueron contestadas y estoy satisfecha/o con las respuestas. Yo voluntariamente acepto participar en el estudio.

[Al firmar, le darán una copia del documento. El original será guardado en una cajón con llave y será destruido cuando acabe el estudio.]

Su firma \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_

Firma del investigador/testigo \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_



# Sección 1



50982

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

1. ¿Cuántos años tiene? 

--	--

1a. ¿Cuál es su sexo?     Masculino     Femenino

2. 2. ¿Cuál es su raza u origen étnico?

*Marque todas las respuestas que apliquen*

- Afro-Americano
- Caucásico/Blanco
- Latina/Latino
- Asiático-American o de las Islas del Pacífico
- Indio Americano
- Otro \_\_\_\_\_

2a. ¿En qué país nació?

---

2b. Si nació fuera de los Estados Unidos, ¿por cuántos años ha estado viviendo en los Estados Unidos? 

--	--

3. ¿Cuántos hijos/niños tiene? 

--	--

4. 4. ¿A qué se dedica?

*Marque todas las respuestas que apliquen*

- Trabajo a tiempo completo
- Trabajo a tiempo parcial
- Servicio militar
- Desempleado/a
- Retirado/a y no trabaja
- Estudiante
- Ama de casa
- Otro \_\_\_\_\_

5. ¿Está recibiendo alguna ayuda económica federal o estatal?     No     Si

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**6. ¿Cuál fue el año de estudios más alto que terminó? [Marque solamente una respuesta]**

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

- Menos de la secundaria (8vo. grado o menos)
- Primer año de preparatoria (9no. grado)
- Segundo año de preparatoria (10mo. grado)
- Tercer año de preparatoria (11vo. grado)
- Cuarto año de preparatoria (12vo. grado)
- Escuela vocacional
- Unos años de universidad (o está en la universidad)
- Diplomado de dos años
- Bachillerato/Licenciatura (BA/BS) de cuatro años
- Escuela graduada

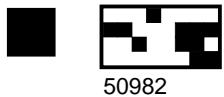
**7. ¿Cuál fue su ingreso en el año 2002 antes de descontar los impuestos? Por favor, incluya todas las fuentes de ingresos tales como su trabajo, pensiones alimentarias, asistencia económica federal o del estado y ayuda de su familia.**

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

- Menos de \$5,000
- DE \$5,000 a \$10,000
- DE \$11,000 a \$15,000
- DE \$16,000 a \$20,000
- DE \$21,000 a \$25,000
- DE \$26,000 a \$30,000
- DE \$31,000 a \$35,000
- DE \$36,000 a \$40,000
- DE \$41,000 a \$45,000
- DE \$46,000 a \$50,000
- DE \$51,000 a \$55,000
- Más de \$55,000

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

8. ¿Tiene una pareja en este momento?  No  Si -(Si contestó que sí, pase a la pregunta 8b)

8a. Si en este momento no tiene pareja, ¿cuánto tiempo ha pasado desde que tuvo su pareja más reciente?

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

Menos de 6 meses  De 6 a 12 meses  De 1 a 2 años

8b. ¿Cuánto tiempo lleva con su pareja actual? Si no tiene pareja, ¿cuánto tiempo estuvo con su pareja más reciente?

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

Menos de 6 meses  De 10 a 11 años

De 6 a 12 meses  De 11 a 12 años

De 1 a 2 años  De 12 a 13 años

De 2 a 3 años  De 13 a 14 años

De 3 a 4 años  De 14 a 15 años

De 4 a 5 años  De 15 a 16 años

De 5 a 6 años  De 16 a 17 años

De 6 a 7 años  De 17 a 18 años

De 7 a 8 años  De 18 a 19 años

De 8 a 9 años  De 19 a 20 años

De 9 a 10 años  Más de 20 años

9. ¿Qué tipo de relación tiene con su pareja? Si no tiene pareja, ¿qué tipo de relación tuvo con su pareja más reciente?

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

Legalmente casados  Comprometidos  Enamorados/Novios  Relación Casual

10. ¿Cómo viven usted y su pareja? Si no tiene pareja, ¿cómo vivían usted y su pareja más reciente?

**Marque solamente una respuesta**

Vivimos juntos  Vivimos juntos de vez en cuando  Vivimos separados

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 2A

**Conteste las siguientes preguntas pensando en su relación con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente si no tiene pareja en estos momentos.**

**A veces las personas exigen/piden a sus parejas algunas cosas aún sin decir nada. Nos interesa conocer qué le ha exigido/pedido su pareja.**

Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió SU PAREJA algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:

### Actividades personales/Apariencia

1. Salir de la casa (por ejemplo, no desear que usted salga de la casa).----->  Si  No
2. Comer.----->  Si  No
3. Dormir en ciertos lugares o a ciertas horas.----->  Si  No
4. Ponerse cierta ropa.----->  Si  No
5. Mantener cierto peso.----->  Si  No
6. Usar la televisión, la radio, o la Internet.----->  Si  No
7. Ver material sexualmente explícito.----->  Si  No
8. Bañarse o usar el baño.----->  Si  No
9. Contestar el teléfono.----->  Si  No
10. Leer ciertas cosas.----->  Si  No

### Apoyo/Vida Social/Familia

11. Hablar por teléfono.----->  Si  No
12. Pasar tiempo con sus amistades o familiares.----->  Si  No
13. Ir a la iglesia, la escuela, o participar en otras actividades en la comunidad.----->  Si  No
14. Hablar con un/a consejero/a, pastor/a, sacerdote, o alguna otra persona sobre asuntos personales o familiares.----->  Si  No
15. Cuidar a familiares que dependan de usted.----->  Si  No
16. Cuidar mascotas.----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió SU PAREJA algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:

**Hogar**

17. Ocuparse de la casa.----->  Si  No  
18. Comprar o preparar comida.----->  Si  No  
19. Vivir en ciertos lugares.----->  Si  No

**Trabajo/Dinero/Recursos**

20. Trabajar.----->  Si  No  
21. Gastar dinero, usar tarjetas de crédito o cuentas de banco.----->  Si  No  
22. Aprender otro idioma.----->  Si  No  
23. Ir a la escuela/estudiar.----->  Si  No  
24. Usar el carro/auto/coche o camión.----->  Si  No

**Salud**

25. Usar drogas.----->  Si  No  
26. Usar alcohol.----->  Si  No  
27. Ir al médico.----->  Si  No  
28. Usar medicinas o drogas recetadas.----->  Si  No

**Relación de Pareja**

29. Hablar con su pareja.----->  Si  No  
30. Pasar tiempo con su pareja.----->  Si  No  
31. Separarse o dejar la relación.----->  Si  No  
32. Tener relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No  
33. Usar anticonceptivos o condones.----->  Si  No  
34. Hacer ciertas conductas sexuales----->  Si  No  
35. Tener relaciones sexuales a cambio de dinero, drogas, u otras cosas.----->  Si  No  
36. Tomarle fotografías desnuda o mientras tenía relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió SU PAREJA algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:

**Asuntos Legales**

37. Hablar con la policía o con un/a abogado/a.----->  Si  No  
38. Hacer algo que esté en contra de la ley.----->  Si  No  
39. Cargar una pistola/ un revólver o un cuchillo.----->  Si  No  
40. Hablar con su casero o con los administradores del departamento de la vivienda.----->  Si  No

**Inmigración [Conteste solamente si es inmigrante a los Estados Unidos]**

41. Pedir la ciudadanía americana.----->  Si  No  
42. Hablar con agentes de inmigración.----->  Si  No  
43. Patrocinio de inmigración.----->  Si  No

**Niños/Crianza de los Hijos/Niños**

44. Cuidar los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No  
45. Disciplinar los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No  
46. Tomar decisiones de la vida diaria de los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No  
47. Tomar decisiones importantes de los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No  
48. Hablar con las autoridades/agencias de gobierno que protegen a los niños.>  Si  No

**Por favor, escriba cualquier otra cosa que su pareja quiera que usted haga o que haya querido que usted hiciera**

49. \_\_\_\_\_

50. \_\_\_\_\_

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 2B

### ¿Cómo SU PAREJA podría saber si usted hizo lo que él (o ella) quería que hiciera?

**Por favor, marque "sí" o "no" para contestar qué cosas su pareja o su pareja más reciente ha hecho para saber si usted hizo lo que él (o ella) quería que hiciera**

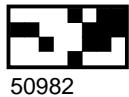
1. Revisó o abrió su correspondencia o sus papeles personales/diario.----->  Si  No
2. Llevó cuenta de su uso del teléfono o del teléfono celular.----->  Si  No
3. Le llamó por teléfono.----->  Si  No
4. Le dijo que tuviera un teléfono celular o un buscapersonas ("bíper").----->  Si  No
5. Inspeccionó/Revisó su ropa.----->  Si  No
6. Inspeccionó/Revisó la casa.----->  Si  No
7. Inspeccionó recibos/chequera/estados de cuenta del banco.----->  Si  No
8. Inspeccionó el carro/coche/auto (el odómetro, dónde estaba estacionado).---->  Si  No
  
9. Le preguntó a los hijos/niños, vecinos, amistades, familiares, o compañeros/as de trabajo.----->  Si  No
10. Le dijo que le tenía que informar lo que hacía.----->  Si  No
11. Usó una audio o videograbadora.----->  Si  No
12. Le espió, siguió, o acechó.----->  Si  No
  
13. No necesitaba revisar; actuaba como si supiera.----->  Si  No

**Por favor, escriba otras cosas que su pareja hizo para comprobar si usted hizo lo él/ella le había exigido/pedido que hiciera**

14. Otro ( \_\_\_\_\_ )
15. Otro ( \_\_\_\_\_ )
16. Otro ( \_\_\_\_\_ )

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 2C

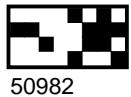
**En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿su pareja le hizo pensar que tal vez él (o ella) haría algunas de las siguientes cosas si usted no hacía lo que él (o ella) quería que usted hiciera?**

### Daño a usted

1. Decirle algo cruel, humillante o vergonzoso.----->  Si  No
2. No dejarle ver o hablar con su familia o amistades.----->  Si  No
3. Contarle a alguien información personal o privada suya.----->  Si  No
4. No dejarle salir de la casa.----->  Si  No
5. Limitarle su acceso a transportación.----->  Si  No
6. Hacerle daño físico.----->  Si  No
7. Tratar de matarla.----->  Si  No
8. Asustarla.----->  Si  No
9. Tener relaciones sexuales con otra persona.----->  Si  No
10. Dejar la relación o divorciarse.----->  Si  No
11. No dejarle tomar un medicamento o medicina recetada.----->  Si  No
12. Internarle/Ingresarle en un hospital mental.----->  Si  No
13. Hacer que perdiera su trabajo.----->  Si  No
14. No dejarle ir a su trabajo.----->  Si  No
15. Hacer que perdiera su vivienda.----->  Si  No
16. Hacerle daño económico/de dinero.----->  Si  No
17. Causarle problemas legales.----->  Si  No
18. Hacer que le arrestaran.----->  Si  No
19. Amenazar con que le deportaran a su país.----->  Si  No
20. Obligarle a tener relaciones sexuales de formas que usted no quería.----->  Si  No
21. Obligarle a participar en u observar actos sexuales con otras personas.-->  Si  No
22. Destruir documentos legales.----->  Si  No
23. Destruir o llevarse algo suyo.----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿su pareja le hizo pensar que tal vez él (o ella) haría algunas de las siguientes cosas si usted no hacía lo que él (o ella) quería que usted hiciera?**

**Daño a usted**

24. Hacerle daño físico o matar su mascota u otro animal.----->  Si  No  
25. (No conteste si no tiene hijos/niños) No dejarle ver a sus hijos/niños o quitarle a sus hijos/niños----->  Si  No

**Daño a sí mismo/a**

26. Amenazar con suicidarse.----->  Si  No  
27. Intentar hacerse daño o suicidarse.----->  Si  No

**Daño a otros**

28. Decirle algo cruel o hiriente a sus amistades o familiares.----->  Si  No  
29. Hacer daño físico a algún/a amigo/a o familiar.----->  Si  No  
30. Tratar de matar a algún/a amigo/a o familiar.----->  Si  No  
31. Destruir propiedad de familiares o amistades.----->  Si  No

**Por favor escriba otras cosas que su pareja le hizo creer que haría si usted no hacía lo que él/ella quería.**

32. Otro ( \_\_\_\_\_ )

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 2D

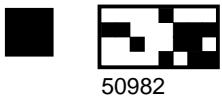
**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿SU PAREJA le hizo pensar que buscaría la ayuda de alguien para que usted hiciera lo que él/ella quería?**

Si    ¿ A quién le pediría ayuda (por ejemplo, amistades, hijos/niños)? \_\_\_\_\_

No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así .-> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

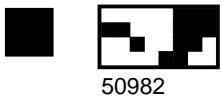
## Sección 2E

**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿qué hizo usted cuando SU PAREJA esperaba o le exigía/pedía que hiciera algo que usted no quería hacer?**

1. Hizo lo que su pareja quería, aún cuando no quería hacerlo.----->  Si  No
2. Se negó a hacer lo que él/ella dijo.----->  Si  No
3. Trató de convencerlo/convencerla de que no quisiera que usted lo hiciera.--->  Si  No
4. Mintió sobre haber hecho lo que su pareja quería.----->  Si  No
5. Buscó la ayuda de alguien.----->  Si  No
6. Trató de distraer a su pareja.----->  Si  No
7. Trató de evitar encontrarse con su pareja.----->  Si  No
8. Luchó/peleó físicamente con él/ella.----->  Si  No
9. Usó o amenazó con usar un arma en contra de él/ella.----->  Si  No
10. Se fue de la casa para estar lejos de él/ella.----->  Si  No
11. Terminó (o trató de terminar) la relación.----->  Si  No
12. Discutió con él/ella.----->  Si  No
13. No hizo nada - simplemente no hizo lo que su pareja quería.----->  Si  No
14. Pidió una orden de protección.----->  Si  No
15. Llamó a la policía.----->  Si  No
16. Trató de formularle cargos criminales a su pareja.----->  Si  No
  
17. 17. Otro \_\_\_\_\_

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

### Sección 3A

**Conteste las siguientes preguntas pensando en su relación con su pareja o en su pareja más reciente si no tiene pareja en estos momentos.**

**A veces las personas exigen/piden a sus parejas algunas cosas aún sin decir nada. Nos interesa conocer qué USTED le ha exigido/pedido a su pareja.**

**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió USTED a su pareja algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:**

**Actividades personales/Apariencia**

1. Salir de la casa (por ejemplo, no desear que su pareja salga de la casa)---->  Si  No
2. Comer----->  Si  No
3. Dormir en ciertos lugares o a ciertas horas----->  Si  No
4. Ponerse cierta ropa----->  Si  No
5. Mantener cierto peso----->  Si  No
6. Usar la televisión, la radio, o la Internet----->  Si  No
7. Ver material sexualmente explícito----->  Si  No
8. Bañarse o usar el baño----->  Si  No
9. Contestar el teléfono----->  Si  No
10. Leer ciertas cosas----->  Si  No

**Apoyo/Vida Social/Familia**

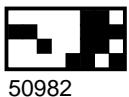
11. Hablar por teléfono----->  Si  No
12. Pasar tiempo con sus amistades o familiares----->  Si  No
13. Ir a la iglesia, la escuela, o participar en otras actividades en la comunidad----->  Si  No
14. Hablar con un/a consejero/a, pastor/a, sacerdote, o alguna otra persona sobre asuntos personales o familiares----->  Si  No
15. Cuidar a familiares que dependan de usted----->  Si  No
16. Cuidar mascotas----->  Si  No

**Hogar**

17. Ocuparse de la casa----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--

**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió USTED a su pareja algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:**

**Hogar**

18. Comprar o preparar comida.----->  Si  No  
 19. Vivir en ciertos lugares.----->  Si  No

**Trabajo/Dinero/Recursos**

20. Trabajar.----->  Si  No  
 21. Gastar dinero, usar tarjetas de crédito o cuentas de banco.----->  Si  No  
 22. Aprender otro idioma.----->  Si  No  
 23. Ir a la escuela/estudiar.----->  Si  No  
 24. Usar el carro/auto/coche o camión.----->  Si  No

**Salud**

25. Usar drogas.----->  Si  No  
 26. Usar alcohol.----->  Si  No  
 27. Ir al médico.----->  Si  No  
 28. Usar medicinas o drogas recetadas.----->  Si  No

**Relación de Pareja**

29. Hablar con usted.----->  Si  No  
 30. Pasar tiempo con usted.----->  Si  No  
 31. Separarse o dejar la relación.----->  Si  No  
 32. Tener relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No  
 33. Usar anticonceptivos o condones.----->  Si  No  
 34. Hacer ciertas conductas sexuales.----->  Si  No  
 35. Tener relaciones sexuales a cambio de dinero, drogas, u otras cosas.----->  Si  No  
 36. Tomarle fotografías desnudo/a o mientras tenía relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No

**Asuntos Legales**

37. Hablar con la policía o con un/a abogado/a.----->  Si  No  
 38. Hacer algo que esté en contra de la ley.----->  Si  No  
 39. Cargar una pistola/un revólver o un cuchillo.----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -&gt; ●

No así -&gt; ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o de su relación con su pareja más reciente, ¿le exigió/pidió USTED a su pareja algo relacionado con lo siguiente?:**

**Asuntos Legales**

40. Hablar con su casero o con los administradores del departamento de la vivienda.----->  Si  No

**Inmigración [Conteste solamente si es inmigrante a los Estados Unidos]**

41. Pedir la ciudadanía americana.----->  Si  No

42. Hablar con agentes de inmigración.----->  Si  No

43. Patrocinio de Inmigración.----->  Si  No

**Niños/Crianza de los Hijos/Niños**

44. Cuidar hijos/niños.----->  Si  No

45. Disciplinar a los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No

46. Tomar decisiones de la vida diaria de los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No

47. Tomar decisiones importantes sobre los hijos/niños.----->  Si  No

48. Hablar con las autoridades/agencias de gobierno que protegen a los niños.>  Si  No

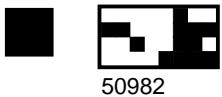
**Por favor, escriba cualquier otra cosa que usted quiera o haya querido que hiciera su pareja**

49. \_\_\_\_\_

50. \_\_\_\_\_

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

### Sección 3B

#### ¿Cómo usted podría saber si su pareja hizo lo que usted quería que hiciera?

**Por favor, marque "sí" o "no" para contestar qué cosas usted ha hecho para saber si su pareja hizo lo que usted quería que hiciera.**

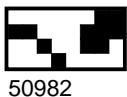
1. Revisó o abrió la correspondencia o papeles personales/diario de su pareja.->  Si  No
2. Llevó cuenta de su uso del teléfono o del teléfono celular.----->  Si  No
3. Llamó a su pareja por teléfono.----->  Si  No
4. Le dijo a su pareja que tuviera un teléfono celular o un buscapersonas "bíper")----->  Si  No
5. Inspeccionó/Revisó la ropa de su pareja.----->  Si  No
6. Inspeccionó/Revisó la casa.----->  Si  No
7. Inspeccionó/revisó recibos/chequera/estados de cuenta del banco.----->  Si  No
8. Inspeccionó/revisó el carro/coche/auto (el odómetro, dónde estaba estacionado).----->  Si  No
9. Le preguntó a los niños, vecinos, amistades, familiares, o compañeros/as de trabajo.----->  Si  No
10. Le dijo a su pareja que le tenía que informar lo que hacía.----->  Si  No
11. Usó una audio o videograbadora.----->  Si  No
12. Espió, siguió, o acechó a su pareja.----->  Si  No
13. No necesitaba revisar; usted simplemente sabía.----->  Si  No

**Por favor, escriba otras cosas que usted hizo para comprobar si su pareja hizo lo que usted le había exigido/pedido que hiciera**

14. Otro \_\_\_\_\_
15. Otro \_\_\_\_\_
16. Otro \_\_\_\_\_

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--

### Sección 3C

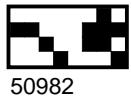
En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿le hizo usted pensar a su pareja que TAL VEZ usted haría algunas de las siguientes cosas si él/ella no hacía lo que usted quería que hiciera?

#### Daño a su pareja

1. Contarle algo cruel, humillante o vergonzoso/penoso a su pareja----->  Si  No
2. No dejar a su pareja ver o hablar con su familia o amistades----->  Si  No
3. Decirle a alguien información personal o privada de su pareja----->  Si  No
4. No dejar a su pareja salir de la casa----->  Si  No
5. Limitar el acceso de su pareja a transportación----->  Si  No
6. Hacerle daño físico a su pareja----->  Si  No
7. Tratar de matar a su pareja----->  Si  No
8. Asustar a su pareja----->  Si  No
9. Tener relaciones sexuales con otra persona----->  Si  No
10. Dejar la relación o divorciarse----->  Si  No
11. No dejar a su pareja tomar un medicamento o medicina recetada----->  Si  No
12. Internar/Ingresar a su pareja en un hospital mental----->  Si  No
13. Hacer que su pareja perdiera su trabajo----->  Si  No
14. No dejar que su pareja fuera a su trabajo----->  Si  No
15. Hacer que su pareja perdiera su vivienda----->  Si  No
16. Destruir económicamente a su pareja----->  Si  No
17. Causarle problemas legales a su pareja----->  Si  No
18. Hacer que arrestaran a su pareja----->  Si  No
19. Amenazar con que deportaran a su pareja a su país----->  Si  No
20. Obligar a su pareja a tener relaciones sexuales de formas que él/ella no quería----->  Si  No
21. Obligar a su pareja a participar en u observar actos sexuales con otras personas----->  Si  No
22. Destruir documentos legales----->  Si  No
23. Destruir o llevarse algo de su pareja----->  Si  No
24. Hacerle daño fisico o matar la mascota de su pareja u otro animal----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -&gt; ●

No así -&gt; ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿le hizo usted pensar a su pareja que TAL VEZ usted haría algunas de las siguientes cosas si él/ella no hacía lo que usted quería que hiciera?

**Daño a su pareja**

25. (No conteste si no tiene hijos/niños) No dejar que su pareja vea a sus hijos/niños o quitarle a sus hijos/niños.----->  Si  No

**Daño a sí misma**

26. Amenazar con suicidarse.----->  Si  No
27. Intentar hacerse daño o suicidarse.----->  Si  No

**Daño a otros**

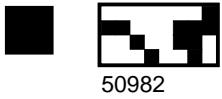
28. Decirle algo cruel o hiriente a las amistades o familiares de su pareja.->  Si  No
29. Hacer daño físico a algún/a amigo/a o familiar de su pareja.----->  Si  No
30. Tratar de matar a algún/a amigo/a o familiar de su pareja.----->  Si  No
31. Destruir propiedad de familiares o amistades.----->  Si  No

**Por favor escriba otras cosas que usted le hizo creer a su pareja que usted haría si él/ella no hacía lo que usted quería.**

32. Otro \_\_\_\_\_

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

### Sección 3D

**Pregunta: En los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿usted hizo pensar a su pareja que buscaría la ayuda de alguien para que él/ella hiciera lo que usted quería que hiciera?**

Si    ¿ A quién le pediría ayuda (por ejemplo, amistades, hijos/niños)? \_\_\_\_\_

No

50982



## Sección 4A

ID NUMBER

50982

--	--	--	--	--

En esta sección nos interesa saber cómo usted se ha sentido durante el último mes.

Marque un círculo para cada pregunta

Pregunta: En el último mes...

	Raras veces o nunca	Algún o poco tiempo	Ocasionalmente o bastante tiempo	La mayor parte del tiempo o Todo el tiempo
1. Me molestaban cosas que usualmente no me molestan>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
2. No tenía ganas de comer; tenía poco apetito.---->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
3. No me podía sentir mejor aún con la ayuda de mi familia o amistades----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
4. Sentía que era tan buena como otras personas.---->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
5. Tenía problemas pensando en lo que estaba haciendo.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
6. Me sentía deprimida.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
7. Sentía que todo lo que hacía era un gran esfuerzo>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
8. Tenía esperanzas para el futuro.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
9. Pensaba que mi vida había sido un fracaso.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
10. Me sentía temerosa.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
11. No podía dormir bien.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
12. Estaba feliz.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
13. 13. Hablaba menos que de costumbre.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
14. Me sentía sola.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
15. La gente era poco amigable.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
16. Disfrutaba la vida.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
17. Tenía ganas de llorar por ratos.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
18. Me sentía triste.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
19. Sentía que no le agradaba/gustaba/caía bien a la gente.--->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>
20. No podía ponerme en movimiento.----->	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>	<input type="radio"/>

50982





## Sección 5A

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**En esta sección, le preguntamos si ha tenido alguna de las siguientes experiencias en los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente. Por favor, marque "sí" o "no".**

1. Mi pareja me agarró con fuerza.----->  Si  No
2. Mi pareja me empujó.----->  Si  No
3. Mi pareja me lanzó/tiró algo que me podía hacer daño.----->  Si  No
4. Mi pareja me dio una bofetada/cacheteada.----->  Si  No
5. Mi pareja me jaló/haló un brazo o el pelo/cabello.----->  Si  No
6. Mi pareja me pateó.----->  Si  No
7. Mi pareja me dio un puño o me dio con algo que me podía hacer daño.----->  Si  No
8. Mi pareja me pegó contra la pared.----->  Si  No
9. Mi pareja me asfixió o estranguló.----->  Si  No
10. Mi pareja me quemó o echó un líquido caliente encima queriendo hacerlo.----->  Si  No
11. Mi pareja me dio una paliza/golpiza/pela/tunda.----->  Si  No
12. Mi pareja usó o amenazó con usar una pistola/revólver o cuchillo.----->  Si  No
13. Mi pareja me forzó a tener relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No
14. Mi pareja me amenazó para hacerme tener relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No
15. Mi pareja no quiso usar un condón mientras teníamos relaciones sexuales.----->  Si  No
16. Tuve relaciones sexuales con mi pareja porque temía lo que podría pasar si no lo hacía.----->  Si  No
17. Estaba adolorida al otro día por el abuso de mi pareja.----->  Si  No
18. Tuve una torcedura, un golpe, o una cortadura pequeña/un tajo pequeño por el abuso de mi pareja.--->  Si  No
19. Me desmayé por un golpe que mi pareja me dio en la cabeza.----->  Si  No
20. Se me rompió un hueso por el abuso de mi pareja.----->  Si  No
21. Fui al médico por el abuso de mi pareja.----->  Si  No
22. ¿Cuándo fue la PRIMERA vez que usted fue abusada de CUALQUIERA de estas formas por CUALQUIER pareja?  
Hace 

--	--

 años (si fue hace menos de un año, marque este círculo) --->

Hace 

--	--

 años (si fue hace menos de un año, marque este círculo) --->

50982



Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5A1

**En esta sección le haremos preguntas sobre si usted hizo algo de lo siguiente en los últimos 12 meses con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente. Por favor, marque "sí" o "no".**

1. Agarré con fuerza a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
2. Empujé a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
3. Lancé/tiré a mi pareja algo que podía hacerle daño.....->  Si  No
4. Le di una bofetada/cachetada a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
5. Le jalé/halé un brazo o el pelo/cabello a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
6. Pateé a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
7. Le di un puño a mi pareja o le di con algo que podía hacerle daño.....->  Si  No
8. Pegué a mi pareja contra la pared.....->  Si  No
9. Asfixié o estrangulé a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
10. Quemé o eché un líquido caliente encima de mi pareja queriendo hacerlo.....->  Si  No
11. Le di una paliza/golpiza/pela/tunda a mi pareja.....->  Si  No
12. Usé o amenacé con usar una pistola/revólver o cuchillo contra mi pareja.....->  Si  No
13. Forcé a mi pareja a tener relaciones sexuales.....->  Si  No
14. Amenacé a mi pareja para hacerlo/la tener relaciones sexuales.....->  Si  No
15. No quise usar anticonceptivos o un condón mientras teníamos relaciones sexuales.....->  Si  No
16. Hice a mi pareja temer lo que podía pasar si no tenía relaciones sexuales conmigo.....->  Si  No
17. Mi pareja estaba adolorida/adolorido al otro día por mi abuso.....->  Si  No
18. Mi pareja tuvo una torcedura, un golpe, o una cortadura pequeña/tajo pequeño por mi abuso.-->  Si  No
19. Mi pareja se desmayó por un golpe en la cabeza dado por mí.....->  Si  No
20. A mi pareja se le rompió un hueso por mi abuso.....->  Si  No
21. Mi pareja fue al médico por mi abuso.....->  Si  No

50982





Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5B

**En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿ha hecho SU PAREJA algo de lo siguiente? Por favor, marque "sí" o "no".**

**Pregunta: En el último año:**

1. Mi pareja me insultó/ se burló de mi nombre.----->  Si  No
2. Mi pareja me habló mal/ usó malas palabras conmigo.----->  Si  No
3. Mi pareja me gritó.----->  Si  No
4. Mi pareja me trató como si yo fuera menos que él/ella.----->  Si  No
5. Mi pareja veló/vigiló mis actividades e insistía en que yo le dijera donde estaba todo el tiempo.----->  Si  No
6. Mi pareja usó nuestro dinero o tomó decisiones importantes de uso de dinero sin decírmelo.----->  Si  No
7. Mi pareja estuvo celoso/a o sospechaba de mis amistades.----->  Si  No
8. Mi pareja me acusó de serle infiel.----->  Si  No
9. Mi pareja interfirió/ se entrometió en mi relación con mi familia.>  Si  No
10. Mi pareja trató de evitar que yo hiciera cosas para ayudarme.-->  Si  No
11. Mi pareja controló mi uso del teléfono.----->  Si  No
12. Mi pareja me dijo que mis sentimientos eran locos.----->  Si  No
13. Mi pareja me echó la culpa de sus problemas.----->  Si  No
14. Mi pareja trató de hacerme sentir loca.----->  Si  No

50982



50982

Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5B1

**En los últimos 12 meses de su relación con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente, ¿ha hecho USTED algo de lo siguiente? Por favor, marque "sí" o "no".**

**Pregunta: En el último año:**

1. Insultó/ se burló del nombre de su pareja.----->  Si  No
2. Le habló mal/ usó malas palabras con su pareja.----->  Si  No
3. Le gritó a su pareja.----->  Si  No
4. Trató a su pareja como si fuera menos que usted.----->  Si  No
5. Veló/Vigiló las actividades de su pareja e insistió en que le dijera donde estaba todo el tiempo.----->  Si  No
6. Usó su dinero o tomó decisiones importantes de uso de dinero sin decírselo a su pareja.----->  Si  No
7. Estuvo celoso/a o sospechaba de las amistades de su pareja.----->  Si  No
8. Acusó a su pareja de serle infiel.----->  Si  No
9. Interfirió/ se entrometió en la relación de su pareja con su familia.----->  Si  No
10. Trató de evitar que su pareja hiciera cosas para ayudarse.----->  Si  No
11. Controló el uso de su pareja del teléfono.----->  Si  No
12. Le dijo a su pareja que sus sentimientos eran locos.----->  Si  No
13. Le echó la culpa de sus problemas a su pareja.----->  Si  No
14. Trató de hacer a su pareja sentirse loco/a.----->  Si  No

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5C

**Las siguientes preguntas tienen que ver con su relación con su pareja o con su pareja más reciente. Por favor, marque "sí" o "no"**

1. Usted tiene derecho a saber todo lo que hace su pareja.----->  Si  No
2. Usted insiste en saber en dónde está su pareja todo el tiempo.---->  Si  No
3. Usted tiene derecho a ser parte de todo lo que hace su pareja.---->  Si  No
4. Usted trata de evitar que su pareja pase tiempo con amistades del sexo opuesto.----->  Si  No
5. A usted le daría coraje si su pareja hiciera algo que usted le dijo que no hiciera.----->  Si  No
6. Usted tiende a ser celosa.----->  Si  No
7. Su pareja no debería tener secretos para usted.----->  Si  No
8. Usted entiende que hay algunas cosas que su pareja tal vez no quiera decirle.----->  Si  No
9. A usted le molesta cuando su pareja hace planes sin hablar primero con usted----->  Si  No

50982





Por favor, marque así -> ●  
No así -> ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5D

### En esta sección, le preguntamos sobre sus relaciones con las personas en general.

Marque una respuesta para cada pregunta.

1. Conozco por lo menos una persona que me puede dar consejos en los que puedo confiar.----->  Ciento  Falso
2. No puedo confiar en nadie que me pueda dar buenos consejos sobre dinero.----->  Ciento  Falso
3. No hay nadie que me pueda decir cómo estoy manejando mis problemas.--->  Ciento  Falso
4. Se que puedo contar con alguien cuando necesito sugerencias/ideas sobre cómo manejar un problema personal.----->  Ciento  Falso
5. Me siento cómoda con alguien para pedirle consejos sobre problemas sexuales.----->  Ciento  Falso
6. Puedo pedirle consejos a alguien para cómo manejar disputas/peleas sobre responsabilidades de la casa.----->  Ciento  Falso
7. Siento que no tengo a nadie con quien compartir mis preocupaciones y miedos más privados.----->  Ciento  Falso
8. No muchas de mis amistades me podrían dar buenos consejos para manejar una crisis en mi familia si la tuviera.----->  Ciento  Falso
9. No hay muchas personas en las que puedo confiar para que me ayuden a resolver mis problemas.----->  Ciento  Falso
10. Hay alguien que me puede aconsejar para cambiar de trabajo o encontrar un trabajo nuevo.----->  Ciento  Falso

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●  
No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5E

**Las siguientes preguntas incluyen una lista de problemas o dificultades que las personas tienen a veces después de sufrir un trauma, como, por ejemplo, un ataque o abuso. Usando la escala de la derecha, donde 1 quiere decir "nunca" y 5 quiere decir "todo el tiempo", marque cuánto usted ha sentido lo siguiente.**

Pregunta: En el último mes cuánto usted...

Marque una respuesta para cada pregunta.

1. Ha tenido recuerdos, pensamientos o imágenes del abuso o violencia incómodos que se repiten.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
2. Ha tenido sueños incómodos sobre abuso que se repiten.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
3. Actuó o se sintió de pronto/de momento como si el abuso que había vivido anteriormente se estaba repitiendo (como si lo estuviera viviendo de nuevo).-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
4. Se alteró cuando algo le recordó el abuso.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
5. Tuvo reacciones físicas (por ejemplo, palpitaciones del corazón, problemas respirando, sudando mucho) cuando algo le recordó el abuso.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
6. Evitó pensar o hablar de abuso.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
7. Evitó actividades o situaciones porque le recordaban el abuso.-> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
8. Tuvo problemas recordando partes importantes del abuso.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
9. Perdió interés en actividades que antes le gustaban.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
10. Se sintió distante o separada de otras personas.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
11. Se sintió adormecida emocionalmente o incapaz de tener sentimientos amorosos hacia las personas más cerca de usted.> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
12. Se sintió como si su futuro fuera a terminar antes de tiempo.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
13. Tuvo dificultades para dormirse o para continuar durmiendo.-> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
14. Se sintió irritable o tuvo arranques/estallidos de coraje.--> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
15. Tuvo dificultad para concentrarse.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
16. Estaba "super-alerta", vigilante, o en guardia.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5
17. Se sentía agitada o que se podía asustar fácilmente.-----> O 1   O 2   O 3   O 4   O 5

50982





50982

Por favor, marque así ➤ ●

No así ➤ ✗ ✓

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

## Sección 5F

**En su opinión, ¿qué probable es que su pareja o su pareja más reciente trate de hacer lo siguiente durante el próximo año? Por favor, conteste usando la escala que se indica y marque solamente un círculo para cada pregunta.**

**Pregunta: En el próximo año, ¿qué probable cree usted que su pareja ...**

Marque una respuesta para cada pregunta.

	Nada	Algo	Un poco	Bastante	Mucho
1. Amenazará con hacerle daño físico?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
2. La atacará físicamente?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
3. Le hará daño físico?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
4. Tratará de matarla?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
5. La controlará o dominará?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
6. La humillará o degradará?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
7. Le causará problemas financieros (de dinero)?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
8. Amenazará o hará daño físico a alguien importante para usted? ----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
9. Le causará problemas con la ley?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
10. Destruirá propiedad suya?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
11. Herirá físicamente a alguien importante para usted?--->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
12. Violará una orden de protección teniendo contacto con usted, de usted tener una orden o conseguir una?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
13. La rastreará o la encontrará si usted lo/la dejó o si lo/la fuera a dejar?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
14. Tratará de llevarle o secuestrarle sus hijos/niños?--->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
15. Tratará de tener la custodia de sus hijos/niños?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4
16. Le causará daño emocional a sus hijos/niños?----->	<input type="radio"/> 0	<input type="radio"/> 1	<input type="radio"/> 2	<input type="radio"/> 3	<input type="radio"/> 4

17. ¿Cuánto miedo le tiene a su pareja o a su pareja más reciente?----->

No le tengo miedo <-----> Le tengo muchísimo miedo

0     1     2     3     4

50982





50982

ID NUMBER

--	--	--	--	--	--

**Por favor escriba cualquier comentario que tenga sobre el cuestionario (por ejemplo, frases o palabras que usamos en el cuestionario o algo que debamos incluir).**

**Muchas gracias por participar. Su tiempo es muy valioso para ayudarnos a desarrollar un mejor entendimiento de las relaciones de pareja.**

50982



## **Appendix J-4**

In-depth Interview Consent Form, Protocol, and Debriefing—Spanish

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Aprobación Para Participar en el Estudio**

**Nombre del Proyecto:** Desarrollo y Validación de una Medida del Control Coercitivo en Violencia Entre Parejas Intimas

**Investigadora Principal:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.

**Teléfono:** 202-687-1997

**Coordinadora de Proyecto:** Darci Terrell

**Teléfono:** 405-969-3078

**Patrocinador:** Instituto Nacional de Justicia

*El Consejo de Revisión Institucional de la Universidad de Georgetown ha aprobado el conducto del presente estudio. Para mas información sobre sus derechos como contribuyente al estudio, puede llamar a la oficina del Consejo de Revisión Institucional, al teléfono: 202-687-1506.*

**Introducción:** Esta usted invitada/o a considerar participar en una parte adicional del estudio. Estaremos haciéndole preguntas acerca de la encuesta de Control Coercitivo que recién acabo. El presente documento explica el propósito y naturaleza del estudio, sus posibles riesgos y beneficios, otras opciones para usted, y sus derechos como participante en el estudio. Por favor tome el tiempo necesario para discutir el estudio con cualquier otra persona que quiera. La decisión de participar o de no participar es suya. Si usted decide no participar, por favor anote la fecha y firme en la ultima línea del documento.

**Antecedentes y propósito del estudio:** Estamos realizando el estudio para mejor entender los diferentes efectos que tienen en una relación intima, las maneras en cuales los hombres y mujeres intentan controlarse a si mismos. Estudios previos que investigaban relaciones violentas se han enfocado principalmente en el nivel de la violencia, y no en el nivel de control en la relación. Al realizar el presente estudio, se espera aprender las diferencias que existen entre parejas violentas, aun más que el nivel de violencia.

**Número de participantes:** Un total de 50 personas participaran en esta fase del estudio.

**Plan de estudio:** Investigadores le harán preguntas a personas que hayan acabado y entregado una encuesta de Control Coercitivo. Le deberá llevar 30 minutos para contestar todas las preguntas que se le harán en privado. Se les harán preguntas como, "Me puede dar un ejemplo de una situación cuando su pareja le exigió que hiciera algo?" "Que cree que el/ella le hubiera hecho si no hubiera hecho lo que le pidieron?" Si usted se siente mal y quiere hablar con alguien acerca de su seguridad personal o de las emociones y sentimientos que sintió después de acabar la entrevista, nosotros le daremos información de recursos o personas con quien puede hablar.

**Duración del estudio para cada participante:** Estimamos que le lleve 30 minutos para contestar todas las preguntas.

**Posibles beneficios de participar en el estudio:** No hay beneficios directos de participar en esta fase del estudio. La información que usted nos proporcione durante la entrevista nos ayudara a entender mejor las relaciones cuando uno o dos miembros de la pareja intenta controlar al otro. Los resultados del estudio también ayudara a mejorar los programas de intervención de violencia domestica.

**Posibles riesgos de participar en el estudio:** Si su pareja sabe de su participación en el estudio, usted pudiera estar en riesgo de que el/ella se vengue de alguna manera. También, las preguntas de la encuesta pudieran hacerle pensar en cosas que le molesten o hagan sentir mal. A la vez, el tener la oportunidad de pensar en sus experiencias le pudiera resultar de beneficio, pero debe saber que su participación en esta fase del estudio no va a resultar en consejos o terapia.

**Quien puede participar en la entrevista:** Cualquier persona que cumpla los requisitos de participación en la encuesta de Control Coercitivo (personas mayores de los 18 años de edad, quien esta en una relación en cual ha tenido por lo menos un incidente de violencia en los últimos 12 meses), y que haya completado una encuesta de Control Coercitivo.

**Confidencialidad de la información reunida para el estudio:** Las respuestas que nos de en la entrevista permanecerán confidenciales. No usaremos su nombre o características personales que se puedan usar para identificarla/lo con sus respuestas. Ya que firme este documento, será guardado en un archivo con candado y estará separado de su entrevista. Los investigadores serán las únicas personas que puedan identificar su nombre con su numero de entrevista. Las respuestas de la entrevista se guardarán en un archivo y se va a destruir cuando termine el estudio. Solamente los investigadores tendrán acceso a sus respuestas. Los nombres de los participantes del estudio no serán usados en documentos que resulten del estudio. Toda la información reunida para el estudio se presentará por grupo, así que ninguna persona o individuo podrá ser identificado.

Si durante la entrevista nos cuenta de un niño a quien le están causando abuso, o de su intención de dañar a alguien o así misma/o, estamos obligados a reportar esa información a las autoridades.

**Cumplimientos de HIPPA:** El presente proyecto no requiere que le pidamos información de sus archivos médicos.

**Gastos de participación:** No existen gastos para que usted participe en el estudio.

**Pagos por su participación:** A usted se le pagarán otros \$20 por su tiempo por participar en la entrevista.

**Sus derechos como participante en el estudio:** Su participación en el estudio es completamente voluntaria. Usted tiene el derecho de terminar con el estudio cuando usted guste. No es necesario que conteste las preguntas que no quiera contestar. El dejar el estudio no le resultará en ningún castigo o perdida de beneficios a cuales tiene derecho de recibir. Si decide no continuar con el estudio, dígale a la persona que la/lo entrevistó y dígale que no quiere continuar con el estudio.

**Preguntas:** Si tiene alguna pregunta durante el estudio, por favor hable con la doctora Mary Ann Dutton al teléfono 202-687-1997. Para más información sobre sus derechos como contribuyente al estudio, puede llamar a la oficina del Consejo de Revisión Institucional de la Universidad de Georgetown, al teléfono: 202-687-1506.

**Declaración del investigador:** Yo le he explicado el estudio al participante. Hemos platicado acerca del procedimiento del estudio, sus posibles riesgos y beneficios, los aspectos de la investigación, y le he contestado todas las preguntas que el participante y sus familiares me han hecho.

Firma del investigador \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_

**Aprobación del participante**

Yo he leído la información dada en el presente documento, o la información fue leída por el investigador. Todas mis preguntas fueron contestadas y estoy satisfecha/o con las respuestas. Yo voluntariamente acepto participar en el estudio.

[Al firmar, le darán una copia del documento. El original será guardado en una cajón con llave y será destruido cuando acabe el estudio.]

Su firma \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_

Firma del investigador/testigo \_\_\_\_\_

Fecha \_\_\_\_\_



ID Number: 

--	--	--	--

Interviewer Name:

Site:

Date:

## IN-DEPTH INTERVIEW PROTOCOL

### Instruction to Interviewer:

Use the following script to introduce the In-depth Interview Protocol after the participant has completed the Coercive Control Survey

*Si le interesa, nos gustaría hacerle una entrevista que le llevara aproximadamente 30 minutos. Si acepta le daremos \$20 dólares mas por su participación. En la entrevista le haremos preguntas de seguimiento que son similares a las de la encuesta. Le gustaría participar en este segundo paso?*

If the participant would like to participate, they must read and sign the In-depth Interview Protocol Consent Form.

The Interviewer will use the participant's completed Coercive Control Survey as a foundation for guiding the In-depth Interview. Refer to Section 2A of the completed survey. Pick at least 3 (three) items where the participant indicated "YES" that their partner DEMANDED something of them (there may be more than 3 items in this section where the participant noted "YES"; pick only 3 for the purpose of this interview (if possible, select items from different "categories" if there are more than 3 items). You will ask follow-up questions for each of the 3 items.

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #1:**

- 1.1 Usted indica que su pareja a veces le exigía que usted: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")
- 1.2 ¿Qué tan seguido le pidió su pareja que hiciera eso?
- 1.3 Me puede dar un ejemplo de una situación cuando su pareja le pidió que hiciera eso?
- 1.4 ¿Qué paso antes de que le pidiera hacer eso?
- 1.5 ¿Cómo le hizo saber a usted lo que él/ella quería que usted hiciera?
- 1.6 ¿Qué piensa que él/ella le hubiera hecho si usted NO hacia lo que le pedía?
- 1.7 ¿Qué piensa que hubiera pasado si usted SÍ hubiera hecho lo que le pedía?
- 1.8 ¿Qué hizo usted cuando le pidieron hacer esa exigencia?
- 1.9 ¿Cómo le hizo sentir el hacer [participant's response to demand]?
- 1.10 ¿Tiene alguna otra comentario o cosa que decir de la esta exigencia que le pidieron?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #2:**

2.1 Usted indica que su pareja a veces le exigía que usted: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house

2.2 ¿Qué tan seguido le pidió su pareja que hiciera eso?

2.3 Me puede dar un ejemplo de una situación cuando su pareja le pidió que hiciera eso.

2.4 ¿Qué paso antes de que le pidiera hacer eso?

2.5 ¿Cómo le hizo saber a usted lo que él/ella quería que usted hiciera?

2.6 ¿Qué piensa que él/ella le hubiera hecho si usted NO hacia lo que le pedía?

2.7 ¿Qué piensa que hubiera pasado si usted SI hubiera hecho lo que le pedían?

2.8 ¿Qué hizo usted cuando le pidieron hacer esa exigencia?

2.9 ¿Cómo le hizo sentir el haber [participant's response to demand]?

2.10 ¿Tiene alguna otra comentario o cosa que decir de la esta exigencia que le pidieron?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #3:**

3.1 Usted indica que su pareja a veces le exigía que usted: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

3.2 ¿Qué tan seguido le pidió su pareja que hiciera eso?

3.3 Me puede dar un ejemplo de una situación cuando su pareja le pidió que hiciera eso.

3.4 ¿Qué paso antes de que le pidiera hacer eso?

3.5 ¿Cómo le hizo saber a usted lo que él/ella quería que usted hiciera?

3.6 ¿Qué piensa que él/ella le hubiera hecho si usted NO hacia lo que le pedía?

3.7 ¿Qué piensa que hubiera pasado si usted SI hubiera hecho lo que le pedían?

3.8 ¿Qué hizo usted cuando le pidieron hacer esa exigencia?

3.9 ¿Cómo le hizo sentir el hacer [participant's response to demand]?

3.10 ¿Tiene alguna otra comentario o cosa que decir de esta exigencia que le pidieron?

## **Platica de Salida**

Muchas gracias por su participación en este estudio. Esperamos que los resultados nos ayuden a adquirir un mejor entendimiento de las maneras que parejas que están en relaciones intimas usan para controlarse a si mismos.

Las preguntas que le hicimos quizás le hayan producido a usted cuestiones e instantes desagradables. Si usted se siente mal y quiere hablar con alguien acerca de su seguridad personal o de las emociones y sentimientos que sintió después de acabar el cuestionario, los investigadores que le hicieron las preguntas y le dieron la encuesta les encantaría platicar con usted. También le pedimos que le hable a la doctora Lisa Goodman, la investigadora principal del estudio y profesora en la universidad de Boston College. Su teléfono es el 617-552-1725.

Si siente que necesita mas tiempo para explorar los sentimientos que recordó a causa de su participación en el estudio, existen recursos a cuales puede acudir. Puede llamar a Safelink, la línea telefónica del estado de Massachusetts para la violencia domestica, al 1-877-785-2020 (llamada gratuita). Tambien hemos incluido una lista de recursos disponibles en el estado de Massachussets para victimas de violencia y coerción. Por favor pásele esta información a cualquier persona que usted piense la pueda necesitar.

**Si sabe de alguien que usted crea quisiera participar en el estudio, por favor pásele la siguiente información o hable con una de las personas que la/lo entrevistó o le dio el cuestionario:**

**Lisa Goodman  
617-552-1725**

**Muchas gracias!**

## **Appendix K**

Training Materials for Survey Administration

K-1 Survey Administration Training Manual

K-2 Training Outline for MCC Survey Administration at DC Superior Court

**Appendix K-1**

Survey Administration Training Manual

# **Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence**

## **Survey Administration Training Manual**

## Contents

Section	Page
1. Introduction to the Project .....	1-1
1.1 Introduction .....	1-1
1.2 Definitions .....	1-2
2. Introduction to the Coercive Control Survey .....	2-1
2.1 Overview of the Coercive Control Survey .....	2-1
2.2 Scan Format of the CCS .....	2-1
3. Informed Consent and Confidentiality .....	3-1
3.1 Risks to Respondents .....	3-1
3.2 Risk Management .....	3-1
3.3 Informed Consent .....	3-2
3.4 Confidentiality and Data Monitoring Procedures .....	3-2
4. Logistics of Survey Administration .....	4-1
4.1 Respondent Recruitment and Survey Sites .....	4-1
4.2 Preparation for Survey Administration .....	4-1
4.3 Onsite Administration of the Survey .....	4-3
4.4 Administering the In-Depth Interviews .....	4-5
4.5 RA Activities to be Conducted Following each Survey Session .....	4-6
4.6 Activities to be Conducted at COSMOS Following Submission of the Complete Envelope .....	4-7
5. Technical Proposal - Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence .....	5-1
6. COSMOS Corporation Organizational Capability Statement .....	6-1
7. Additional Resources .....	7-1

## **Exhibits**

### Section 1:

Model of Coercive Control

Development of Coercive Control Measure: Conceptual Framework

### Section 2:

Coercive Control Survey (CCS)

### Section 3:

Detailed Safety Protocol

Consent Form for Coercive Control Survey

Domestic Violence Resources

### Section 4:

Subject Recruitment Flyer

Payment Funds Receipt

Raffle Receipt

Survey and Payment Logs

Consent Form for In-depth Interviews

In-depth Interview Protocol

## **1. INTRODUCTION TO THE PROJECT**

### **1.1 Introduction**

In 2001, the team of COSMOS, Georgetown University Medical Center, and Boston College were awarded a grant from the National Institute of Justice (NIJ) to develop a measure of coercive control in intimate partner relationships. Until now, the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and there exists no adequate measure of “nonviolent coercive control” in intimate partner violence (IPV).

The specific objectives of this grant are to: 1) develop a conceptual model of coercive control, 2) develop an ecologically and statistically valid instrument to measure coercive control; 3) evaluate the psychometric properties of the coercive control measure by administering the instrument in the field, and 4) conduct a preliminary test of the usefulness of the measure.

The team has developed a conceptual model of coercive control (objective 1). This “conceptual framework” includes an annotated description of the coercive process and mediating and moderating constructs related to coercion.

Using the conceptual framework, the team developed an instrument to measure coercive control (objective 2). A national domestic violence panel of 20 experts assisted in the drafting and review of the measure, and more than 100 professionals in the field have provided the team with feedback to refine the measure.

The next (and current) step in the process is to have individuals complete the instrument (a survey) to see how well the measure captures the experience of coercive control (objective 3). The survey will be administered to five heterogenous subgroups:

1. Identified male IPV perpetrators (n = 100);
2. Identified female IPV perpetrators (n = 100);
3. Identified female IPV victims (n = 100);
4. A community sample of IPV male adults (n = 100); and
5. A community sample of IPV female adults (n = 100).

The community samples will include respondents who report either IPV victimization or perpetration by either or both partners. In addition, the survey will be administered to a comparison group of male adults (n = 50) and female adults (n = 50) involved in a current intimate relationship, but with no reported IPV.

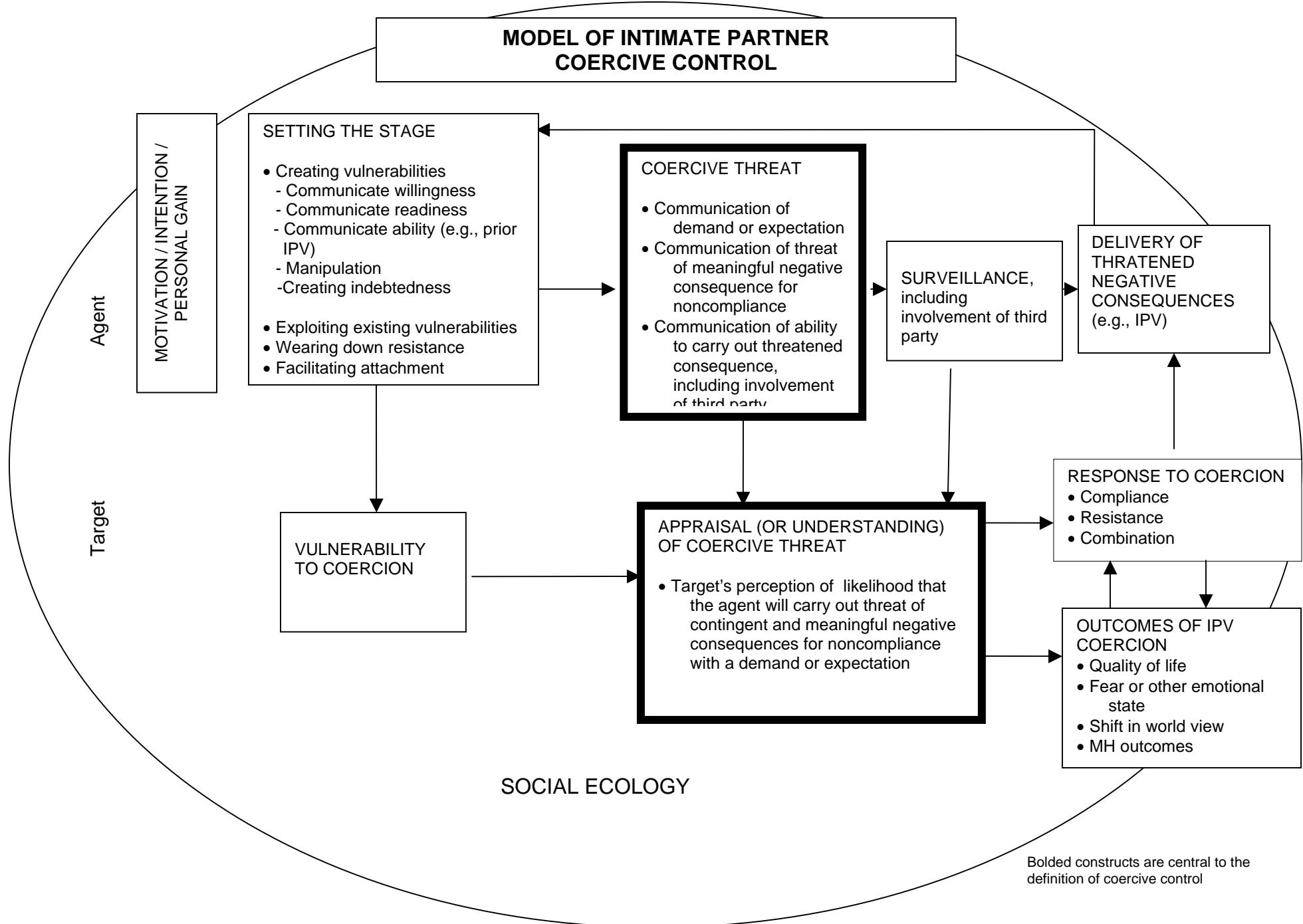
Thus, our target within both the heterogenous subgroups and the comparison group is 600 responses, though the survey will be administered to more than 600 to achieve the target response in each group.

Respondents will be paid \$20 for submission of the completed survey. Additionally, each respondent will be eligible to receive one of three \$100 raffles. Travel and child care expenses will be paid, though funds for this purpose are limited.

**In-depth Interviews.** One of every 10 of the 500 respondents ( $n = 50$ ) will be administered an in-depth interview as part of the assessment of construct validity. The request for an in-depth interview will be made after the participant has completed the survey. The interviewer will explore the respondent's answers to obtain more information about the issues that the item was intended to measure. This procedure will help determine validity in two ways: 1) by identifying whether the item adequately captured the respondent's actual experience; and 2) by determining whether the item has a substantially similar meaning to the respondent's actual experience, thus capturing similar phenomena for different people. Participants will be offered an additional \$20 for completion of the in-depth interview.

## 1.2 Definitions

<i>Intimate partner violence (IPV):</i>	Actual or threatened physical or sexual violence or psychological and emotional abuse directed toward a spouse, ex-spouse, current or former boyfriend or girlfriend, or current or former dating partner. Intimate partners (or relationships) may be heterosexual or of the same sex. Some of the common terms used to describe intimate partner violence are domestic abuse, spouse abuse, domestic violence, courtship violence, battering, marital rape, and date rape.
<i>Coercive control:</i>	The communication of a threat of contingent and meaningful negative consequences for noncompliance with a demand, request, or expectation.
<i>Subjects or respondents:</i>	The persons taking the survey will be referred to in this Training Manual, and thereafter, as either subjects or respondents.



## **DEVELOPMENT OF COERCIVE CONTROL MEASURE: CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK**

### **Working Definition of Coercion:**

**IPV COERCION:** Communication of a credible threat of contingent and negative meaningful consequences for an intimate partner's noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

**APPRAISAL OF IPV COERCION:** Understanding or perception of the likelihood that one's partner would (or would try) to deliver contingent and meaningful negative consequences for one's noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

### **Other Components of the IPV Coercion Model**

**RESPONSE TO COERCION:** The act of responding to IPV coercion and/or the appraisal of IPV coercion along two non-orthogonal dimensions of compliance and resistance.

**SURVEILLANCE:** The act of monitoring an intimate partner's response to coercion.

**DELIVERY OF THREATENED (OR OTHER) CONSEQUENCES:** Carrying out threatened (or other) consequences for an intimate partner's actual (or assumed) noncompliance with a demand or expectation.

**OUTCOMES OF IPV COERCION:** The emotional, cognitive, behavioral, social or physiological outcomes associated with exposure to IPV Coercion or with meaningful levels of Appraisal of IPV Coercion.

**SETTING THE STAGE FOR IPV COERCION:** Exploiting or creating vulnerabilities in one's intimate partner that reduces the capacity or likelihood of resistance to IPV Coercion.

**VULNERABILITY TO COERCION:** Emotional, cognitive, behavioral, social, or physiological conditions that reduce one's capacity or likelihood of resistance to IPV Coercion.

**MOTIVATION, INTENTION, OR PERSONAL GAIN FOR IPV COERCION:** The conscious or unconscious motivation or intention to engage in IPV Coercive acts or the potential of personal gain for doing so.

**Underlying Assumptions / Points of Clarification or Discussion :**

1. Social power plays a role in all interpersonal relationships, including intimate partner relationships (French & Raven, 1959).
2. Coercion is one of several forms of social power. Both social power and coercion are found in most intimate partner relationships, although there is a great deal of variance in forms and severity of coercion (Molm, 1997; Raven, 1993; Raven, Center, & Rodriguez, 1975). Distinguishing “acceptable” vs. “unacceptable” forms of coercion is determined by social norms. An example of “unacceptable” coercion might be the threat of a beating for not coming home on time. An example of an “acceptable” coercion might be the threat of calling the police if the abusive partner does not put down the gun.
3. Control is influencing someone to do something they would not otherwise do. Control is neither positive nor negative; it is the product of inevitable social power in relationships. The construct of control encompasses coercion, as well as force, persuasion, and authority, and other forms of social power. It is coercion that is the focus of the development of this measure.
4. Coercion is a fluid process. An individual can be both a “target” and an “agent” of coercion – sometimes within the same interaction. The level or severity of coercion between the two partners may or may not differ dramatically.
5. Coercion is the act of getting someone to act or think in a particular way by using or threatening with negative consequences for noncompliance. As such, coercion is a specific mechanism of control. An act of coercion requires a “target” and an “agent.”
6. Coercion is different from “force.” Force involves “lack of volition” where – given sufficient force - it is physically impossible to resist.
7. Coercion involves “choice,” but not “free choice.” By definition, there is a “cost” for choosing noncompliance. When that “cost” is meaningful to the “target” of coercion, then socially or clinically significant coercion exists.
8. The agent’s awareness of his/her intention or motivation to control the target through coercion is not necessary for the coercive process to occur or for coercive outcomes to result.

**Purpose of Developing a Measure of Coercive Control**

1. To develop a measure capable of assessing the type, severity, and extent of coercion within intimate partner relationships.
2. To apply the new measure of coercive control in the study of violent intimate partner relationships in order to test a range of hypotheses, including, for example that types

of intimate partner violence can be distinguished by the level of coercive control they involve (Johnson, 1995; Johnson & Ferraro, 2000) or that some criminal conduct is the result of coercive control in intimate relationships (Colvin, Cullen, & Vander Ven, 2001; Stark, 1995).

DRAFT

## **Elaboration of the Model of Coercive Control in Intimate Relationships**

### **COERCIVE PROCESS**

#### **1. Communication of Demand, Request, or Expectation**

- a. Coercion requires that the “agent” demand, request, or expect the “target” to do something that the target does NOT want to do.
- b. Coercion doesn’t require – although may involve - an explicit “demand,” especially in ongoing relationships where current expectations are made clear through past interactions. Likewise, a seemingly pleasant “request,” that appears to be non-coercive when observed from outside the interaction, may functionally be a demand, again depending on past interactions between the target and agent. (Komter, 1989)
- c. Demands, requests, or expectations can occur in any domain. The more domains in which coercion occurs, the more pervasive is the pattern of coercion in the relationship.
  - (1) Personal activities (e.g., coming and going, eating, sleeping, dressing)
  - (2) Social life
  - (3) Household (nuclear family and extended family living in same house)
  - (4) Family members (extended family not living in same house)
  - (5) Work related/economic/money
  - (6) Children/parenting
  - (7) Intimate/romance

#### **2. Communication of the Threat of a Meaningful Negative Consequence**

- a. Coercion requires the communication of a contingent “meaningful” negative consequence for noncompliance.
- b. Communication of a contingent negative consequence for noncompliance may be established through a) a prior actual contingent negative consequence delivered by the agent for noncompliance or b) a threatened one.
- c. Communication of the threat of future negative consequence may be explicit (e.g., direct verbal statement) or implicit (e.g., gesture or words that carry the meaning of threat, even though they are not overtly stated).
- d. Communication of a threat of a contingent negative consequence may involve “invoking the power of third parties” (Raven, 1993).
- e. The contingent negative consequence may be the application of an aversive consequence (i.e., punishment) or the removal of something positive (i.e., response cost) – both of which function to increase the likelihood of compliance.

The “meaningfulness” of the threatened consequence helps to determine “how much cost.” Some negative consequences may be slight (e.g., refusal to talk), while others may have tremendous impact on the target’s life (e.g., having one’s children taken away), and yet others are life-threatening (e.g., being killed). Understanding the “weight” or “cost” of the consequence to the target is essential to understanding the coercive process. The weight or meaning of a particular negative consequence is unique to the target – determined by many factors (Cartwright, 1959).

## **COERCIVE OUTCOME**

### **3. Perceived Threat of Coercion**

- a. The target’s perception that her/his partner is sufficiently ready, willing, and able to engage in a threatened and meaningful negative consequence for noncompliance with a demand, request, or expectation by the agent provides the cognitive component of the definition of coercive outcome (Outcome1). That is, coercion has been “successful” when the target behaves “as though” the contingent punishment would occur, regardless of whether it actually would occur.
- b. The perception of “sufficiently ready, willing, and able” should incorporate the potential for doubt – since the criteria would not likely need to be 100% certain in order that one modify one’s behavior (e.g., comply) with a demand, request, or expectation. Given a sufficiently high threshold consequence (e.g., being killed, having one’s children taken away), the target’s perceived likelihood that such a consequence for noncompliance would occur may need only be minimal in order to coerce compliance.
- c. It is probably necessary that the agent has engaged in at least some form of coercive acts – allowing for disagreement in report between agent and target. Otherwise, the target may be experiencing the situation as coercive, but it would be based on other factors (e.g., prior relationship experience, disordered psychological state).

### **4. Compliance / Resistance as Coercive Outcome**

- a. The target’s response to the demand, request, or expectation may be in the form of compliance or resistance. Note that resistance may not be sufficiently strong and eventually lead to compliance, so both may occur in response to threat.
- b. Coercion is an interactive process – not a static phenomenon. The “demand/response interaction” is iterative and several sequences may occur in the coercive process. For example, the sequence may be

demand/resist/demand/resist/demand/comply – each time the demand becoming stronger.

- c. The target's behavioral response to coercion involves elements of two dimensions, which may occur alone or together.
  - (1. Compliance – doing what the target demands
  - (2. Resistance – resisting what the target demand.
    - a) Direct resistance may involve confrontation or an overt resistance of the demand
    - b) Indirect resistance involves resisting, but in a way that is “softer” or doesn't involve a direct confrontation of the agent (e.g., delaying, rather than refusing; saying “yes” to the “request” but then not doing it).

## **5. Delivery of Threatened Negative Consequences**

- a. In some cases, the threat of negative consequence is actually delivered – for actual or perceived noncompliance. Generally, these acts fit the definitions of various forms of IPV.

# **MEDIATING AND MODERATING CONSTRUCTS RELATED TO COERCION**

## **6. Other Effects Of The Coercive Process**

- a. Emotional and cognitive responses associated with compliance or resistance are many. Examples include sadness, fear, helplessness, futility, anger, hope).
- b. The “meaning” of the compliance and resistance behavior is also important. Compliance now may be viewed as an interim step (e.g., to buy time) until the target can resist more successfully later. Or, compliance may mean to the target she/he has “given up” resisting the agent's demands, at least for now.

## **7. Agent's Surveillance**

- a. Coercive power requires the agent to be able to conduct surveillance to detect compliance vs. noncompliance. Examples of this in intimate partner violence include the batterer checking the odometer to determine whether the partner came right home as demanded, frequent phone calls to determine whether the partner has left the home, required reports by the target to the agent, or “checking” underwear to determine whether the partner had had sex with someone else.

## **8. Setting The Stage For Coercion**

Coercion often involves some type of “setting the stage” or preparation of the target to increase the likelihood that subsequent coercive tactics will be effective.

a. **Creating Vulnerability.** The agent may soften the target – that is, communicating to the target that the agent is “willing,” “able,” and “ready” to impose a negative consequence. It is “important to demonstrate to the target that not only are the means available for coercion (i.e., ability), but that the agent is ready and willing to pay the costs that coercion implies” (Raven, 1993).

(1. Communication of “willingness” of agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.

a) Communication of willingness occurs when the agent has previously imposed negative consequences (i.e., has done it before) on the target or someone else that the target knows about.

b) Communication of willingness occurs when the target states explicitly that he/she is going to engage in threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it).

(2. Communication of “ability” of agent to engage in threatened negative consequence.

a) Agent’s ability to administer the negative consequence is based on the target’s perception of an uneven power difference between the agent and the target. Perceived power differences – which alone or in combination provide a basis from which to persuasively communicate the ability to engage in the threatened negative consequences - can be derived from one or more sources, including, but not limited to the following:

- Actual IPV
- Physical size and strength
- Access to money and other economic resources
- Access to weapons
- Ability to utilize third party resources (e.g., individuals, institutional systems, INS, IRS) to invoke consequences
- Access to the “target” or “target’s” family and friends
- Access to other resources that increase power

(3. Communication of agent’s “readiness” to engage in threatened negative consequence against agent (Raven, 1993).

a) Communication of readiness answers the “why now?” question in terms of the target’s response to coercion. This is especially important when explaining the target’s resistance (vs. compliance).

b) Communication of readiness may occur by means of the agent saying explicitly - or in some other way communicating - that he/she is going to impose the threatened negative consequence (i.e., has said he/she will do it) within a particular timeframe.

b. **Softening the target/Wearing down target's resistance.** Setting the stage for coercion may also occur through wearing down the target's resistance. Wearing down resistance can involve the agent's reducing the target's emotional (e.g., inducing a state of terror/fear, emotionally wearing down), physical (e.g., injury, sleep deprivation), cognitive (e.g., creating mental confusion in the target), or economic (e.g., making it necessary for the target to use up her/his resources) resources -- some of which may be necessary to resist.

c. **Exploiting target's prior vulnerabilities.** Coercion may also be made more possible because the agent exploits the target's prior vulnerabilities (e.g., childhood abuse, prior victimization, mental disorder or disability, physical disability).

## 9. Social Ecology Surrounding Coercion

Coercion occurs in the context of a relationship. Characteristics of intimate coercive relationships may vary enormously. An ecological model (Bronfenbrenner, 1979; Dutton, 1996) is helpful to organize these contextual factors, as potential moderators and mediators of the impact of coercion, as well as on coercive tactics, per se.

Examples are:

a. Economic and Tangible Resources Context

- i. Level of economic and tangible resources available to the target independent of the agent (e.g., threats to withhold child support payments will be more salient for someone with no job).

b. Institutional Context

- i. Level and type of institutional involvement of each partner
- ii. Public policies, including, but not limited to:
  - 1. Public housing policy of zero tolerance for violence ("one strike and you're out" initiative).
  - 2. Welfare reform
- iii. Institutional support of ideology of family patriarchy [see work by Michael D. Smith and Walter DeKeseredy]

c. Cultural and Social Context

- i. Socioeconomic / social class status
- ii. Race/ethnicity
- iii. Religion
- iv. Immigration status / citizenship / country of origin
- v. Sexual orientation

- vi. Urban/suburban/rural
  - vii. Age cohort
- d. Social Network
- i. Family, friends, co-workers, neighbors, and acquaintances
    - 1. Social networks may influence coercion. Example: The agent's extended family that lives with the target may make noncompliance more costly, since it may invoke the disapproval of others, in addition to the agent's threat.
    - 2. Isolation from social network may increase vulnerability of the target, or serve to increase agents' coercive tactics and motivation to coercion.
    - 3. Target's social support may bolster the target's efforts at noncompliance with coercive threats.
    - 4. Agent's involvement in patriarchal all-male social networks – and the pro-abuse male peer support it may provide – may provide support to bolster the agent's coercive (and other violent and abusive) tactics.
  - ii. Partner
    - 1. Other forms of social power ascribed to the partner– in addition to coercion - that may form the basis of coercion, influence, or other forms of control.
      - a) Reward power - ability to provide or withhold positive social consequence directly or indirectly (e.g., through third party).
      - b) Legitimate power to influence is seen as legitimate by means of social norms (e.g., gender roles), status in the community (e.g., religious or community leader), position of authority (e.g., police officer), and agent's legal immigration status. Thus, the agent's greater legitimate status relative to the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., the religious community supports the role of husband in making demands of female partner, agent threatens to withhold information about filing immigration papers unless the target complies). Legitimate power can also be used by the partner to the benefit of the other.
      - c) Expert power to influence is based on target's perception of agent's specific expertise (e.g., black belt, skillful verbal negotiation skills). Thus, an agent's greater expertise, relative to the target, provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent has knowledge about cars which support his threats to tamper with the

car to make it unsafe). The partner can also use her/his expert power to the benefit of the other.

d) Referent power to influence based on target's identification or emotional connection with agent (e.g., emotional attachment, identity as "husband"). An agent's lesser attachment or commitment to the relationship relative to the target provides an opportunity for coercion (e.g., agent threatens to leave the relationship unless the target complies) by the partner.

e) Informational power to influence based on agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target (e.g., where the checkbook is kept). Thus, the agent's access to or control over information that is important to the target provides the opportunity for coercion (e.g. partner tells target that she will lose custody of the children if she calls the police because he is a citizen and she is not). The partner may also use his/her informational power to the benefit of the other.

(2. Physical power

a) The agent's physical size and strength, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use physical force as a threat.

(3. Economic autonomy and resources

a) The agent's economic autonomy and resources, relative to the target, enhances the agent's ability to use economic reasons as a tool of coercion.

e. Individual Context

i. Target's strengths / resilience and vulnerabilities

1. Cognitive

a. Target's intellectual problem-solving abilities may enhance her/his ability to not comply, without incurring the threatened consequence.

2. Physical status / physiological state

a. Alcohol / drug use and abuse

i. Intoxication may impair her/his ability to resist a coercive demand.

ii. Chronic alcohol/drug use or addition

b. Physical disabilities

c. Chronic illness (e.g., cancer, HIV/AIDS)

3. Mental health / mental status

- a. Chronic mental illness
  - b. Disorientation or confusion
  - c. Depression
  - d. PTSD and anxiety
4. Behavioral Skills / Deficits
- a. Proficiencies and abilities (e.g., karate, firearms)
  - b. Skill deficits (e.g., inability to drive a car)

## **9. Target's Increased Vulnerability**

This element of the target's increased vulnerability following "setting the stage" tactics is not essential to the model of coercive control in that it is not essential that it occur. However, it may be of interest in better studying the dynamics of the coercion process.

## **10. Motivation, Intention, Personal Gain**

The question of the agent's motivation, intention, or personal gain is complex, and difficult to assess, especially given social desirability and psychological defense (e.g., denial, projection) considerations. An awareness of intent to coerce seems not necessary in order to engage in acts that would be objectively judged as coercive. Yet, this construct is an important one to consider further.

## References

- Bronfenbrenner, U. (1979). *The ecology of human development: Experiments by nature and design*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Cartwright, D. (1959). A field theoretical conception of power. In D. Cartwright (Ed.), *Studies in social power* (pp. 183-220). Ann Arbor, MI: Institute for Social Research.
- Colvin, M., Cullen, F. T., & Vander Ven, T. (2001). Coercion, social support, and crime: An emerging theoretical consensus. *Criminology*, 40(1), 19-42.
- Dutton, M. A. (1996). Battered women's strategic response to violence: The role of context. In J. L. E. Z. C. Eisikovits (Ed.), *Future interventions with battered women and their families* (pp. 105-124). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.
- French, J. R. P., & Raven, B. H. (1959). The bases of social power. In D. Cartwright (Ed.), *Studies in social power* (pp. 150-167). Ann Arbor, MI: Institute for Social Research.
- Johnson, M. P. (1995). Patriarchal terrorism and common couple violence: Two forms of violence against women. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 57, 283-294.
- Johnson, M. P., & Ferraro, K. J. (2000). Research on domestic violence in the 1990s: Making distinctions. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 62, 948-963.
- Komter, A. (1989). Hidden power in marriage. *Gender & Society*, 3(12), 187-216.
- Molm, L. D. (1997). *Coercive power in social exchange*. Cambridge, United Kingdom: Cambridge University Press.
- Raven, B. H. (1993). The bases of power: Origins and recent developments. *Journal of Social Psychology*, 49(4), 227-251.
- Raven, B. H., Center, & Rodriguez. (1975). The bases of conjugal power. In D. H. Olson (Ed.), *Power in families*. New York: Wiley.
- Stark, E. (1995). Re-presenting woman battering: From battered woman syndrome to coercive control. *Albany Law Review*, 58, 973-1026.

## **2. INTRODUCTION TO THE COERCIVE CONTROL SURVEY**

### **2.1 Overview of Coercive Control Survey (CCS)**

The Coercive Control Survey (CCS) is a 34-page instrument that is divided into the following sections:

1. Sample description (demographic variables and items to assess the extent of involvement in institutional systems that address IPV)
2. Coercive control measure - Target
  - 2a. Partner expectation or demands
  - 2b. Partner surveillance methods
  - 2c. Threatened consequences
  - 2d. People that helped enforce demands
  - 2e. Response to partner's threats
3. Coercive control measure - Agent
  - 3a. Expectations or demands
  - 3b. Surveillance methods
  - 3c. Consequences
  - 3d. People that helped enforce demands
4. Correlates and Consequences of Coercion
  - Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory
  - The Dominance Scale (Restrictiveness Subscale)
  - Conflict Tactics Scale
  - Marlowe Crown Social Desirability Scale
  - Threat Appraisal Scale

### **2.2 Scan Format of the CCS**

The survey will be printed on a form that can be scanned directly into a database. The selected responses should be denoted by filling in the corresponding circle next to the question using a #2 pencil. In order for information to be scanned correctly, the circles need to be filled out as directed. Stray marks may result in error; thus, the Research Assistant (RA) must proof every completed survey before it is submitted.

### **3. INFORMED CONSENT AND CONFIDENTIALITY**

Due to the sensitive and personal nature of the Coercive Control Survey, subjects will be required to read and sign an Informed Consent document before completing the survey. Also, procedures have been developed to protect the identity of respondents and the information they provide. Safety concerns will be paramount in all contacts with respondents.

#### **3.1 Risks to Respondents**

The Coercive Control Survey asks respondents to provide personal and sensitive information about their lives and relationships. As part of the consent procedure, subjects who are victims of violence will be asked to consider the possibility that if their abusive partner learns of their involvement in the study, she (or he) could become angry and even physically or psychologically abusive. Also, it is possible that participants may become upset by the nature of the survey or in-depth interview.

#### **3.2 Risk Management**

A Detailed Safety Protocol has been developed to codify the procedures for minimizing the risks to respondents and others. In addition, the following procedures will be in place:

- If at any point, the Research Assistant or the subject herself (or himself) believes that the subject might be in increased danger due to her (or his) participation in the study, the subject's involvement must be terminated immediately.
- If the subject tells the Research Assistant of a child who is being abused or of their intent to harm someone else or themselves, the Research Assistant is obligated to report that information to the appropriate authorities. In this case, the Research Assistant should immediately contact the Project Director for further instruction. If the Project Director is not available, the Research Assistant should contact the Project Coordinator.
- All in-depth interviews will be conducted in private. A careful debriefing will be conducted to ensure that participants have not been upset by the nature of the interview, and to provide a referral to a mental health counselor or other helper if appropriate.
- All participants will be given referrals to community agencies that can provide emergency service or other assistance to participants.

The investigators believe that any foreseeable risks involved can be managed so that subjects will not be placed at increased risk of serious physical or psychological jeopardy. The investigators have conducted similar studies with the same population and have never received any reports that the study caused emotional difficulties or safety risks for any subject. In fact, many subjects have expressed appreciation for the opportunity to talk about their situation.

### **3.3 Informed Consent**

Respondents must be over 18 years of age to participate. An Informed Consent document was developed to ensure that participants understand the purpose of the study, the nature of participation in the study, procedures, potential risks and benefits to them, and persons who they may contact to inquire further about their participation. Prior to survey administration, the research assistant will explain the survey administration procedures, assure confidentiality (with the exceptions above under Risk Management), answer any questions, and obtain written informed consent for participation in the study.

The informed consent document assures respondents that their participation is voluntary and they may elect to not complete any or all of the survey or in-depth interview.

### **3.4 Confidentiality and Data Monitoring Procedures**

The Informed Consent document will contain a participant identification (ID) number that will also appear on the survey. The ID number is the only identifying information that will appear on the survey or in-depth interview questionnaire. Information obtained about an individual respondent will not be shared as individual data. All information will be summarized as group data. Data will not be stored in identifiable form.

The informed consent document will be stored separately from the survey and in-depth interview documents in a locked and secure location at COSMOS Corporation. Only the Principal Investigator and Project Coordinator will have access to these confidential documents.

**Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure  
for Intimate Partner Violence**

**Detailed Safety Protocol**

1. Informed consent procedures will follow all requirements of the Georgetown University Medical Center (who will conduct IRB review for COSMOS), which comply with all Federal mandates for protecting the rights and welfare of human participants. Informed consent will be obtained for all contacts at each interview. In addition, consent will be obtained for advocates to be present at the research interview for purposes of support and translation, as needed. No information obtained from the research interview will be placed in the agency file unless the participant so requests.
2. An individualized follow-up protocol will be developed with each participant to account for individual dynamic circumstances potentially contributing to participants' risk.
3. The notification of the three raffle awards will be made via a method selected by the participant. If contact is made by mail, the mail will not bear identifying information concerning the nature of the research project. The notification will reference "Women's Community Study" only, so as not to provide information about the nature of the study. If contact is made by phone, a dedicated line will be used. The phone number available for research purposes will be answered using a standard protocol ("Women's Community Study") so as not to provide any identifying information in the event that an abuse partner or someone else obtains sufficient information to call and inquire about the project. Participants may choose to not participate in the raffle.
4. Participants will be asked to provide identifying information (e.g., answer to question suggested by the participant that abuser is unlikely to know) before any information revealing the nature of the project is provided. This procedure will be utilized for calls originating with the project as well as calls made to the project to minimize the likelihood of someone other than the participant obtaining information about the nature of the project. Advocates making contact with participants will utilize their routine procedure for contacting clients.
5. No protected health information (PHI) will be collected as part of the proposed protocol, nor is COSMOS or Georgetown University a "covered entity" in terms of the proposed research activity.

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Consent to Participate in Research**

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Darci Terrell                                   **Telephone:** 405-969-3078  
**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

*The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board office: 202-687-1506.*

**Introduction:** You are invited to consider participating in this research study. We will be evaluating aspects of control in relationships. This form will describe the purpose and nature of the study, its possible risks and benefits, other options available to you, and your rights as a participant in the study. Please take whatever time you need to discuss the study with anyone you care to talk with. The decision to participate or not is yours. If you decide to participate, please sign and date the last line of this form.

**Background and purpose of the study:** We are conducting this study to better understand ways in which men and women's attempts to control each other affect their relationships. Prior studies on violent relationships have focused mostly on the level of violence in the relationship and not as much on the level of control in the relationship. By conducting this study, we hope to learn about the differences in violent couples beyond the level of violence alone.

**Total number of people:** A total of about 600 people will take part in this phase of the study.

**General plan of the study:** Researchers will administer questionnaires to individuals over 18 years of age. It should take you about one hour to fill out the questionnaire and we will provide a space where you can do so in privacy. You will be asked to answer such questions as "Were there times in your relationship when you felt controlled by your partner?" After you fill out the questionnaire, we will spend a few minutes talking about what participating in this study was like for you. If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have after completing the questionnaire, we will give you information about resources where you can talk with someone.

**Length of the study for each subject:** We expect that you will be in the study for one hour.

**Possible benefits of participating in the study:** There are no direct benefits to you for participating in this study. However, the information you share with us during the study will help us to understand more about relationships where one or both partners attempt to control the other. The results of this study will also be helpful to improve the effectiveness of intervention programs.

**Possible risks of participating in the study:** If your partner finds out about your participation in the study, you could be at increased risk if he or she chooses to retaliate in some way. Also, the questions in the questionnaire may raise uncomfortable or upsetting issues for you. However, you may find that having the opportunity to think about your experiences is helpful to you in some way, although participation in this study is not considered counseling or any other type of therapeutic service.

**Who can participate in the study:** Anyone over 18 years of age who is in a relationship in which at least one incident of violence has occurred within the last 12 months may participate in the study.

**Confidentiality of the data collected during the study:** Your responses to the interview questions will remain confidential. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded on the questionnaire you fill out. This form will be stored in a locked cabinet separately from your completed questionnaire. The researcher will code your questionnaire with a number. The researcher will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The questionnaire will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. Only the research team will have access to the questionnaire. No names or identifying details will be used in any publication or other documents resulting from this study. All data collected from this study will be presented as a group, so that no one can identify any one individual within the study.

If you tell us of a child who is being abused or of your intent to harm someone else or yourself, we are obligated to report that information to the appropriate authorities.

**HIPPA Compliance:** This project does not involve obtaining any information about you from any medical or other health care records.

**Costs to you for participating:** There are no costs to you for participating in this study.

**Payments to you for participating:** You will be paid \$20 for your time for participating in this study, and additionally, by completing and submitting the survey you will be eligible to receive one of three \$100 raffles. Also, if needed, child care and transportation costs of up to \$10 will be provided.

**Your rights as a participant in the study:** Participation in this study is entirely voluntary. You have the right to leave the study at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. Leaving the study will not result in any penalty or loss of benefits to which you are entitled. Should you decide to leave the study, just tell the interviewer that you no longer wish to participate.

**Questions:** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Dr. Mary Ann Dutton at 202-687-1997. If you have any questions about your rights as a research subject, call the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board office at 202-687-1506.

**Investigator's statement:** I have fully explained this study to the subject. I have discussed the procedures, the possible risks and benefits, the standard and research aspects of the study, and have answered all of the questions that the subject and the subject's family members have asked.

Signature of investigator \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

**Subject's consent**

I have read the information provided in this Informed Consent Form or it was read to me by the investigator. All my questions were answered to my satisfaction. I voluntarily agree to participate in this study.

[Upon signing, you will receive a copy of this form. The original will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study.]

Your signature \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Signature of investigator/witness \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

## ***Domestic Violence Resources***

### **Legal**

- ***Domestic Violence Intake Center*** (202) 561-3000  
*Greater Southeast Satellite Office-located Med Office Building-Suite 311*  
(offers resources for temporary protection orders, civil protection orders, Legal Aid Society-legal counsel, Victim's Assistance Program)
- ***Emergency Domestic Relations Project*** (202) 879-7859  
(legal advocacy; drafts petitions and affidavits for persons seeking protection orders and related motions for Domestic Violence)
- ***Georgetown Univ. Law Center Domestic Violence Clinic*** (202) 662-9640  
(legal representation for domestic violence victims temporary and civil protection cases)
- ***George Washington Univ. Community Legal Clinics*** (202) 994-7463  
(legal representation for domestic violence victims in temporary and civil protection order cases)
- ***American University Domestic Violence Clinic*** (202) 274-4140  
(legal assistance with temporary and civil protection orders)
- ***DC Superior Court-Domestic Violence Intake Center*** (202) 879-0152  
(court based support center that provides legal information and domestic violence advocacy)
- ***DC Coalition Against Domestic Violence*** (202) 879-7851  
(located at courthouse, assistance with obtaining protection orders)
- ***Crime Victim's Assistance*** (202) 879-2893  
(temporary housing, lost wages, medical, dental and medication reimbursement; mental health counseling reimbursement)  
(Note: limited to persons who have made a police report of domestic violence incident)
- ***The Legal Aid Society of DC*** (202) 628-1161  
(provides free legal services-family law, landlord tenant laws, and help to get public assistance – i.e.-SSI, SSDI)

### **Counseling**

- ***WEAVE (Women Empowered Against Violence, Inc.)*** (202) 452-9550
- ***DC Dept. of Mental Health Access HelpLine*** 1-888-7-WE-HELP  
(24 hour/7 day a week helpline for residents in the DC metropolitan area, including women and children.)
- ***AYUDA Clinical Legal Latina*** (202) 387-0434  
(Latina battered women)

### **Youth & Children Services**

- ***Center for Child Protection & Family Support*** (202) 547-6175  
(offers counseling services to children who have been physically abused, neglected, or witnessed domestic violence, free food, help w/ funding for rent and utility)

- ***DC Superior Court*** (202) 328-2191  
(advocacy for abused and neglected children)

### **Temporary Housing**

- ***House of Ruth*** (202) 347-2777  
(24-hour shelter for battered women and their children)
- ***My Sister's Place*** (202) 529-5991  
(24-hour shelter for battered women and their children)
- ***Calvary Women's Shelter*** (202) 783-6651  
(24-hour shelter for homeless women)
- ***Alexander Social Services Corporation*** (202) 783-5332  
(temporary shelter for homeless families for 90 days)
- ***Mary House*** (family shelter) (202) 635-0354
- ***Sasha Bruce*** (202) 518-8488  
(provides 24-hour shelter and counseling support for youth )
- ***Covenant House*** (202) 610-9600  
(provides 24-hour emergency housing assistance, ages 16-20)

### **Substance Abuse**

- ***Addiction Prevention and Recovery Administration*** (202) 727-0668  
(provides DC residents with vouchers for clinics; do NOT need insurance)

### **Job Training and Education**

- ***Citywide Computer Training Center*** (202) 667-3719  
(offers various classes; A+ Certification, Network Certification, MS Office, GED and English as a second language)

### **Hotlines**

- ***Crisis & Family Help Hotline*** (202) 223-2255
- ***Crisis Hotline*** (202) 561-7000
- ***National Domestic Violence Hotline*** (800) 799-SAFE

### **General Support**

- ***DC Coalition Against Domestic Violence*** (202) 299-1181  
(domestic violence information, resources and referrals)
- ***SOS Center*** (202) 783-3003  
(support services to battered women and their children; individual and group counseling, children's programs)

## **4. LOGISTICS FOR SURVEY ADMINISTRATION**

### **4.1 Respondent Recruitment and Survey Sites**

The investigators have secured permission to administer the survey to clients at a number of different local programs and to students at Montgomery College. Contact persons at these sites will post Subject Recruitment Flyers onsite prior to the scheduled survey administration date in order to alert potential subjects of the date, time, and specifics of the survey administration. The site contacts also will share information about the survey—by word-of-mouth—with clients (in the case of the programs) and with students (in the case of Montgomery College) prior to the scheduled administration date.

The sample of identified male IPV perpetrators ( $n = 100$ ) and identified female IPV perpetrators ( $n = 100$ ) will be recruited from court-based and offender treatment programs. Identified female IPV victims ( $n = 100$ ) will be recruited from community-based programs that serve a wide range of victims.

The community sample of IPV male adults ( $n = 100$ ), IPV female adults ( $n = 100$ ), and the comparison group of male adults ( $n = 50$ ) and female adults ( $n = 50$ ) will be recruited from the Rockville and Germantown campuses of Montgomery College. The community samples will include respondents who report either IPV victimization or perpetration by either or both partners. Participants in the comparison groups will be currently involved in an intimate relationship and report no IPV by either partner at any time during the relationship.

### **4.2 Preparation for Survey Administration**

#### **Project Coordinator**

- ***Schedule Survey Administration Sessions.*** The Coordinator will schedule each survey administration session and will confirm date/time/location with designated RA(s) by telephone and email (cc to Mary Ann and site).

Some survey administration sessions will require the presence of more than one RA (due to volume of subjects or more than one administration site at the location), while some sessions will require only one.

- ***Post Subject Recruitment Flyers.*** The Coordinator will provide the customized subject recruitment flyer to the site for posting/distribution prior to the survey administration date.

- ***Obtain Payment Funds.*** The Coordinator will submit a purchase order for the incentive funds to the COSMOS Accounting Department by Thursday of the week preceding the scheduled session. The COSMOS Accounting Department will obtain \$500 cash to distribute to the designated RA per survey administration session (funds for 25 completed surveys).
- ***Compile Survey Package.*** The Coordinator will compile the following materials (Survey Package) to give to the RA for each scheduled survey administration session:

#### **Contents of Survey Package**

1. 30 blank surveys
2. 60 blank consent forms
3. Incentive Payment Log
4. Child Care/Transportation Payment Log (if necessary)
5. Survey Log
6. 2 In-depth Interview Protocols
7. In-depth Interview Payment Log
8. 25 Raffle Receipts
9. Paper clips
10. Masking Tape
11. 25 #2 pencils
12. Customized Subject Recruitment Flyer
13. Pre-labeled Complete Envelope (white tyvex-for returning all materials back to Coordinator following session)
14. 25 copies of *Domestic Violence Resources* (flyer for distribution to subjects; provides contact information for local emergency and domestic violence resources).

#### **Research Assistant**

- ***Notification of a Scheduled Session.*** The Coordinator will notify the designated RA by telephone and email of the date/time/location of the scheduled session, and provide directions to the location and information about the site contact person.
- ***Pick-up Payment Funds and Survey Package.*** The RA is responsible for picking up the Payment Funds and the Survey Package (see description of Survey Package, above) at COSMOS prior to the scheduled survey administration session.

**Payment Funds.** The Coordinator will notify the RA when the funds are available for pickup at COSMOS. The RA should contact Rennie Okoh in COSMOS's Accounting Department (301-215-9100, x260) to confirm the pickup date and time. When picking up the funds, the RA will be required to sign a form to acknowledge the receipt of payment funds; Rennie must be present for the RA to receive the funds.

Child care/transportation costs of up to \$10.00 per subject will be available on a limited basis, and will only be available for survey administration at court or program sites. The Coordinator will determine if these payments will be necessary, and if so, funds will be added to the Incentive Payment funds.

**Survey Package.** The RA should pick up the Survey Package and payments funds at the same time. The RA should inform the Coordinator of the date and time when the RA will be at COSMOS, so the Coordinator will have sufficient time to prepare the Survey Package. The Survey Package will contain all the materials needed for one survey administration session (see description above).

#### **4.3 Onsite Administration of the Survey**

- Plan to arrive at the survey administration location at least 15 minutes prior to the start time confirmed by the Coordinator.
- Post a copy of the flyer at or near the survey administration site if one is not already posted.
- Please wear the yellow Survey Administrator name tag, identifying you as a member of the project team.

As respondents arrive to take the survey, please follow these procedures:

- ***Make Introductions.*** Introduce yourself. Tell the respondent(s): “The survey will take about an hour to complete. You will receive \$20 for submission of a completed survey and a chance to win one of three \$100 raffles. To participate, you must first read and sign a consent form which describes the study, any associated risks to you, and outlines what you are requested to do.”
- ***Obtain Informed Consent and Provide Subject with a Copy of the Consent.*** Tell the respondent(s): “You must provide informed consent in order to take the survey. The consent document tells you about the purpose of this survey,

and the possible risks and benefits to you of taking the survey.” Offer to read the consent document to the subjects or let them read the consent document themselves. Answer any questions the subjects have about the Consent document. The subjects must sign the consent document in order to take the survey. After the subjects have signed the consent document, give them one copy of a blank consent form to keep.

- ***Explain the Raffle and Have Subject Sign the Raffle Receipt.*** Explain the optional raffle to the subjects. Subjects who submit a completed survey will be eligible to win one of three \$100 raffles (in addition to the \$20 payment subjects receive completing the survey). However, entry into the raffle is optional; if subjects choose to not be entered into the raffle, they will still receive the \$20 payment for submission of a completed survey. To be entered into the raffle, subjects will have to provide their name and a telephone number so they can be contacted if they win. One winner will be randomly selected every two months, until all three raffles are complete.

If the subject wants to be entered into the raffle, they must complete the information (name and telephone number, or other optional contact information) on the Raffle Receipt (on blue paper). Once the top portion of the Raffle Receipt is complete, write the subject’s survey ID# on the top and bottom portions of the Raffle Receipt, and detach the bottom portion of the receipt and give to the subject. Attach the top portion of the Raffle Receipt to the completed Consent document.

- ***Distribute the Survey.*** You may give subjects the survey only after they have signed the Consent document and noted whether they want to be entered into the Raffle.
- ***Collect Completed Survey.*** When the survey is returned to you, review the survey for the following:

#### **Survey Completion Checklist**

Check each page to make sure:

1. All items have been completed;
2. The circles are filled in properly;
3. Each page is present; and
4. The correct ID# is listed on each page.

Every item on each page must be filled out. If not, ask the respondent to fill out any missing sections/items. Be prepared to explain any sections that the subject may not have completed because they did not understand the question(s).

- **Distribute and Log Payments.** If the survey is complete, have the respondent sign the Incentive Payment Log to acknowledge payment and provide the \$20 incentive payment. If the respondent is eligible for child care/transportation reimbursement, have the subject sign the Child Care/Transportation Payment Log and provide \$10.
- **Log Survey.** Log the survey as “complete” on the Survey Log next to the correct ID#. If the subject wishes to be entered into the Raffle and has completed the Raffle Receipt, note this on the Log in the space provided.
- **Package Completed Surveys.** Attach the survey, consent, and Raffle Receipt together with a paper clip, and check to make sure ID#s match on all three items. Insert clipped packet into the Complete Envelope. For privacy purposes, do not leave completed surveys, consent forms, or Raffle Receipts laying or stacked in view of the public.

#### **4.4 Administering the In-Depth Interviews**

The RA will administer the In-depth Interview to 1 of every 10 of the survey subjects as part of the assessment of construct validity. After each subject submits their completed survey and receives their Incentive Payment, the RA will ask the subject if they are interested in completing a follow-up interview for which they will receive an *additional* \$20. The RA should attempt to complete 2-3 In-Depth Interviews per session. The In-depth Interview will take approximately 20 minutes and will consist of open-ended questions. The RA will note the subject’s responses and survey ID# on the In-Depth Interview Protocol. The In-Depth Interview Protocol is still under development.

- Once the In-depth Interview is complete, have the subject sign the In-depth Interview Payment Log and provide \$20.
- Attach the In-depth Interview Protocol to the Survey, Consent, and Raffle, and place in the Complete Envelope.

#### **4.5 Activities to be Conducted Following Each Survey Administration Session**

- The RA should stay at the survey location until the agreed upon time is expired for the day or until you run out of incentive funds. Under normal circumstances, the RA will be provided with enough Incentive Funds for 25 surveys.
- When the session is ended, count the completed surveys, consent forms, and in-depth interviews, and make sure that the Payment Logs and Survey Log are complete, and that all funds and surveys are accounted for.
- Place completed survey packets (each survey packet consists of the completed survey, the signed consent form, in-depth interview protocol (if applicable) clipped together), Incentive Payment Log, Child care/Transportation Payment Log, In-depth Interview Payment Log, Survey Log, and the remaining materials (pens, tape, etc.) in the Complete Envelope provided (pre-labeled white Tyvex envelope) and fill out the label on the Complete Envelope:

<b>MCC CCS</b> <b>RA(s) Name:</b> <b>Survey Date:</b> <b>Location:</b> <b>Number of completed surveys:</b> <b>Number of completed In-Depth Interviews:</b>
---

Please return within 2 days of survey session to:  
MCC Coordinator  
COSMOS Corporation  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, MD 20814  
ph: 301-215-9100

- Return the Complete Envelope AND unused payment funds to the Coordinator at COSMOS Corporation within 2 days of the survey session.

# **SURVEY PARTICIPANTS NEEDED \$20 Cash**

## **FOR A STUDY OF INTIMATE RELATIONSHIPS**

Sponsored by the U.S. Department of Justice's National Institute of Justice; Conducted by Georgetown University Medical Center, Washington, DC, Boston College, Boston, MA, and COSMOS Corporation, Bethesda, MD

### **SURVEY DATES AND LOCATIONS:**

#### **Name of Program or Court**

#### **Dates and Times**

### **ELIGIBILITY:**

You are eligible to participate if:

- You are 18 years of age or older, and
- You have been involved in an intimate relationship during the past 2 years.

### **REQUIREMENTS:**

Complete a *confidential* paper and pencil survey about your experience in an intimate relationship. The survey will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. All materials needed to complete the survey will be provided.

### **PAYMENT:**

Participants will receive \$20 cash for same day, on-site completion and submission of the survey, and will be eligible to receive one of several \$100 raffles. Additionally, funds are available to reimburse participants for travel or child care costs.

### **DESCRIPTION OF STUDY:**

The purpose of the study is to develop an instrument that measures aspects of power and control in relationships.

### **TO LEARN MORE, PLEASE CONTACT:**

Darci Terrell, Project Coordinator, at COSMOS Corporation, 301-215-9100, x268.

*Note to Program Staff: Please display flyer at program locations. Do not mail flyer to possible participants.*

**MCC - Coercive Control Survey  
Payment Funds Receipt**

I, \_\_\_\_\_, have received the following funds from COSMOS Corporation for the purpose of reimbursing subjects who complete the Coercive Control Survey for COSMOS's MCC project:

Incentive Payment Funds: \$ \_\_\_\_\_

Child Care/Transportation Payment Funds: \$ \_\_\_\_\_

In-depth Interview Payment Funds: \$ \_\_\_\_\_

TOTAL: \$ \_\_\_\_\_

I understand that by receiving these Payment Funds I am responsible for disbursing the proper payments to subjects who complete the Coercive Control Survey, documenting the disbursement of these funds on the Logs provided to me, and returning unused funds to COSMOS following each session.

---

Signature of Person Receiving Funds

---

Signature of Authorized COSMOS Representative

**ID Number:**

--	--	--	--

### **CCS SURVEY-RAFFLE (Participation is Optional)**

Participants who submit a completed survey are eligible to win one of three \$100 raffles. Participation in the raffle is optional. The three winners will be randomly selected. One winner will be selected every two months.

If you would like to participate in the raffle, please provide the information requested below so that we may contact you. The bottom portion of the page is your receipt.

**Name:** \_\_\_\_\_

**Phone number:** \_\_\_\_\_

**Alternate contact instructions:** \_\_\_\_\_

-----**cut here**-----**cut here**-----**cut here**-----

### **CCS Survey Raffle -- RECEIPT**

**ID Number:**

--	--	--	--

RA name:  
Total Incentive Payments this session: \$

Survey Date:  
Survey Location:

## Incentive Payment Log

*I acknowledge receipt of \$20 as payment for completion of the MCC Coercive Control Survey.*

Print Name (in pen)	Sign Name (in pen)
1.	
2.	
3.	
4.	
5.	
6.	
7.	
8.	
9.	
10.	
11.	
12.	
13.	
14.	
15.	
16.	
17.	
18.	
19.	
20.	
21.	
22.	
23.	
24.	
25.	

RA name:  
Total CC-Trans Payments this session: \$

Survey Date:  
Survey Location:

## Child Care/Transportation Payment Log

*I acknowledge receipt of \$10 as reimbursement for child care and/or transportation costs during my participation in the MCC Coercive Control Survey.*

Print Name (in pen)	Sign Name (in pen)
1.	
2.	
3.	
4.	
5.	
6.	
7.	
8.	
9.	
10.	
11.	
12.	
13.	
14.	
15.	
16.	
17.	
18.	
19.	
20.	
21.	
22.	
23.	
24.	
25.	

RA name:

Total number of surveys completed this session:

Survey date:

Survey location:

# Survey Log

\* Complete = survey for this ID# was completed and submitted; Not used = survey for this ID# was not distributed during this session; Void = survey for this ID# was not usable (pages missing, survey illegible, etc.). Please note any explanation in the Comments column.

RA name:

Total In-depth interview payments this session: \$

Survey date:

Survey location:

## In-Depth Interview Payment Log

*I acknowledge receipt of \$20 as reimbursement for completing the In-depth Interview as part of my participation in the MCC Coercive Control Survey.*

Print Name (in pen)	Sign Name (in pen)
1.	
2.	
3.	
4.	
5.	
6.	
7.	
8.	
9.	
10.	
11.	
12.	
13.	
14.	
15.	
16.	
17.	
18.	
19.	
20.	
21.	
22.	
23.	
24.	
25.	

**GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
Consent to Participate in Research**

**Project Name:** Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence

**Principal Investigator:** Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.                   **Telephone:** 202-687-1997

**Project Coordinator:** Darci Terrell                                   **Telephone:** 405-969-3078  
**Sponsor:** The National Institute of Justice

*The Georgetown University Institutional Review Board has given approval for this research project. For information on your rights as a research subject, call the Institutional Review Board office: 202-687-1506.*

**Introduction:** You are invited to consider participating in an additional component of this research study. We will be asking follow-up questions about the Coercive Control Survey that you just completed. This form will describe the purpose and nature of the follow-up questions, the possible risks and benefits, other options available to you, and your rights as a participant in the study. Please take whatever time you need to discuss the study with anyone you care to talk with. The decision to participate or not is yours. If you decide to participate, please sign and date the last line of this form.

**Background and purpose of the study:** We are conducting this study to better understand ways in which men and women's attempts to control each other affect their relationships. Prior studies on violent relationships have focused mostly on the level of violence in the relationship and not as much on the level of control in the relationship. By conducting this study, we hope to learn about the differences in violent couples beyond the level of violence alone.

**Total number of people:** A total of about 50 people will take part in this component of the study.

**General plan of the study:** Researchers will ask follow-up questions to selected individuals who have completed the Coercive Control Survey. It should take you about 30 minutes to answer these questions and we will provide a space where you can answer the questions in privacy. You will be asked to answer such questions as "Can you give me an example of a situation where your partner demanded that you do something?" "What were you afraid he/she would do if you didn't do it? If you feel upset or would like to talk with someone further about your safety or about the feelings you might have after answering the questions, we will give you information about resources where you can talk with someone.

**Length of the study for each subject:** We expect that you will be in the follow-up interview for 30 minutes.

**Possible benefits of participating in the study:** There are no direct benefits to you for participating in this component of the study. However, the information you share with us during the study will help us to understand more about relationships where one or both partners attempt to control the other. The results of this study will also be helpful to improve the effectiveness of intervention programs.

**Possible risks of participating in the study:** If your partner finds out about your participation in the study, you could be at increased risk if he or she chooses to retaliate in some way. Also, the questions in the questionnaire may raise uncomfortable or upsetting issues for you. However, you may find that having the opportunity to think about your experiences is helpful to you in some way, although participation in this study is not considered counseling or any other type of therapeutic service.

**Who can participate in the in-depth interview:** Anyone who has met the requirements to participate in the Coercive Control Survey (anyone over 18 years of age who is in a relationship in which at least one incident of violence has occurred within the last 12 months), and who has completed the Coercive Control Survey.

**Confidentiality of the data collected during the study:** Your responses to the interview questions will remain confidential. No names or personally identifying characteristics will be recorded on the questionnaire you fill out. This form will be stored in a locked cabinet separately from your completed questionnaire. The researcher will code your questionnaire with a number. The researcher will be the only one who can link your name to the number. The interview questions will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study. Only the research team will have access to the interview questions. No names or identifying details will be used in any publication or other documents resulting from this study. All data collected from this study will be presented as a group, so that no one can identify any one individual within the study.

If you tell us of a child who is being abused or of your intent to harm someone else or yourself, we are obligated break to report that information to the appropriate authorities.

**HIPPA Compliance:** This project does not involve obtaining any information about you from any medical or other health care records.

**Costs to you for participating:** There are no costs to you for participating in this study.

**Payments to you for participating:** You will be paid an additional \$20 for your time for participating in this component of study.

**Your rights as a participant in the study:** Participation in this study is entirely voluntary. You have the right to leave the study at any time. You do not have to answer any question you do not want to answer. Leaving the study will not result in any penalty or loss of benefits to which you are entitled. Should you decide to leave the study, just tell the interviewer that you no longer wish to participate.

**Questions:** Should you have any questions at any time about this study, please contact Dr. Mary Ann Dutton at 202-687-1997. If you have any questions about your rights as a research subject, call the Georgetown University Institutional Review Board office at 202-687-1506.

**Investigator's statement:** I have fully explained this study to the subject. I have discussed the procedures, the possible risks and benefits, the standard and research aspects of the study, and have answered all of the questions that the subject and the subject's family members have asked.

Signature of investigator \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

### **Subject's consent**

I have read the information provided in this Informed Consent Form or it was read to me by the investigator. All my questions were answered to my satisfaction. I voluntarily agree to participate in this study.

[Upon signing, you will receive a copy of this form. The original will be kept in a locked drawer and will be destroyed at the end of the study.]

Your signature \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

Signature of investigator/witness \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

ID Number: 

--	--	--	--

Interviewer Name:

Site:

Date:

## IN-DEPTH INTERVIEW PROTOCOL

### Instruction to Interviewer:

Use the following script to introduce the In-depth Interview Protocol after the participant has completed the Coercive Control Survey

*If you are interested, we would also like to conduct a follow-up interview with you, which would take about a half hour. We would pay you an additional \$20 for your participation if you choose to do this. For the interview, we will be asking you some follow-up questions on the same topic as the survey itself. Would you be interested in participating in this second step?*

If the participant would like to participate, they must read and sign the In-depth Interview Protocol Consent Form.

The Interviewer will use the participant's completed Coercive Control Survey as a foundation for guiding the In-depth Interview. Refer to Section 2A of the completed survey. Pick at least 3 (three) items where the participant indicated "YES" that their partner DEMANDED something of them (there may be more than 3 items in this section where the participant noted "YES"; pick only 3 for the purpose of this interview (if possible, select items from different "categories" if there are more than 3 items). You will ask follow-up questions for each of the 3 items.

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #1:**

1.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

1.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

1.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

1.4 What led up to this demand that time?

1.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

1.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

1.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

1.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

1.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

1.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #2:**

2.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

2.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

2.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

2.4 What led up to this demand that time?

2.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

2.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

2.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

2.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

2.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

2.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

**IN-DEPTH ITEM #3:**

3.1 You indicated that your partner sometimes demanded that you: (interviewer: write here the item that is being addressed, e.g., "leaving the house")

3.2 How often would your partner make this kind of demand?

3.3 Can you give me an example of a particular situation where he/she would do that?

3.4 What led up to this demand that time?

3.5 How did he/she actually let you know what he/she wanted you to do?

3.6 What did you think he would do if you did NOT do what he/she wanted?

3.7 What did you think would happen if you DID do what he/she wanted?

3.8 What did you end up doing in response to this demand?

3.9 How did it [participant's response to demand] leave you feeling?

3.10 Is there anything else you'd like to say about his particular demand?

**COSMOS Corporation's Technical Proposal—Not Included for Final Report**

**COSMOS Corporation's Organizational Capability Statement—Not Included for Final Report**

**Additional Resources—Not Included for Final Report**

## **Appendix K-2**

Training Outline for MCC Survey Administration at DC Superior Court

## **Appendix K-2**

### **TRAINING OUTLINE FOR MCC SURVEY ADMINISTRATION AT DC SUPERIOR COURT**

- Training should take no more than 1 to 1.5 hours
- Training can be accomplished via telephone conference call, which will be less expensive than having RAs come to COSMOS; though in-person training is a viable option.
- Training should precede the field trip to DC Superior Court

#### **I. Target audience for the DC Superior Court administration**

- a. We will administer the survey and follow-up interview to litigants leaving the Domestic Violence and Family Courts.
- b. Our response rate goal for the DC Superior Court administration is n=100-150; which will be accomplished over a number of administration sessions.

#### **II. Overview of preparations for DC Court administration**

- a. Mary Ann first made contact with the Chief Judge of DC Superior Court and judges from the DV and Family Courts during fall 2003 to introduce them to our research project, and begin the process of acquiring permission to administer the survey at the court.
- b. During March 2004, the research team sent letters to court stakeholders in order to introduce them to our research project and get their support. The court stakeholders contacted include the District of Columbia Bar; law clinics from American University, George Washington University, Georgetown University, and Catholic University; and community-based organizations including Ayuda, WEAVE, and the DC Coalition Against Domestic Violence. None of these organizations contacted us in response to our introductory letter.
- c. On May 13, 2004, Mary Ann and Oscar (the task leader for the DC Court Administration) met with Judge Satterfield of the Family Court to review the research project and discuss administration logistics and schedule.
- d. Judge Satterfield will speak to the other Family Court judges to alert them to the research project and review the process for referring litigants to the project.
- e. Mary Ann is hoping to meet with Judge Jackson of the DV Court in the near future.

#### **III. Context for survey administration at DC Superior Court**

- a. Survey respondents are litigants in the Domestic Violence or Family Court, and thus are involved in cases that are assumed to be emotionally

charged. It is always important to treat research subjects with respect; but beyond that, the RAs need to be sensitive to the circumstances of the research subjects. Specifically, RAs should adopt a demeanor appropriate to the court, i.e., conservative, business-like, even serious.

- b. Litigants who have just completed an initial hearing and have been mandated to attend mediation, must make an appointment with the mediation office before participating in our study.
- c. The judges have informed us that we are allowed to be in the courtroom for certain hearings. It is our understanding that at the conclusion of the hearing, the judge will inform the litigants that study personnel wearing yellow name badges may approach them to ask if they want to participate in a study where they can earn \$20 for responding to a survey.
- d. We will target litigants leaving status hearings, which are generally open to the public and last a short time. We will not be targeting litigants who are leaving their actual trial, which may be closed and can last a long time. Domestic neglect cases are closed and RAs may not attend any hearings. A judge can close a case at any time.
- e. Once we are ready to begin administration, the judges will provide us a schedule, which will indicate those cases for which we are allowed to recruit the litigants. The judges will make clear to us which courtrooms we can target and which we must avoid.
- f. The courtrooms where DV and Family Court take place are scattered throughout the DC Superior Court building, and at least one courtroom is in another building. The layout will be specified during the field trip.
- g. It is our understanding that DV and Family Court alternate by week, i.e., only DV cases are scheduled one week, and the next week only Family Court cases are scheduled.

#### **IV. Logistics for survey administration at DC Superior Court**

- a. The logistics for survey administration outlined in Section 4 of the Training Manual still apply, with the following exceptions.
- b. At least 3 RAs will be present for each administration session. Oscar Espinosa will serve as the lead RA for all court administration sessions. He will likely be present at all sessions as we begin administration.
- c. Each survey package will include sufficient materials and funds to administer 10 surveys and 1 follow-up (i.e., if 3 RAs attend a training, there will be enough materials and funds for 30 surveys and 3 follow-ups interviews). Although it is difficult to estimate the number of completed surveys we will be able to obtain from each session, we are estimating the number at not more than 30. If the numbers are higher or lower, we will make adjustments to the survey package.
- d. Litigants may fill out the survey in the corridors outside the courtrooms; the judges have indicated we may utilize the witness rooms directly outside the courtrooms for administration of the in-depth interview OR if the survey must be read to the participant. There are two witness rooms per courtroom.

- e. RAs must wear their YELLOW name badges at all times while in the Court.
- f. The team will customize the flyer for each session and provide copies to the judges who will pass them out to litigants as they leave the court.
- g. Neither child care nor transportation costs will be provided to participants at the court administration. It is assumed that the participants would have already made those arrangements in order to be present for the court hearing/trial.
- h. As the lead RA, Oscar will be responsible for making individual assignments on site and deciding the best use of resources.

## **Appendix L**

### Letters to Court Stakeholders

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*  
SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

April 5, 2004

Yvonne Martinez Vega  
Executive Director  
Ayuda  
1736 Columbia Road, NW  
Washington, DC 20009

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Ms. Vega:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*

SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

March 29, 2004

Lydia Watts  
Executive Director  
WEAVE  
1111 16<sup>th</sup> Street, NW, Ste. 410  
Washington, DC 20036

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Ms. Watts:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

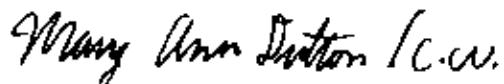
administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*

SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

March 29, 2004

Professor Carol Izumi  
Director  
Community Legal Clinic  
George Washington University Law School  
2000 G Street, NW  
Washington, DC 20052

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Professor Izumi:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*

SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

April 2, 2004

Professor Deborah Epstein  
Director  
Domestic Violence Clinic  
Georgetown University Law School  
600 New Jersey Avenue, NW  
Washington, DC 20001

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Deborah:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

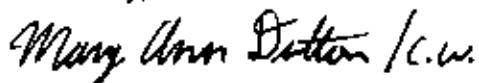
administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*

SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

April 2, 2004

Nancy J. Meyer  
Executive Director  
DC Coalition Against Domestic Violence  
1718 P Street, NW, Ste. T-6  
Washington, DC 20036

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Ms. Meyer:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

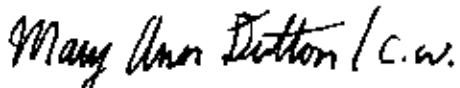
administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*  
SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

March 30, 2004

Shirley Ann Higuchi  
President, District of Columbia Bar  
American Psychological Association  
750 First Street, NE  
Washington, DC 20002

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Ms. Higuchi:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

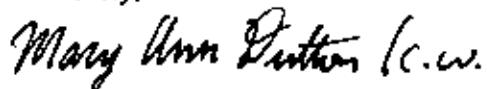
administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*

SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

March 30, 2004

Professor Catherine F. Klein  
Families and Law Clinic  
Columbia School of Law  
The Catholic University of America  
3600 John McCormack Road, NE, 150 Law  
Washington, DC 20064

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Catherine:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,

*Mary Ann Dutton, J.C.W.*

Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

*Development and Validation of a  
Coercive Control Measure for  
Intimate Partner Violence*  
SUPPORTED BY THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF JUSTICE

March 29, 2004

Professor Susan Bennett  
Director  
Women and Law Clinic  
American University Law School  
4801 Massachusetts Avenue, NW, Room 417  
Washington, DC 20016

**RE: The National Institute of Justice's Study of  
Coercive Control in Intimate Partner Violence:  
Survey Administration at D.C. Superior Court**

Dear Professor Bennett:

I am contacting you to inform you and ask for your support of a research study addressing coercive control and intimate partner violence. Georgetown University Medical Center, Boston College, and COSMOS Corporation are developing and validating a measure of nonviolent coercive control as part of the project, "Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure for Intimate Partner Violence," which is being funded by the National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice. As the Principal Investigator for this study, I met with the Judges Rufus King, William Jackson, and Lee Satterfield last October to request permission to access the D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court divisions in order to recruit men and women to participate in our research study. Our research team is aiming to administer the questionnaire at D.C. Superior Court during the spring, beginning in March 2004.

Until now, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of intimate partner violence have been hampered by two significant obstacles: 1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control, and 2) there exists no adequate measure of nonviolent coercive control. As noted above, we have developed a measure of coercive control, with the help of our national advisory panel of experts and input from professionals working in the field of domestic violence. The next step is to administer the newly developed measure to a sample of community respondents in order to assess the measure's psychometric validity. The measure is intended to aid researchers and practitioners alike in assessing coercive control, as distinct from physical violence, sexual assault, or psychological abuse, in intimate partner relationships.

Generally, the study procedure calls for a research team of men and women to administer the newly developed coercive control questionnaire to 600 adult men and women, regardless of their involvement in intimate partner violence. We have collected approximately 300 interviews to date. One cohort of individuals selected for

**COSMOS Corporation**  
3 Bethesda Metro Center, Suite 950  
Bethesda, Maryland 20814  
Phone: 301-215-9100  
Fax: 301-215-6969



GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY  
MEDICAL CENTER

administration is those men and women involved in D.C. Superior Court's domestic violence and family court cases. It is extremely important to include as participants both men and women who are known to be involved in domestic violence litigation and those who are involved in a court case – but not one involving domestic violence, as well as those from the community outside the court. We have included in our sample, as our research design dictates, individuals who have experienced little or no intimate partner violence as well.

In addition to the coercive control questions, the questionnaire also includes other items intended to: 1) describe the sample, 2) control for social desirability, 3) assess how accurately the coercive control concurs with similar constructs (e.g., psychological abuse), and 4) determine how it is related to other theoretical concepts. The questionnaire will be self-administered as a paper-and-pencil questionnaire, and will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. Individuals will be recruited as they leave the courtroom to voluntarily complete the questionnaire, and respondents will be paid \$20 for their participation in this important study. A safety protocol will be utilized to separate respondents who might be known to each other, in order to ensure privacy of completion. A draft of the recruitment flyer is attached for your review, along with a summary of our project's goals and objectives, and research design and methodology.

This research project has been approved by the Georgetown University Medical Center's Institutional Review Board. In order to protect their identity and ensure their safety, all information provided by the court's clients will be kept in the strictest confidence. No individual data will be released to third parties. Consent forms which require a signature will be filed separately from participants' completed questionnaires so as not to compromise confidentiality. We will be happy to share the results of our project with you, when available.

If you have any questions about this research project or our plans to administer the questionnaire, please feel free to contact me at (202) 687-1997.

Sincerely,



Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.  
Principal Investigator  
Professor, Department of Psychiatry  
Georgetown University Medical Center  
[mad27@georgetown.edu](mailto:mad27@georgetown.edu)

cc: Honorable Rufus King, III, Chief Judge  
Honorable Lee Saterfield  
Honorable William Jackson

# **SURVEY PARTICIPANTS NEEDED**

## **\$20 Cash**

### **FOR A STUDY OF INTIMATE RELATIONSHIPS**

Sponsored by the U.S. Department of Justice's National Institute of Justice; Conducted by Georgetown University Medical Center, Washington, DC, Boston College, Boston, MA, and COSMOS Corporation, Bethesda, MD

#### **SURVEY DATES AND LOCATIONS:**

##### **Name of Program or Court**

##### **Dates and Times**

#### **ELIGIBILITY:**

You are eligible to participate if:

- You are 18 years of age or older, and
- You have been involved in an intimate relationship during the past 2 years.

#### **REQUIREMENTS:**

Complete a *confidential* paper and pencil survey about your experience in an intimate relationship. The survey will take approximately 45-60 minutes to complete. All materials needed to complete the survey will be provided.

#### **PAYMENT:**

Participants will receive \$20 cash for same day, on-site completion and submission of the survey, and will be eligible to receive one of several \$100 raffles. Additionally, funds are available to reimburse participants for travel or child care costs.

#### **DESCRIPTION OF STUDY:**

The purpose of the study is to develop an instrument that measures aspects of power and control in relationships.

#### **TO LEARN MORE, PLEASE CONTACT:**

Darci Terrell, Project Coordinator, at COSMOS Corporation, 301-215-9100, x268.

*Note to Program Staff: Please display flyer at program locations. Do not mail flyer to possible participants.*

**Development and Validation of a Coercive Control Measure  
for Intimate Partner Violence**

**ABSTRACT**

Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D., Principal Investigator  
Georgetown University Medical Center

In collaboration with

Lisa A. Goodman, Ph.D., Co-Principal Investigator  
Boston College

and

COSMOS Corporation  
Darci Terrell, B.A., Project Coordinator

**Project Goals and Objectives**

Two decades of research on intimate partner violence (IPV) have failed to resolve the controversy concerning gender symmetry. Based on the position by advocates and the work of Johnson (2000) and others, it seems clear that the notion of nonviolent coercive control should be included in future work on typologies of IPV. However, ongoing efforts to understand the relational context of IPV are hampered by two significant obstacles: (1) the field has yet to develop a clear theoretical understanding of coercive control and (2) there exists no adequate measure of "nonviolent coercive control" for IPV.

The overall goal of the proposed project is to address the issues raised above in the development of a measure of nonviolent coercive control for use in the measurement of IPV. Specific objectives are (1) to develop a conceptual model of coercive control, (2) to develop an ecologically and statistically valid instrument to measure coercive control, (3) to evaluate psychometric properties of the coercive control measure, and (4) to conduct a preliminary test of the usefulness of the measure for validating (Johnson, 2000) typology of IPV.

**Proposed Research Design and Methodology**

The proposed study will integrate ethnographic and classical psychometric theory methods within a nested ecological model of IPV to guide the conceptualization and measurement of coercive control. We will develop a conceptual model of coercive control (Objective 1) by conducting a comprehensive literature review and refining the model through collaboration with an expert panel. We will develop an ecologically and statistically valid measure of nonviolent coercive control (Objective 2) by first using ethnographic, and then classical test theory, methods to construct the measure. We will assess the psychometric properties of the newly developed coercive control measure (Objective 3) within each of five heterogeneous subgroups: 1) identified male IPV perpetrators ( $n = 100$ ), 2) identified female IPV perpetrators ( $n = 100$ ), 3) identified female IPV victims ( $n = 100$ ), 4) community sample of males ( $n = 100$ ), and 5) community sample of females ( $n = 100$ ) adults. Two additional comparison groups - a community sample of males ( $n = 50$ ) and (2) a community sample of females ( $n = 50$ ) involved in a current intimate relationship but with no reported IPV – will be used to examine content validity. We will conduct a preliminary test of Johnson's (2000) typology of IPV (Objective 4) using data from the validation groups.

## **Appendix M**

### Dissemination Products

M-1 Coercion and IPV: Development of a New Measure

M-2 Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization

## **Appendix M-1**

Coercion and IPV: Development of a New Measure

# **Coercion and IPV: Development of a New Measure**

**Mary Ann Dutton, Ph.D.**  
Georgetown University  
**Lisa A. Goodman, Ph.D.**  
Boston College

# Introduction

- Coercive control at center of analysis of IPV, yet no valid measure of it
- Potentially distinct from physical, sexual, psychological abuse, or stalking
- Violence and abuse alone cannot adequately characterize the experience of battered victims
- Gender symmetry controversy may be addressed by attention to coercion as central

# Introduction

- Working conceptual definition based on theory of social power
- Defined as “credible threat for noncompliance with (implicit or explicit) demand (or expectation)”
- Perceived contingent event

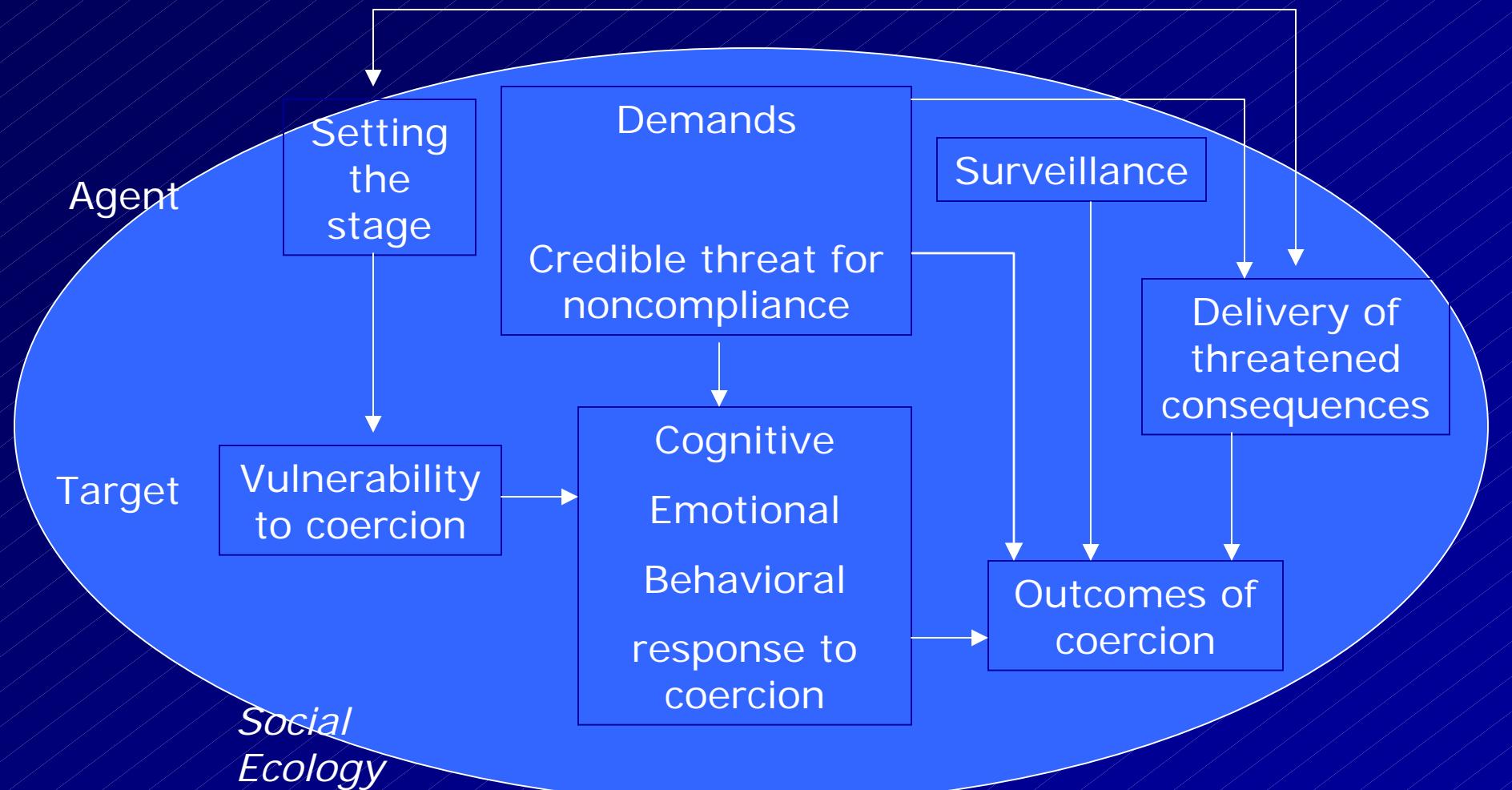
# Research Aims

- Develop and validate a measure of coercion in intimate partner relationships

# Major Steps

- Generate theoretical conceptualization
- Individual narrative interviews ( $n = 30$ )
- National advisory panel conceptual development ( $n = 15$ )
- Generate measurement items
- Pilot interviews, including narrative feedback
- Expert panel consensus of items ( $n = 100$ )
- Validity study ( $n = 763$ )

# Conceptual Model of Coercive Control



Dutton & Goodman, *Sex Roles (forthcoming)*

# Measure of Coercion

( $\alpha = .91$ , partner;  $\alpha = .90$ , self)

- In the last 12 months...did your partner make you think that s/he might do the following if you didn't do what s/he wanted?
- 31 items
  - Harm to you (25 items)
  - Harm to partner (2 items)
  - Harm to others (4 items)

Use personal info against	.35
Keep from family, friends	.26
Take something of yours	.26
Hurt you financially	.24
Leave, get divorce	.23
Keep from leaving house	.21
Cause legal trouble	.18
Limit access to transportation	.18
Keep from going to work	.14
Cause to lose job	.13
Cause to lose housing	.12
Try to kill you	.09
Destroy legal papers	.08
Kill or hurt pets	.06
Not allow to take medication	.06
Force sex with others	.04
Put in mental hospital	.04

# Prevalence of Coercion by Partner: Sex Differences in Individual items

	Male sample	Female sample
Say something mean, humiliating	.41	.57
Physically hurt you	.16	.28
Force unwanted sex	.08	.17
Scare you	.18	.38
Have sex with someone else	.18	.29
Threaten deportation	.06	.02
Have arrested	.17	.08

# Measure of Demands

( $\alpha = .86$ , partner;  $\alpha = .91$ , self)

- In the last 12 months...did your partner demand of you related to ...

48 items

- Personal activities/appearance (10)
- Support/social life/family (6)
- Household (3)
- Work/economic/resources (5)
- Health (4)
- Intimate relationship (8)
- Legal (4)
- Immigration (3)
- Children/parenting (5)

# Measure of Surveillance

( $\alpha = .86$ , partner;  $\alpha = .86$ , self)

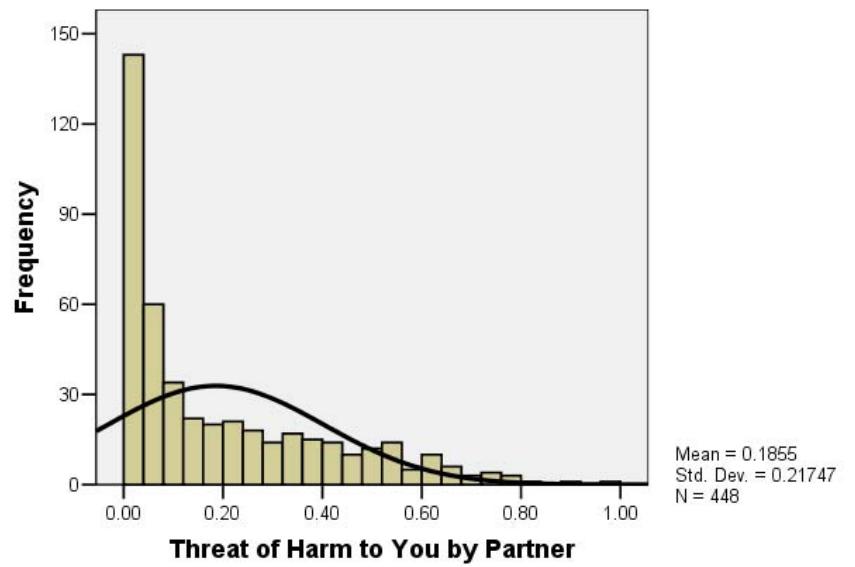
- ...which of the things have you done in order to see whether...partner did what you demanded.

# Measure of Surveillance

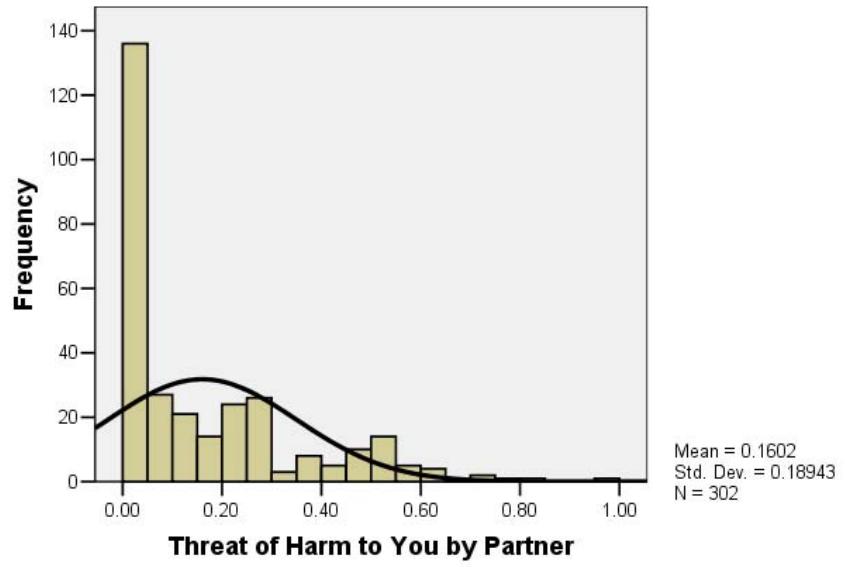
13 items

- Check or opened mail or journal
- Kept track of telephone/cell phone use
- Called on phone
- Told partner to carry cell phone or pager
- Checked partner's clothing
- Checked the house
- Checked receipts/bank books
- Checked the car
- Asked others (children, neighbors, family)
- Told partner to report behavior to you
- Used recording device
- Spied or followed
- Didn't need to check; just knew

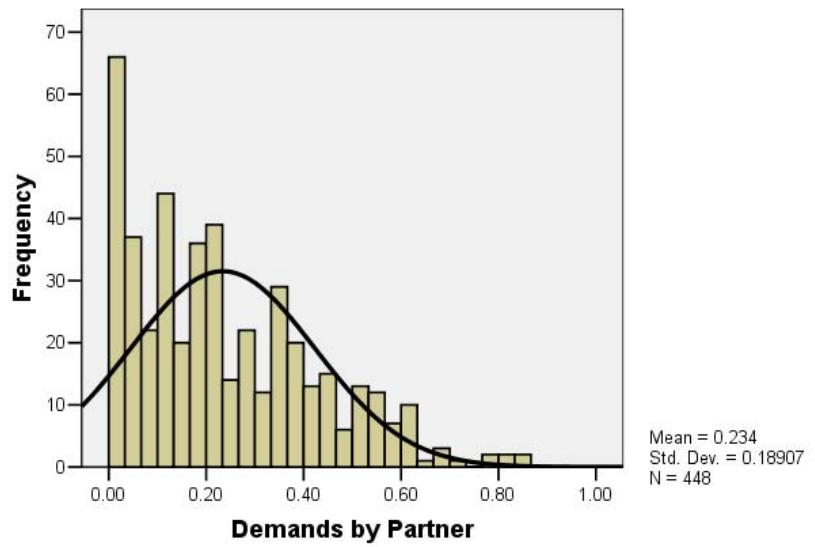
**Threat of Harm to You by Partner: FEMALE sample**



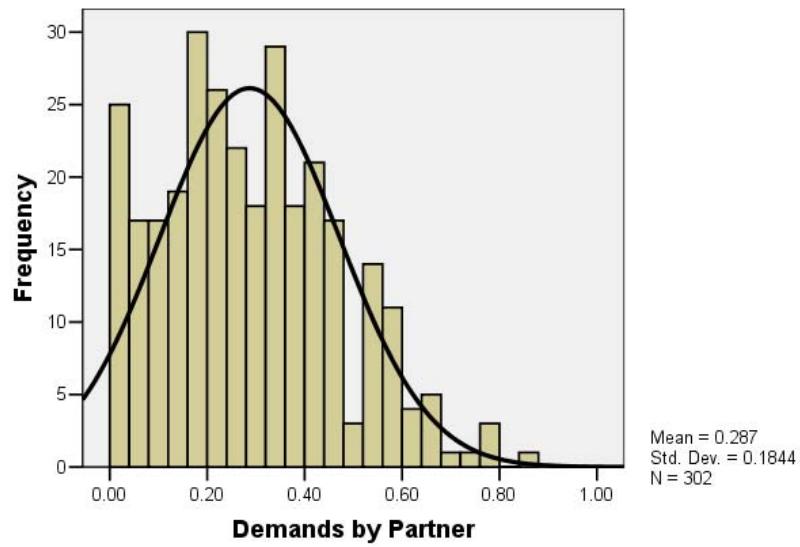
**Threat of Harm to You by Partner: MALE sample**

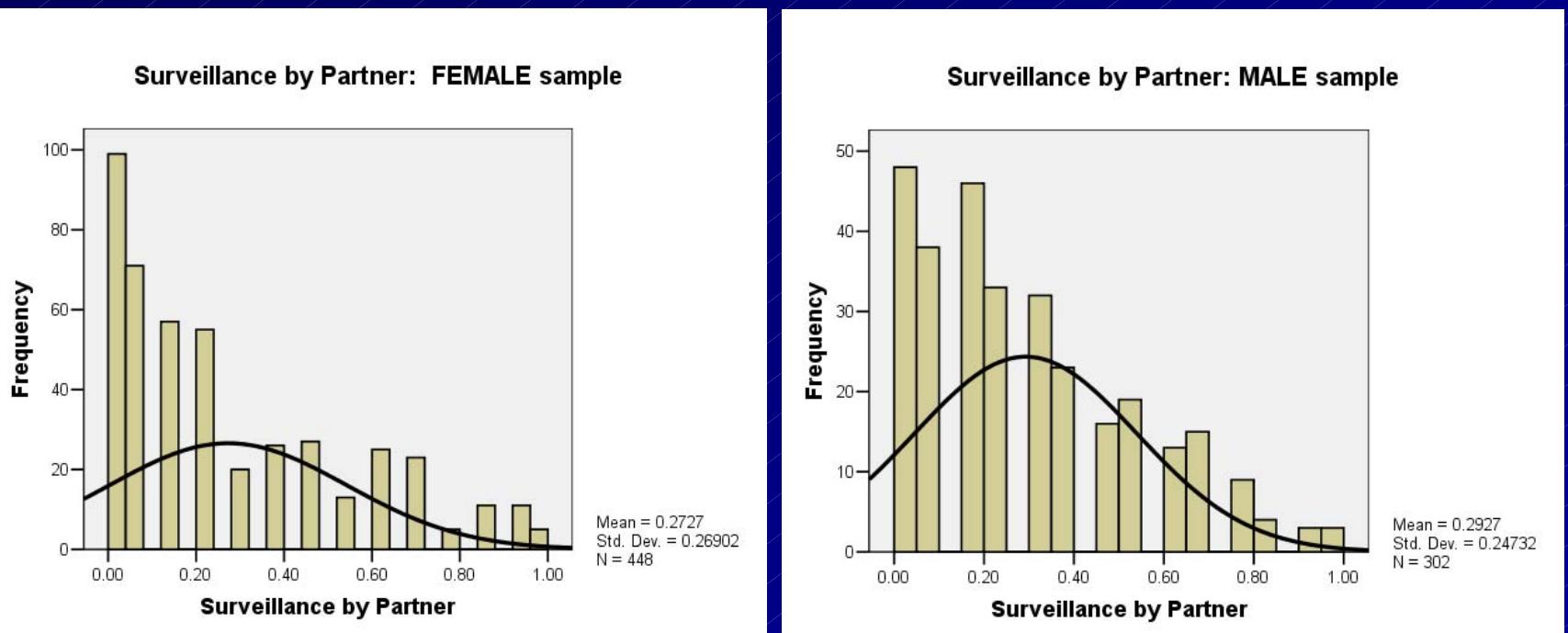


**Demands by Partner: FEMALE sample**



**Demands by Partner: MALE sample**





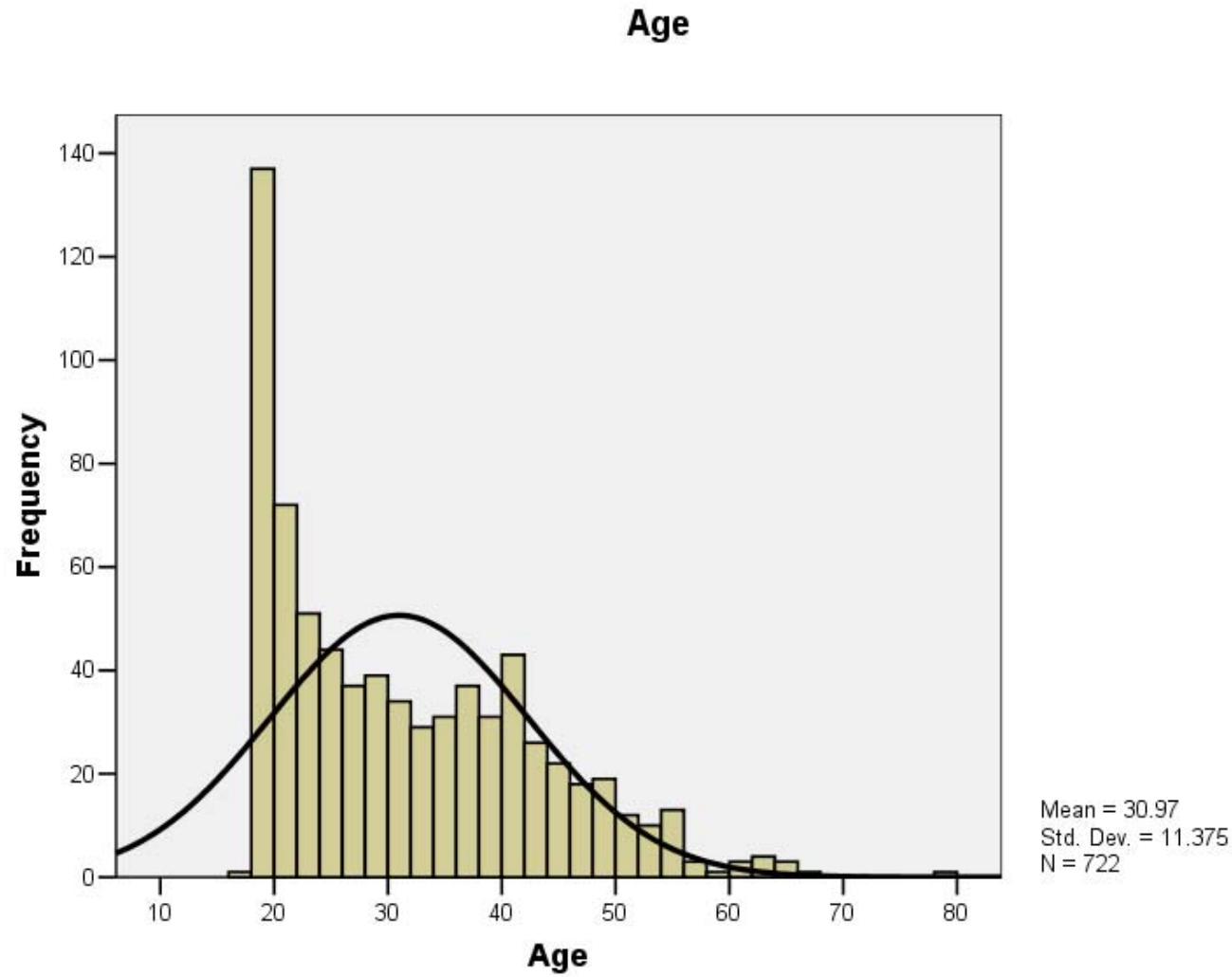
# Validity Study: Methods

- 2 geographic locations
  - Washington, D.C.
  - Boston, MA
- Recruitment sites
  - Domestic violence courts
  - Family courts
  - Community social service programs
  - Community colleges
  - Public gathering places

# Sample Description:

## IPV Victimization and Perpetration

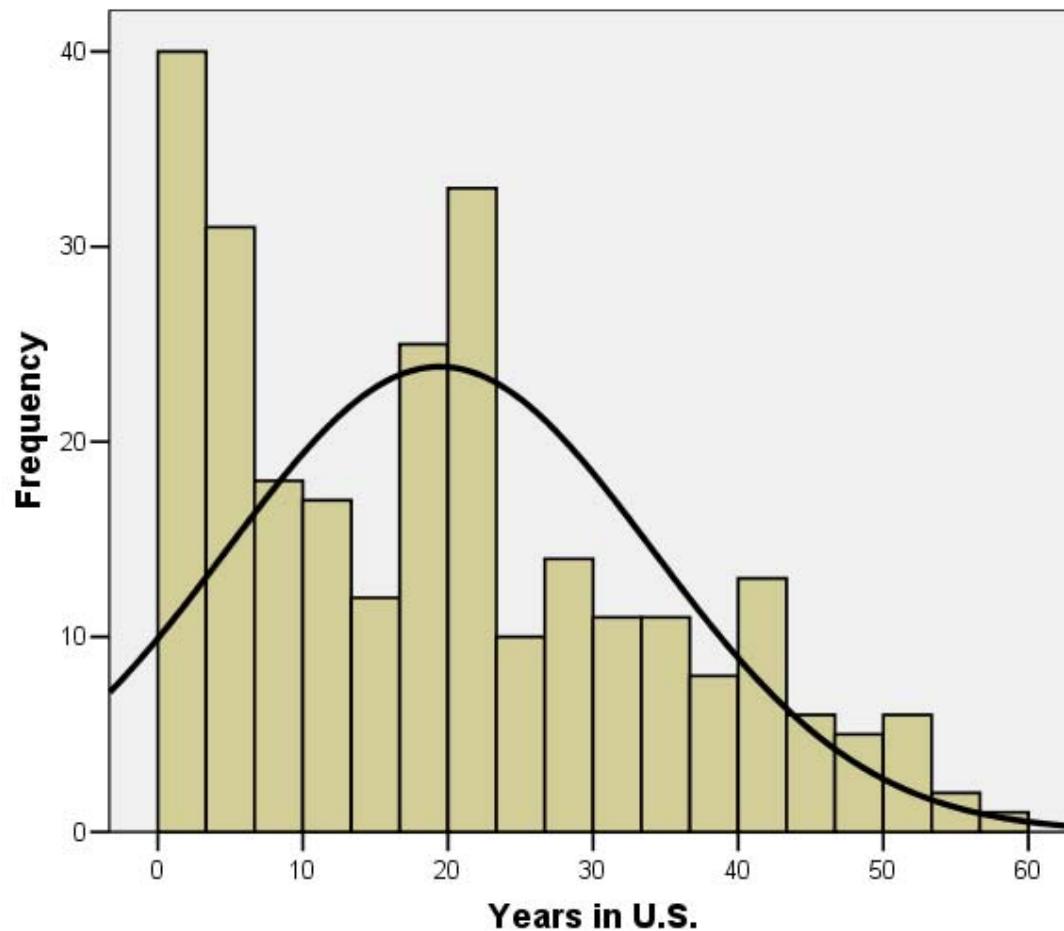
	Neither	Both	Victim	Perp	<b>TOTAL</b>
Male	46	216	37	14	<b>313</b>
Female	67	297	68	16	<b>448</b>
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>113</b>	<b>513</b>	<b>105</b>	<b>30</b>	<b>763</b>



# Ethnicity

- 58.1% African American
- 23.4% Caucasian
- 12.0% Latina/Latino
- 12.5% Other

### Years in U.S.

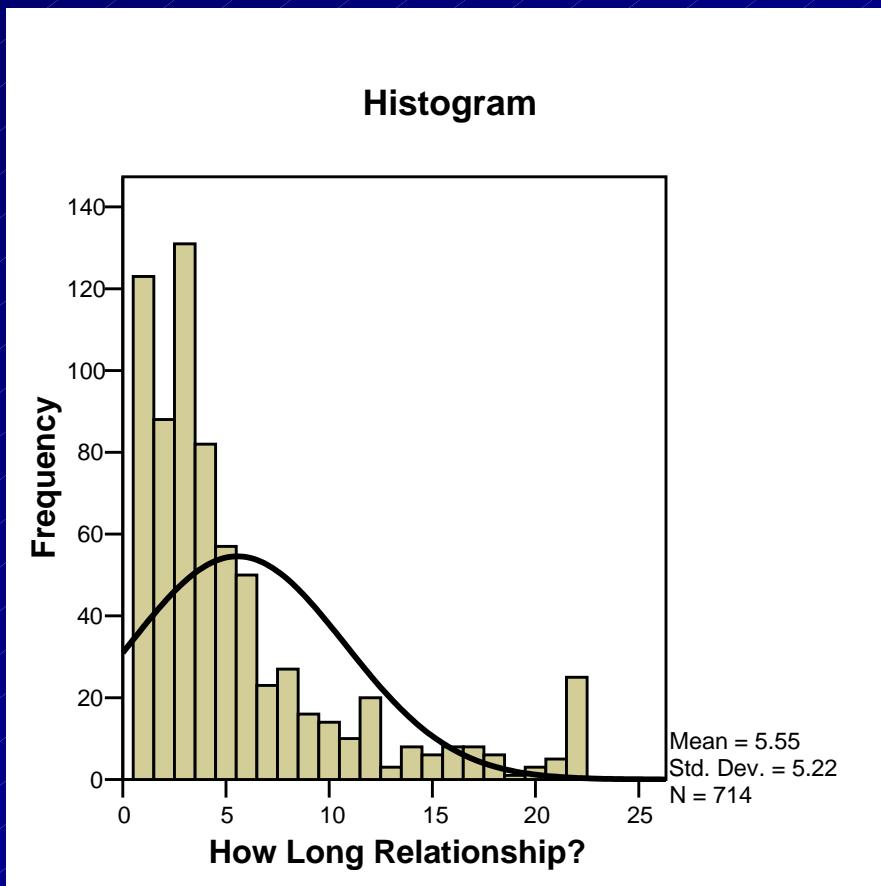


# Employment / Education

- 18.1% Unemployed
- 29.0% Fed or state assistance
- 20.0% < 12<sup>th</sup> grade education
- 16.2% Completed 2+ yrs college

# Relationship Status

- 62.3% Currently involved
- 33.4% Currently living with partner
- 23.2% Married
- 44.5% Committed relationship



# Convergent and Discriminate Validity

	Partner Report			Self-Report		
	Demand	Surveil	IPV	Demand	Surveil	IPV
Coercion: Partner Report	.61	.76	.73 phy .71 psy	.47	.44	.44 phy .45 psy
Coercion: Self Report	.44	.47	.49 phy .40 psy	.53	.60	.60 phy .57 psy

# Predictive Validity

	PTSD	Depression	IPV Threat Appraisal	Fear
Partner's Coercion	.43	.30	.45	.42
Own Coercion	.20	.13	.22	.16

Beta values in cells, all significant at  $p \leq .001$

# Predictive Validity, Controlling for CTS and PMWI

	PTSD	Depression	IPV Threat Appraisal	Fear
Partner's Coercion (total sample)	.43* ( $a^2R = .30$ )	.30* ( $a^2R = .13$ )	.45* ( $a^2R = .34$ )	.42* ( $a^2R = .30$ )
Partner's Coercion, controlling for CTS PMWI (total sample)	.18* .26* .24* ( $a^2R = .38$ )	.06 .06 .36* ( $a^2R = .20$ )	.21* .35* .17* ( $a^2R = .43$ )	.14* .31* .25* ( $a^2R = .40$ )

# Predictive Validity: Male vs. Female

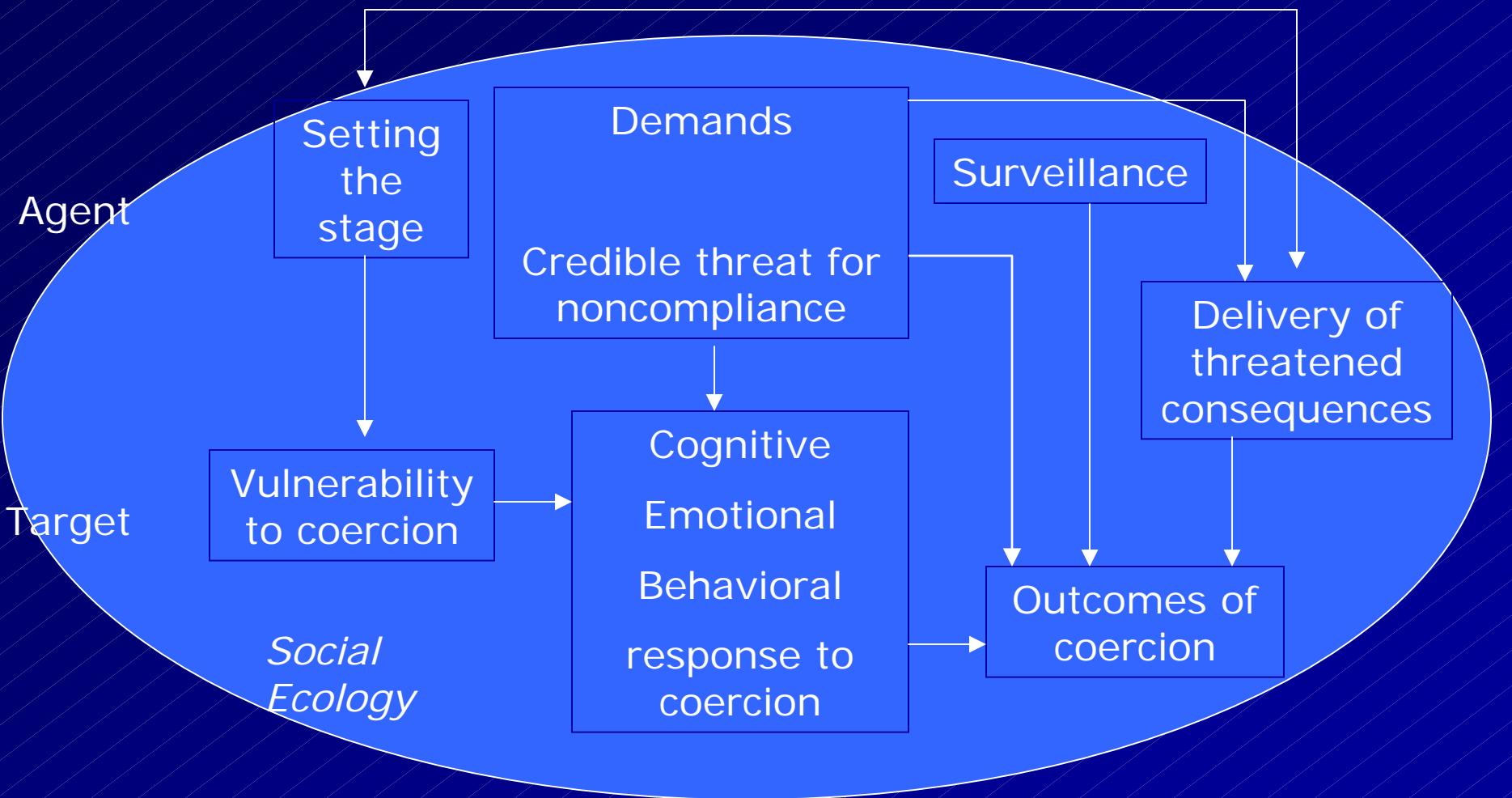
	PTSD	Depression	IPV Threat Appraisal	Fear
Partner's Coercion (female sample)	.49*	.37*	.47*	.48*
Partner's Coercion (male sample)	.38*	.23*	.43*	.39*

Beta values in cells, all significant at  $p \leq .001$

# Predictive Validity: Male vs. Female Controlling for CTS and PMWI

	<b>PTSD</b>	<b>Depression</b>	<b>IPV Threat Appraisal</b>	<b>Fear</b>
<b>Partner's Coercion <i>controlling for</i></b>				
CTS	.21*	.10	.19*	.09
PMWI	.19*	.00	.28*	.25*
(female sample)	.32*	.43*	.27*	.37*
	( $a^2R = .44$ )	( $a^2R = .26$ )	( $a^2R = .45$ )	( $a^2R = .43$ )
<b>Partner's Coercion <i>controlling for</i></b>				
CTS	.18*	.07	.24*	.35*
PMWI	.31*	.06	.44*	.28*
(male sample)	.09	.21*	.01	.04
	( $a^2R = .27$ )	( $a^2R = .09$ )	( $a^2R = .40$ )	( $a^2R = .31$ )

# Conceptual Model of Coercive Control



Dutton & Goodman, *Sex Roles (forthcoming)*

## **Appendix M-2**

Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization

*Sex Roles, Vol. 52, Nos. 11/12, June 2005 (© 2005)*  
 DOI: 10.1007/s11199-005-4196-6

## Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization

Mary Ann Dutton<sup>1,3</sup> and Lisa A. Goodman<sup>2</sup>

---

For decades, battered women's advocates have placed coercive control squarely at the center of their analysis of intimate partner violence. Yet, little work has been done to conceptualize and measure the key construct of coercive control. In this article, we apply French and Raven's social power model to a conceptualization of coercive control in intimate partner violence relationships. Central elements of the model include: social ecology; setting the stage; coercion involving a demand and a credible threat for noncompliance; surveillance; delivery of threatened consequences; and the victim's behavioral and emotional response to coercion. These elements occur in spiraling and overlapping sequences to establish an overall situation of coercive control. The implications of this model for theory and practice are discussed.

**KEY WORDS:**

A1

A2

For decades now, battered women's advocates have placed the notion of coercive control squarely at the center of their analysis of intimate partner violence (IPV). Indeed, they have defined IPV as a "pattern of coercive control" (Pence & Paymar, 1986) in which the batterer asserts his power over the victim through the use of threats, as well as actual violence. Violence is simply a tool, within this framework, that the perpetrator uses to gain greater power in the relationship to deter or trigger specific behaviors, win arguments, or demonstrate dominance (Dobash & Dobash, 1992). Other tools might include isolation, intimidation, threats, withholding of necessary resources such as money or transportation, and abuse of the children, other relatives, or even pets. Explaining the Duluth Model, a widely used batterer treatment program, Pence (1989), one of its founders, wrote that the program "assumes battering is not an

individual pathology or mental illness but rather just one part of a system of abusive and violent behaviors to control the victim for the purposes of the abuser" (p. 30). And, in an eloquent description of "battered women's" responses, Stark (1995) wrote,

"Physical violence may not be the most significant factor about most battering relationships. In all probability, the clinical profile revealed by battered women reflects the fact that they have been subjected to an ongoing strategy of intimidation, isolation, and control that extends to all areas of a woman's life, including sexuality; material necessities; relations with family, children, and friends; and work. Sporadic, even severe violence makes this strategy of control effective. But the unique profile of 'the battered woman' arises as much from the deprivation of liberty implied by coercion and control as it does from violence-induced trauma" (p. 987).

Yet, despite this common assumption, borne out every day in the horrific stories told by battered women throughout the country, surprisingly little work has been done to conceptualize and measure the key construct of coercive control. In the absence of a clear conceptualization, measures of coercion, usually embedded within broader measures

<sup>1</sup>Department of Psychiatry, Georgetown University Medical Center, Washington, DC.

<sup>2</sup>Boston College, Chestnut Hill, MA.

<sup>3</sup>To whom correspondence should be addressed at Department of Psychiatry, Georgetown University Medical Center, 620 Kober Cogan Hall, Washington, DC, 20007; e-mail: mad27@georgetown.edu.

of psychological abuse, are neither comprehensive nor internally consistent. Researchers have variously included behaviors ranging from verbal put-downs to intimidation to kidnapping under the rubric of coercion. For a number of reasons, detailed below, the need for a tighter conceptualization and operationalization of this notion has gained new urgency in recent years.

First, despite over two decades of research on intimate partner violence (IPV) controversy concerning "gender symmetry," or the relative use of violence by men versus women is more heated than ever. This controversy has come to a head recently, as more and more women are being arrested in cases that police officers perceive as "mutual violence." One tradition of research—mainly conducted by family researchers—has consistently produced results indicating that women and men use violence at equal rates, and in some cases, women use violence more often (Straus & Gelles, 1990). Another body of research has demonstrated that men use violence, including homicide, against their female partners more often than women use violence against their male partners (Bachman & Saltzman, 1995) and that women's use of violence largely involves self-defense or fighting back (DeKeseredy et al., 1998; Saunders, 1986). Many researchers have pointed out that one reason (among many) for the absence of consensus on the relative use of violence by men versus women is that measurement of violent acts alone cannot adequately characterize violence in intimate partner relationships (DeKeseredy, 1998; Dutton, 1996; Edleson & Tolman, 1992; Smith, Smith, & Earp, 1999; Yoshihama, 2000). Rather, it is necessary to understand the use of, and response to, IPV in the context of the relationship and the cultural, social, and institutional systems within which the perpetrator and victim live (Dutton, 1996; Edleson & Tolman, 1992). Central to this context is the role of coercion. Greater attention to the role of coercion would enable researchers to sort out gender differences in the very nature of topographically similar acts, as well as their effects on victims' psychological wellbeing and future behavior.

A second and related reason for the urgent need to conceptualize and measure coercive control in violent relationships is the growing interest in developing subtypes of intimate partner violence, rather than lumping them together under one common rubric. A rubric that would enable us to make better distinctions could be extremely useful in numerous arenas, including batterer treatment, risk assessment, and

safety planning for victims. A leader in this effort, Johnson (Johnson & Ferraro, 2000) has noted that

"Partner violence cannot be understood without acknowledging important distinctions among types of violence, motives of perpetrators, the social locations of both partners, and the cultural contexts in which violence occurs" (p. 948).

Three chief features of Johnson's typology are: (1) his consideration of the couple as the unit of analysis; (2) his inclusion of women's potential use of violence; and, most relevant for this paper, (3) his focus on the broader context of potential coercion and control in intimate partner relationships.

Finally, and perhaps most urgently, the role of coercive control in IPV needs to be more thoroughly understood in the legal context. In that context, domestic violence is usually understood as a one-size-fits-all category, based on acts of assault alone without regard to the coercive context in which they occur. Moreover, the role of coercive control in extracting criminal conduct is rarely considered in criminal cases (Colvin et al., 2001). Much work needs to be done to bring the notion of coercion in IPV into the legal arena. Without attention to this critical element of IPV, legal actors hear only parts of the stories that victims bring them every day in court. A more discriminating understanding of the nature of specific IPV crimes, including the element of coercion, would help secure more appropriate sentencing, as well as treatment for the perpetrators, and more effective safety planning for victims (Erskine, 1999).

## THE SOCIAL BASES OF POWER

As we will elaborate below, theoretical work exists on the concepts of coercion and control; however, few have attempted to integrate this work with our current understanding of violent intimate relationships. In the 1950s, stimulated by Lewin's work on power, which he defined as "the possibility of inducing forces of a certain magnitude on another person" (Lewin, 1935, p. 131), the Research Center for Group **A2** Dynamics began work on different aspects of group power and influence. In that context, French and Raven began to meet to develop a general theory of social power, defined, consistent with Lewin's work, as "potential influence" or the ability of an "agent" to influence a "target" (French & Raven, 1959).

French and Raven were interested in what sorts of resources a person might draw upon to exercise

**Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization****745**

influence. Eventually, in a key paper (1959), they developed five bases of power, each involving one person's ability to impose, give, or administer tangible or intangible outcomes on another. In this model, we refer to the person who is doing the influencing as the "agent," and the person being influenced is the "target." Both men and women may be agents of coercion in their intimate relationship, as well as the targets of it from their intimate partners. We assume that coercion exists not only in intimate heterosexual relationships, but also in lesbian and gay male relationships as well.

Coercive power involves the agent's ability to impose on the target things the target does not desire, or to remove or decrease desired things. Reward power involves the agent's ability to give to the target things the target desires, or to take away or decrease things not desired. Neither of these bases of power can be used to change a target's privately held beliefs or values. Instead, only behavioral compliance is obtained, which depends on surveillance. The remaining bases of power can be used to actually change the target's beliefs. Legitimate power involves the agent's ability to impose on the target feelings of obligation or responsibility. Referent power involves the agent's ability to provide feelings of personal acceptance or approval based on the target's identification with the agent. Expert power involves the agent's ability to provide skill or expertise and arises from the target's belief that the expert has such expertise. A sixth basis, informational power, involving the agent's ability to provide knowledge or information, was added later (Raven, 1965).

More recently, Raven (1992) extended the original model into a Power/Interaction Model of Interpersonal Influence. This model's main advance was to offer a more dynamic view of power, distinguishing between *bases* of power (i.e., ability or potential to control), power *processes* (i.e., attempts to control), and *outcomes* of power (i.e., compliance or resistance; Bruins, 1999). This distinction adds clarity not previously articulated, indicating that the potential for abuse of power, the attempt to use power to coerce, and the achievement of control through compliance should be considered separately.

Coercive power is most central to theorizing about coercive control in violent relationships, although the remaining bases of power may also apply. Both can be distinguished from force in that force involves a complete lack of volition on the part of the target (Raven, 1993). That is, if sufficient force is imposed, the target has no discretion in responding

(e.g., being forcefully held down while being raped). However, the target's response to coercion does involve choice, although not "free choice." Coercive power is based on the target's belief that the target can and will experience negative consequences for noncompliance (e.g., getting beaten for not having dinner on the table, partner will have sex with someone else; Raven, Center, & Rodriquez, 1975). The target can "choose" to comply (and hope to avoid threatened negative consequences) or risk punishment for noncompliance. Thus, the opportunity for resistance exists, but at a cost. Reward power also has a connection to coercive control in violent relationships since it is based on the target's belief that the agent can and will provide a reward in return for compliance (Raven, 1975). Thus, the agent's access to reward power (e.g., providing financial support, transportation, emotional intimacy) can be used to increase the target's probability of complying with the agent's coercion.

Several ancillary notions are essential to French and Raven's theory of social power. First, Raven (1993) argued that coercion may require softening the target or "setting the stage," where the agent demonstrates to the target that he has the means to exert coercion and is ready and willing to pay any associated costs. This might be demonstrated, for example, through a history of escalating IPV. Raven (1993) further stated that coercion could occur through invoking the power of a third party. In the case of IPV, for example, an agent could threaten to withdraw a petition for a visa or green card, or report false child abuse charges, thereby involving Immigration and Naturalization Services (INS) or Department of Social Services (DSS) officials, respectively.

Second, as noted above, central to the French and Raven's theory of social power is the notion that both coercion and reward power require surveillance. The agent needs to have information about the target's behavior to know whether or not the contingency for failure to comply needs to be imposed (Raven, 1993).

Third, both compliance and resistance are possible responses to coercion. Based on a program of empirical research regarding the processes of coercion with a college student sample in a laboratory design, Molm (1997) found, not surprisingly, that compliance increases over time when the probability of contingent punishment is high. More unexpectedly, however, greater power to punish and greater likelihood of being punished predicts greater resistance,

as well as compliance (Molm, 1997). That is, compliant victims do not retaliate less and vice versa. Similarly, in a community-based study of IPV victims' responses to violence, we (Goodman, Dutton, Weinfurt, & Cook, 2003) found that battered women use increasing levels of both resistance and placating strategies as the violence increases in intensity. Together, these findings suggest that seemingly opposite responses to coercion co-occur as the level of threat increases.

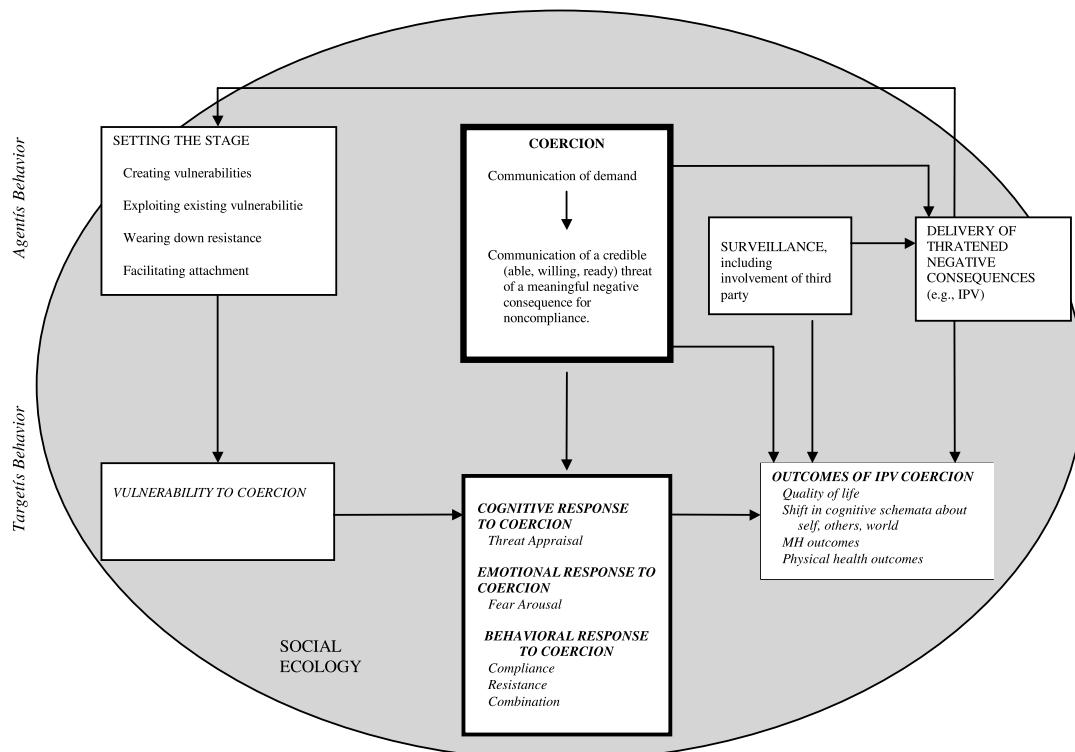
These points serve to clarify the limitations of current measures of psychological abuse as measures of the distinct concept of coercive control. First, current measures of psychological abuse, for example, the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (Tolman, 1989, 1999) and the Work/School Abuse Scale (Riger, Ahrens, & Blickenstaff, 2001) typically are composed of items characterizing abusive acts or tactics without regard to their ability to actually control the partner. That is, these measures do not assess the contingent possibility of negative sanctions inherent in coercion. Second, current psychological abuse measures do not separate coercion (e.g., threat not to allow contact with family if a woman talks about past violence) from other forms of nonphysical abuse (e.g., humiliation, not allowed

out of the house). Third, current measures do not distinguish the *process* of control (i.e., coercive tactics) from *outcomes* (i.e., compliance or resistance as end results). Verbal threats or a raised voice may constitute control tactics, but are not coercive unless they signal the threat of subsequent consequences for noncompliance (e.g., violent assault). Gender differences may be especially salient here, since women and men may differ in their ability to convey a credible threat, while they may differ less in their use of verbal insults or statements of humiliation.

## MODEL OF COERCION IN INTIMATE PARTNER VIOLENCE

In the next section, we apply the social power model (Raven, 1993; Molm, 1997), particularly its characterization of coercion, to a conceptualization of coercive control in relationships involving intimate partner violence. The resulting theoretical model of coercion in intimate partner violence is illustrated in Fig. 1.

Coercive control in intimate partner violence is a dynamic process linking a demand with a credible



**Fig. 1.** Model of coercion in intimate partner violence.

threatened negative consequence for noncompliance. A new measure of coercion in intimate relationships, under development by the authors,<sup>4</sup> identifies eight domains of control in which demands may be made. These domains were developed on the basis of the authors' clinical and forensic experience and with the help of a National Advisory Panel of 20 domestic violence experts. These domains include personal activities/appearance (e.g., demand to wear certain clothing or hairstyles), support/social life/family (e.g., refusal to allow target to seek help of counselor or talk with family members), household (e.g., demanding only specific foods be purchased), work/economic/resources (e.g., not allowing non-English speaking partner to learn English), health (e.g., not allowing target to obtain needed medications), intimate relationship (e.g., demanding target not use birth control), legal (e.g., demanding that the target engage in illegal activities), immigration (e.g., threats to report target to immigration officials), and children (threats to report target to child protective services). Examples from the authors' clinical and forensic experience of severe coercion in an intimate partner violent relationship may include the threat of physical assault for failure to engage in sexual demands, the threat of taking the children away from their mother if she fails to allow the abusive partner to return to the home following a separation, the threat of withdrawing immigration papers if an immigrant woman calls the police when her husband is violent, or a woman's threat of disclosing private information about her partner for failure to agree to send the children to the school of her choice. Less serious coercion in terms of physical harm—but psychologically harmful nevertheless—include a partner's threat to embarrass a woman in front of her family or friends, or to seek sex outside the relationship if a woman doesn't allow her partner to engage in unwanted sexual behaviors with her. In the next sections, we break down this broad conceptualization into the components of the model outlined in Fig. 1. The upper portion of the figure represents the agent's verbal or behavioral responses, while the lower portion characterizes the target's responses.

### Social Ecology

To understand the dynamics of coercive control requires attention to the social context in which it occurs. Economic, political, cultural, familial, social,

<sup>4</sup>Funded by the National Institute of Justice.

and individual factors—as well as their interactions—give meaning to an abuser's coercive behavior (i.e., setting the stage for coercion, coercive threats, surveillance, carrying out threatened consequences) (Edleson & Tolman, 1992) and the partner's responses to it (i.e., the immediate cognitive, behavioral and emotional responses to coercive threats, ongoing traumatic effects of exposure to coercion; Dutton, 1996). Indeed, each of the components of our model, described below, can be understood only within the context of the social ecology that gives it meaning. Our own clinical experience has demonstrated that a man's threat to leave his partner means one thing if his partner is a new immigrant, entirely emotionally or economically dependent on him, but quite another if she is a wealthy American with plenty of social and emotional resources.

Virtually all relationships involve persuasion and influence according to theories of social power (French & Raven, 1959; Raven, 1992). At some point or another, many people even say things to their partners like, "If you don't X, I will Y...," with X ranging from "let me take you out to dinner" to "sell drugs for me," and Y ranging from "sulk" to "kill you." So whether a demand and contingent threat can be characterized as coercive is contextually dependent. For example, threatening to call the police unless one's partner puts down a weapon involves a demand (put down the weapon) followed by a threat of contingent negative consequences (call to police). No doubt, the individual brandishing the weapon would perceive the threat to be an aversive event. Yet, calling the police for protection and demanding that one's partner stop threatening with a weapon may be expected by others who believe that one should "do something" to stop the violence. Similarly, threatening to leave a relationship unless one's partner stops his abusive behavior would likely be viewed by most as socially acceptable behavior. Therefore, not only is context required to understand the nature of coercive behaviors and responses to them, but it is required even to determine whether a particular behavior should be considered as coercion at all.

### Setting the Stage

Given a sufficiently serious threat, coercion can occur in a relationship even when there has been no prior violence or threat to "soften" the partner's resistance. However, one might assume that the occurrence of violence in a relationship might make the victim particularly vulnerable to coercion, even when

the immediate threat is minor. Once intimate partner violence occurs, a line has been crossed and the possibility remains that it will happen again, even though a woman may try to believe that it won't. The stage has been set. In these cases, the dynamics of coercion may be difficult to observe directly. Without an appreciation of the many ways in which the stage has been set to "prime" the target for coercion, recognizing a coercive threat and understanding a target's response to it may not be obvious. For example, it is difficult to appreciate the power of a threat to "give her what she deserves" if a woman looks at another man without knowing that her boyfriend previously had beaten her and held a knife to her throat because she looked at one of his friends in a way that he perceived as flirtatious. Thus, understanding coercive control necessitates knowing the foundations upon which coercion is built.

Four ways in which a partner can "set the stage" for coercion in the relationship include (1) creating the expectancy for negative consequences, (2) creating or exploiting the partner's vulnerabilities, (3) wearing down the partner's resistance, and (4) facilitating attachment. These are described in more detail below.

#### *Creating the Expectancy for Coercive Outcomes*

Communicating the ability, willingness, and readiness to control one's partner by punishing her or him or withholding rewards for noncompliance is defined here as creating an expectancy of coercion. Our own clinical experience has shown us that communication may be made through the abusive partner's previous actions directed toward his current partner (e.g., prior serious violence) or toward others (e.g., having seriously injured a previous partner). Similarly, the expectancy can be created through explicit statements, for example, that the abusive partner has connections with others who would harm her if he instructed them to do so; or that the abusive partner has a particular method in mind for killing his partner. In one forensic case example, a husband told his wife in detail how he was going to kill her after her grandmother arrived home the next day. These messages set the stage for the victim to believe that, when it is threatened, the negative consequence will be delivered. It gives the coercive process credibility.

Communicating the credibility of a threat can be done in an instant or cumulatively over the course of a relationship. That is, a threat would certainly be

credible if there was some basis in behavioral history to suggest that it was plausible. For example, someone who previously has used serious violence with his partner, or with others, and who threatens to kill his partner—or to seriously injure her—would likely require little else to communicate credibility based on his ability (i.e., prior act), willingness (i.e., threat to do it again), and readiness (i.e., threat to do it at any moment) to carry out the threat. Importantly, depending on the nature of a threat, previous physical or sexual assault by the partner might be sufficient to indicate credibility of a subsequent threat.

#### *Creating or Exploiting Vulnerabilities*

Vulnerabilities increase a victim's susceptibility to certain forms of coercion. Our clinical experience has repeatedly demonstrated that economic liabilities increase vulnerability to threats involving money, credit, health insurance, child care and employment. Illness, injury, physical disability, pregnancy, or small physical stature increase vulnerability to the threat of physical assault. Motherhood increases vulnerability to threats involving children. Substance abuse or mental health problems increase vulnerability to all forms of abuse (Kilpatrick, Acierno, Resnick, Saunders, & Best, 1997), likely because these conditions may reduce one's ability to act effectively on one's own behalf. Illegal immigration status or legal problems increase vulnerability to threats involving exposure to police or other authorities (Gold, 2000; Hass, Dutton, & Orloff, 2000). Language barriers increase vulnerability to threats that involve increased social isolation. History of childhood abuse or other dysfunctional family history can increase vulnerability to threats involving relationship termination or psychological manipulation (Gold, 2000).

An individual may enter into a relationship with existing vulnerabilities or acquire them independently of her partner. These vulnerabilities can in turn be exploited by her abusive partner. In, one case, a woman with breast cancer was exploited when her abusive partner insisted that she remain in the relationship, stating that no one would want a woman with those defects. The birth of a child can be exploited if, for example, an abusive partner threatens to remove the child's coverage on his medical insurance if his partner does not comply with his desire for sex immediately following delivery of the child.

An abusive partner may intentionally create vulnerabilities in order to exert coercive control

A2

**Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization****749**

over his partner. Numerous clinical examples have shown that creating financial indebtedness by insisting that all expenses be charged on a credit card in the partner's name is not uncommon. Forcing one's partner to quit a job, become involved in illegal activities (e.g., fraud, elicit drugs) or engage in shameful experiences (e.g., sex with strangers, children, or animals) also can create vulnerabilities such as physical or mental health effects of traumatic violence exposure (Acierno, Resnick, Kilpatrick, Saunders, & Best, 1999; Stein & Kennedy, 2001), fear of future revictimization, or economic loss.

***Wearing Down Resistance***

Resistance to coercion is facilitated by tangible (e.g., economic resources, access to transportation, place to stay), social (e.g., emotional support) and personal (e.g., physical stamina, determination, willingness to take risks) resources. Abusers can undermine their partner's ability to resist coercive control by depleting these resources. For example, interfering with victims' social networks or using psychologically abusive tactics that damage a person's physical and psychological well-being wear down one's ability or will to resist. Separation from family and friends can create a sense of futility and despair. When resistance is lower, compliance with coercive demands may be more likely since there are fewer resources to combat the pressure to comply.

***Facilitating—and Then Exploiting—Emotional Attachment***

Healthy relationships involve mutual emotional interdependence (Rusbult, Olsen, Davis, & Hannon, 2001; Walsh, 1982). However, when the emotional dependence in the relationship is extreme and unbalanced, the individual who is less dependent has greater power in the relationship. Emotional dependency can then be exploited by the partner who is less attached to the relationship.

The theory of traumatic bonding (Dutton & Painter, 1993) describes one example of this process, where the abusive partner simultaneously abuses and creates vulnerabilities in the victim, such that attachment to the abuser is required (e.g., beating one's partner and then caring for her injuries). In some cases, an abusive partner creates an emotional imbal-

ance in the relationship by facilitating emotional dependency to exploit it. An imbalance of emotional attachment in the relationship may also stem from one partner's extreme emotional dependency as a personality style. Irrespective of how it develops, emotional dependency can be exploited by a coercive partner.

***Coercion***

We have operationalized coercion as a two-part construct involving a demand and a threat. Coercive threats are different from non-coercive threats, although they can be serious forms of abuse on their own. Coercive threats are contingent; they involve communication about both a demand and an associated credible threat (Molm, 1997; Raven, 1993; Raven, Center & Rodrigues, 1995).

***Coercive Demand***

Central to the notion of coercive control is the idea of compliance with demands or expectations. A threatened negative outcome involved in coercion is contingent on one's failure to comply with the partner's "demand." The Merriam-Webster online dictionary (<http://www.m-w.com/>) defines "demand" as "to ask or call for with authority; to claim as due or just." This definition encompasses the "entitlement" that often characterizes a demand in violent intimate partner relationships.

Communication between human beings is complex and, thus, demands can be relayed in many different ways. The form of the statement that contains a demand can vary widely. Thus, demands may be communicated explicitly (e.g., "You'd better be home when I get here!") or implicitly (e.g., "You know what you need to do"). They may be communicated with or without words (e.g. raised fist or glare from across the room). A demand (e.g., "Don't walk out of this house...") may be communicated contemporaneously with a related threat (e.g., "... or I'll file for custody and take the kids") or years before the threatened consequence is to be carried out (e.g., "... or some day I'll find you").

Assessing coercive demands in intimate partner violence requires identifying not only obvious and discrete demands, but those that are integrated seamlessly into the day-to-day interactions of the partners' lives. Sometimes, demands don't even have to

be stated explicitly to be understood as existent. For many women in abusive intimate relationships, the rituals of everyday life are illustrated by "I just knew that I had to \_\_\_ or else he would \_\_\_." Expectations become coercive demands when the expectation is held by the coercive partner and understood as such by the target and the price of noncompliance with those expectations is a contingent punishment or opportunity cost.

### Credible threat

A threat may be explicit (e.g., "If you're not here when I get home, you'll get it worse than last night"). Alternatively, a threat may be communicated implicitly, relying on the pattern of the abuser's behavior over the course of the relationship (i.e., over time whenever a woman came home late from work, her partner started an argument, which often led to physical assault). In this example, an explicit statement of the threat is unnecessary after some period of time; it is clearly understood by both parties that when she doesn't come home when he expects her to, there will be the threat of consequences. In this latter case, abused women often report, "I just knew what would happen if I didn't do what he wanted me to do."

For a demand to be coercive, the contingent threat associated with it must be credible. Otherwise, the demand is without consequence; it is empty. The partner's prior behavior, described as "setting the stage" for coercion can communicate the degree of credibility with which a threat is delivered. Or information about the credibility of a threat may be communicated contemporaneously with a demand. Whenever it occurs, the agent's communication that he is able, willing, and ready to carry out a threat for noncompliance gives his threat credibility.

### Surveillance

According to the theory of social power, coercion cannot work without surveillance (Raven, 1992)—or perhaps just the "victim's" belief that it is occurring. Since a threat is contingent on noncompliance, surveillance is required to determine whether compliance has occurred. Our clinical experience has shown that surveillance methods are commonplace in intimate partner violence. Abusers often use fre-

quent phone calls to monitor their partner's whereabouts. Inspections to determine whether a woman cleaned all surfaces in the house as she was told, whether she had sex with someone else, or whether she drove the car a greater number of miles than the distance between her house and her job are but a few examples of surveillance. Even when an abuser does not actually use surveillance tactics, he or she can enhance the controlling value of a threat by persuading his partner that he or she does. Some IPV victims believe that their partners will "just know," or that he or she will inevitably find out, if one does what the other says or not.

Third parties are also involved in the surveillance process. In many of the first author's forensic cases, for example, children are recruited to report their mother's behavior to her partner, when they are questioned about who came to the house, who their mother talked to on the telephone, or when she returned home. Enlisting other family and friends to report on one's behavior allows an abuser to extend his or her surveillance far beyond that which one could reasonably conduct alone.

### Delivery of Threatened Negative Consequences

The dispensing of threatened negative consequences can serve to set the stage for later coercive acts to be successful, that is, to result in compliance. For example, when a man threatens to "teach his wife a lesson" for not having sex with him, and then rapes her when she refuses, the likelihood of her compliance the next time is increased (Molm, 1997). Since coercive threats often involve various acts of IPV, when actually delivered, they contribute to the cumulative pattern of intimate partner violence and abuse in the relationship. Of course, coercive control doesn't require a threatened consequence to be actually delivered—only creation of the belief that it could be enacted.

### Vulnerability to Coercion

The proposed model of coercion recognizes that individuals enter intimate relationships with different levels of vulnerability to coercion. As described above, these vulnerabilities may vary in nature, but each constitutes a wedge which can be used to effectively coerce the person. Vulnerability to coercion does not necessarily reflect a weakness or deficit.

Vulnerability to coercion can arise from something that the partner can exploit or take away. For example, someone with considerable independent financial resources is likely not easily coerced by the threat of withholding money for groceries, while someone who depends on a welfare check may be more easily coerced in this way. Similarly, having small children or elderly parents provides another target against which coercive threats can be made. In this model vulnerability to coercion may be created by the partner through years of maltreatment and abuse or the person may enter the relationship with notable vulnerabilities that provide a ready avenue for coercion by a partner who is so inclined. Numerous clinical cases by the first author have involved women who have revealed vulnerabilities (e.g., history of childhood abuse) to their partner in an effort to seek support or to gain greater intimacy only to find that the information is later used to threaten them with humiliation or a repeat of prior victimization.

### **Cognitive, Emotional, and Behavioral Responses to Coercion**

Three different categories of short-term response to coercive acts include the extent of (1) victims' cognitive appraisal of a coercive threat as signaling credible risk, (2) compliance or resistance as a behavioral response to an abuser's demands, and (3) fear arousal.

#### *Threat Appraisal: Cognitive Response to Coercion*

Since coercion operates out of a threat of future negative consequences, the power of coercive control is tied to the perception of a threat. Threat appraisal is a variable pertaining to the "victim's" cognitive response, which is distinct from the acts of coercive threats by a "perpetrator." A threat may yet to have been carried out (e.g., threat to kill, kidnap the children), but one can examine the response to the threat alone separate from the response to the consequences for compliance or noncompliance especially when the threatened consequence is not immediate. Thus, coercive control relies in part on the perception of threat by the target of coercive threats. Without the perception of a credible threat coercion cannot occur.

A single threat may dictate a target's behavior for years, while she or he holds the (accurate

or inaccurate) assumption that the threat is real and ongoing. Further, one study of coping among women (Hudek-Knezevic & Kardum, 2000) found that threat appraisal was a central component of stress. Yet, why women take some threats seriously and not others is unclear. Some threats are nearly universally credible, for example threats to kill when an angry man holds a loaded gun at a woman's head. Many others are less clear to observers who don't have knowledge of the relationship history—especially intimate partner violence.

While no formal theory has yet been developed to explain women's own IPV risk assessment, recent research suggests that battered women's violence threat appraisal is related to various risk factors, such as severity of prior violence (Mechanic, Weaver, & Resick, 2000) abuser characteristics (e.g., drunkenness, drug use, unemployment, relationship estrangement, and use of controlling behaviors; Gondolf & Heckert, 2003), social support and PTSD (Dutton, 2003). Furthermore, a woman's prior interpersonal relationships can teach her about the credibility of IPV threats. For example, she may have learned from a previous partner that when he got angry, he was more likely than not to beat or physically assault her. Through the process of generalization, she may have learned to expect that when men get angry, they will hurt her. In the case of a new partner, her threat appraisal may not be unreasonable, even if it is inaccurate.

In coercion, the detection of risk is usually accompanied by the target's belief that if he or she does something to keep the partner happy or not to make that person angry she could avoid further violence and abuse—or other threatened consequences. The understanding of this contingency suggests some level of perceived control over the risk of harm from their partner. However, in violent intimate partner relationships, this control is often elusive. First, in some cases, a coercive "demand" may be nonspecific and focus not on what a person is expected to *do* (or not do), but on what outcome she or he is expected to *accomplish* (i.e., not make the partner angry). Even if one intends to comply with a "nonspecific" demand, it is much more difficult—since knowing what would make the partner happy may be subtle or change over time. Indeed, many women report that they had complied with what they had been "told" to do, only to find out that their partner now wanted them to do something else – or to do it differently. Of course, nothing she does may ever satisfy her partner and, thus, her "noncompliance" is used to

justify—in the mind of the abuser—the violence that follows. Secondly, one observation is that even when a threat is coercive (i.e., implies a contingency depending on the target's compliance), it may actually matter little what the target does to comply. A threat may be meant to terrorize the partner, not to extract a particular response. By believing "if only I do what he or she wants, I can keep my partner from carrying out the threat," one may attempt to gain some level of (perceived) control over both how one views their relationship with the partner, as well as feelings of terror. If one were to believe, instead, that the partner was intent on terrifying the other, that the partner will abuse regardless of what one does, and that she or he has little control over what the does or doesn't do, she could no longer deny the danger to oneself and one's children, nor avoid feeling the terror that comes with that recognition. Yet, as with both coercive and non-coercive threats, the target has no real control. Avoiding a threatened consequence is always in the control of the agent, not the target, even when the "victim" complies with a demand.

#### *Compliance and Noncompliance: Behavioral Response to Coercion*

Responding to a demand can involve compliance, noncompliance, or both. As discussed above, our previous research (Goodman et al., 2003) supports the findings of Molm (1997) which indicates that as the severity of violence increases, both battered women's resistance and placating (i.e., compliance) increase.

Experience working with battered women suggests that they frequently resist their partner's demands, and they do so in a variety of ways. In some cases, noncompliance is oblique; one does not directly confront the partner with a refusal. At other times, one may quite explicitly and directly resist the partner's control. In some cases, the failure to comply is about "giving up"—feeling desperation and lack of energy to respond to a partner's incessant demands and abuse, such as when a woman says, "Go ahead and kill me, just get it over with—I'm not going to do what you want." At other times, the defiance is a clear and simple "no, I won't." Of course, sometimes the abuser makes good on a threat. At other times, in that moment, the threatened consequence is not forthcoming. However, the abuser can taunt his or her partner by indicating that the threat-

ened consequence will occur—just in his or her own time.

One may comply by "going along" with a partner's demands. Sometimes, the person may find it to be easier than resisting. Complying doesn't necessarily mean that one "wants" to do what the partner demands; more likely the individual is trying to create safety for oneself and one's children. Sometimes compliance with expectations or demands can become internalized or routine—with those actions taking on the appearance of being "voluntary." The day-to-day "rules" imposed by an abusive partner may be those that one becomes accustomed to as a personal risk management strategy—even without recognizing the extent of compliance.

#### **Fear Arousal: Emotional Response to Coercion**

Cognitive appraisals of threat are commonly associated with distressful affective responses including PTSD (Lobel & Gilat, 1998; Piotrkowski & Brannen, 2002). Further, some theories of threat appraisal (Loewenstein, Weber, Hsee, & Welch, 2001) emphasize the role of affect, versus cognition, for explaining threat appraisal. Regardless, the interconnectedness between feelings, cognitions, and behavior suggests that fear, cognitive appraisals of threat, and behavioral responses to coercion cannot be understood without recognizing the influence of each on the other.

Increased arousal can influence one's thoughts and behavior (Lazarus, 1999). For example, fear may focus the woman's attention on the narrow view of immediate danger, rather than on the long-term consequences of her response to it (e.g., fighting back, reaching for a knife). Emptying a revolver, rather than considering whether the first shot may have stopped an intruding abusive partner as he came through a barricaded door, is another example of fear taking precedent over cognitive problem-solving.

#### **Outcomes of IPV Coercion**

Exposure to coercive acts means exposure to threats of harm, including those that would be considered traumatic stressors such as threats of harm to self or others (American Psychiatric Association, 2000). Many types of threatened consequence in violent intimate relationships meet the event criterion for posttraumatic stress disorder (American

**Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization****753**

Psychiatric Association, 2000):

"the person experienced, witnessed, or was confronted with an event or events that involved actual or threatened death or serious injury, or a threat to the physical integrity of self or others" (p. 467).

It would not be surprising, then, to find that the consequences of coercive control include the range of mental health (e.g., posttraumatic stress symptoms, depression, anxiety) and physical health (gastrointestinal problems, sleep problems, hypertension headaches; Dutton, Haywood, & El-Bayoumi, 1997) problems associated with traumatic exposure (American Psychiatric Association, 2000; Dutton et al., 1997).

Although few studies have explored this question, a large body of research does show that intimate partner violence is associated with more severe mental health consequences than is physical violence. In a recent meta-analysis of the mental health impact of IPV, the prevalence of PTSD ranged from 31 to 84.4% (Golding, 1999). These rates are significantly higher than the estimated lifetime prevalence of 10.4% in the general population of women (Kessler, Sonnega, Bromet, Hughes, & Nelson, 1995) and 25.8% among women with a history of crime victimization (Resnick, Kilpatrick, Dansky, Saunders, & Best, 1993). Further, PTSD rarely occurs alone (Kessler et al., 1995). One of the most common comorbid diagnoses among women with PTSD is major depression (Breslau, Davis, Peterson, & Schultz, 1997). In the same meta-analysis of the mental health outcomes of IPV, the prevalence of depression ranged from 15 to 70% (Golding, 1999). These rates are compared to the lifetime rates observed in the general population (10.2–21.3%; Kessler et al., 1995; Weissman, Bruce, Leaf, Florio, & Holzer, 1991). In fact, IPV is a risk factor for suicide among women in general (e.g., Abbott, Johnson, Koziol-McLain, & Lowenstein, 1995; Bergman & Brismar, 1991) and specifically among African American women (Kaslow et al., 1998). In addition to mental health outcomes, IPV is also associated with negative behavioral and health outcomes.

Research has also shown that the adverse mental health outcomes of IPV are independently associated with psychological abuse, including both control/domination and emotional/verbal abuse (Dutton, Goodman, & Bennett, 1999). However, there is little research examining the impact of living with ongoing IPV threat such as in the case of coercion when a threat has been made, but the delivery

of the threatened consequence has yet to occur. Our own research with battered women has shown that greater appraisal of future IPV threat is related to both subsequent PTSD and depression, even after controlling for prior levels of IPV (Dutton, Goodman, Weinfurt, & Vankos, 2001). The role of a woman's own behavioral compliance (vs. resistance) and the extent to which she believes her own actions can control whether threats can be averted, is also an important line of research to consider in understanding the outcomes of IPV coercion.

Physical health outcomes, including health promoting behaviors, risky health behaviors, and physical health status, are also relevant outcomes of exposure to IPV, although existing studies have yet to parcel out the impact of coercion from other forms of exposure. In addition to the physical injury that results from IPV, research has demonstrated a significant relationship between IPV and poor health outcomes, including self-reported health status, somatic symptoms, risk of illness, and exacerbated medical conditions (Campbell et al., 2002; Campbell, 2002; Campbell & Lewandowski, 1997). In a national sample, women who had experienced severe violence during the past year reported twice as many days in bed due to illness during the previous month than those who experienced minor or no violence (Gelles & Straus, 1988). In a primarily African American (62%), employed sample (85%) of women recruited from two university-affiliated family practice clinics, physical IPV was associated with self-reported poor physical health and having had more than five physician visits in the past year (Coker, Smith, Bethea, King, & McKeown, 2000). Physical violence was also associated with hearing loss, angina, other heart or circulatory conditions, frequent bladder or kidney infections, having a hysterectomy, and gastric reflux. Psychological violence was associated with self-reported poor physical health as well as other specific medical problems, including chronic neck or back pain, arthritis, migraines or other frequent headaches, and stomach ulcer. In a sample of 234 primarily White battered women, participants retrospectively reported a decline in their physical health status during and after a violent relationship (Follingstad, Brennan, Hause, Polek, & Rutledge, 1991). More than 50% of the sample reported specific physical complaints including persistent headaches (57%), back and limb problems (55%), and stomach problems (55%). The literature linking IPV to health outcomes is growing, but we still know very little about the long-term physical health status.

## IMPLICATIONS

In this final section, we list a few potential uses of this model of coercive control in IPV. Both research and practice implications are discussed.

### Research

The model of IPV coercion elaborated in this paper can guide researchers in their exploration of a number of important research questions. First, the model can serve as the basis for measurement development. Indeed, we are now developing and validating a measure that taps each of the model's components, including setting the stage, surveillance, and responses to coercion, in addition to the demand and threatened consequence at the core of coercive control. We hope to use this measure to explore the nature of coercive control in a variety of populations.

Second, this model can enrich our exploration of the complex context in which violence occurs, enabling us to move beyond an accounting of specific assaultive acts. Our conceptualization of coercive control can, for example, inform the debate over whether men and women use violence at the same rates. Women are reported to use violence at rates comparable to that of men (Archer, 2000), although research also suggests that women are significantly more likely to report experiencing severe, frequent levels and negative consequences of IPV (Archer, 2000; Berk, Berk, Loseke, & Rauma, 1983; Campbell, 1993; Dobash, Dobash, Wilson, & Daly, 1992; Follingstad, Wright, Lloyd, & Sebastian, 1991; Holtzworth-Munroe, Smutzler, & Bates, 1997; Molidor & Tolman, 1998; O'Leary, 2000; Zlotnick, Kohn, Peterson, & Pearlstein, 1998). Indeed, the proposed model allows us to explore specific elements of the context in which men and women use coercion, as well as acts of violence and abuse. Topographically similar threat behavior may be accompanied by different contextual events (i.e., nature of demands and threats, "setting-the-stage," surveillance, enactment of consequences) for men versus women. Differences in the nature of coercion between other groups (e.g., first vs. chronic offenders, heterosexual vs. lesbian vs. gay male couples) can also be examined using this model as a conceptual guide.

Third, a model of coercion in IPV may allow us to deepen our understanding of the developmental sequence of IPV. Previous research has demonstrated the progression from psychological abuse to

physical assault (O'Leary, Malone, & Tyree, 1994). Yet, it is unclear how coercion fits into this developmental perspective. For example, does the severity of coercion progress on a trajectory along with physical and sexual assault or separately from it? Does coercion pre-date or follow the onset of severe physical violence? When abusers stop using physical assault following batterer treatment, for example, do they continue to use coercion? Do different components of the model become more salient?

Fourth, this model could be helpful in furthering our understanding of whether there are different "types" of batterers. Existing typologies (Gondolf, 1999; Hamberger, Lohr, Bonge, & Tolin, 1996, 1997; Holtzworth-Munroe, Meehan, Herron, Rehman, & Stuart, 2003; Holtzworth-Munroe, Rehman, & Herron, 2000) may be further refined by including coercion and control, along with severity of physical violence. Typologies of violent couple relationships that already take coercive control into account (Johnson, 1995; Johnson & Ferraro, 2000) might be enriched by this more refined conceptualization of that elusive construct.

### Practice

The model of coercive control in IPV presented here can also be useful as a tool for advocacy and batterer intervention. Using this framework may allow service providers to talk with men and women in a more sophisticated way, unraveling the complex dynamics involved in coercion and partner violence more generally. Better information about the patterns of violence—including coercion—gained from both batterers and victims can help us to tailor our interventions with regard to safety planning with victims, batterer treatment, and mental health interventions with both victims and perpetrators.

In the legal arena, this more refined conceptualization of coercion in relationships with IPV might assist prosecutors and defense attorneys to explain more adequately both victim and perpetrator behavior in physical and sexual assault cases involving intimate partners. Legal professionals might be able to understand more thoroughly the pattern of abuse within which specific violent acts take place; and therefore be able to make more informed decisions about perpetrator dispositions and victim safety.

Over time, we have become better and better at understanding the complexities of IPV, bringing sexual abuse, psychological abuse, and stalking into our

**Coercion in Intimate Partner Violence: Toward a New Conceptualization****755**

models. With this conceptualization of coercive control, we can take one more step in disentangling the phenomenon of intimate partner violence and come one step closer to stopping it.

**ACKNOWLEDGMENTS**

Grant 2001-WT-BX-0503 from the National Institute of Justice supported the development of this model through a research grant. We gratefully acknowledge the guidance of our National Advisory Board.

**REFERENCES**

- Acierno, R., Resnick, H., Kilpatrick, D. G., Saunders, B., & Best, C. L. (1999). Risk factors for rape, physical assault, and post-traumatic stress disorder in women: Examination of differential multivariate relationships. *Journal of Anxiety Disorders*, 13(6), 541–563.
- American Psychiatric Association. (2000). *Diagnostic and statistical manual DSM-IV-TR*. Washington, DC: Author.
- Archer, J. (2000). Sex differences in physical aggression to partners: A reply to Frieze (2000), O'Leary (2000), and White, Smith, Koss, & Figueiredo (2000). *Psychological Bulletin*, 126(5), 697–702.
- Bachman, R., & Saltzman, L. (1995). *Violence against women: Estimates from the redesigned survey, Special Report*. (No. NCJ-154348). Washington, DC: Bureau of Justice Statistics, U.S. Department of Justice.
- Berk, R., Berk, S., Loseke, D., & Rauma, D. (1983). Mutual combat and other family victim myths. In D. Finkelhor, D. Gelles, G. Hotaling, & M. Straus (Eds.), *The Dark Side of Families* (pp. 197–212). Beverly Hills: Sage.
- Campbell, J. (1993). *Men, women and aggression*. New York: Basic Books.
- Campbell, J., Snow Jones, A., Dienemann, J., Kub, J., Schollenberger, J., O'Campo, P., Carlson Gielen, A., & Wynne, C. (2002). Intimate partner violence and physical health consequences. *Archives of Internal Medicine*, 162, 1157–1163.
- Campbell, J. C. (2002). Health consequences of intimate partner violence. *The Lancet*, 359, 1331–1336.
- Campbell, J. C., & Lewandowski, L. A. (1997). Mental and physical health effects of intimate partner violence on women and children. *Anger, aggression, and violence*, 20, 353–369.
- Coker, A. L., Smith, P. H., Bethea, L., King, M. R., & McKeown, R. E. (2000). Physical health consequences of physical and psychological intimate partner violence. *Archives of Family Medicine*, 9(451–457).
- Dobash, R., Dobash, R., Wilson, M., & Daly, M. (1992). The myth of sexual symmetry in marital violence. *Social Problems*, 39, 71–91.
- Dutton, D. G., & Painter, S. (1993). Emotional attachments in abusive relationships: A test of traumatic bonding theory. *Violence & Victims*, 8(2), 105–120.
- Dutton, M. A. (1996). Battered women's strategic response to violence: The role of context. In J. L. Edleson & Z. Eisikovits (Eds.), *Future interventions with battered women and their families*. (pp. 105–124). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Dutton, M. A. (2003, October). *Determinants and Social Context of Battered Women's Threat Appraisal*. Paper presented at the International Society for Traumatic Stress Studies, Chicago, IL.
- Dutton, M. A., Goodman, L. A., & Bennett, L. (1999). Court-involved battered women's responses to violence: The role of psychological, physical, and sexual abuse. *Violence & Victims*, 14(1), 89–104.
- Dutton, M. A., Goodman, L. A., Weinfurt, K., & Vankos, N. (2001). *IPV Threat Appraisal*. Paper presented at the Annual Meeting of the International Society for Traumatic Stress Studies, New Orleans, LA.
- Dutton, M. A., Haywood, Y., & El-Bayoumi, G. (1997). Impact of violence on women's health. In *Health care for women: Psychological, social, and behavioral influences*. (pp. 41–56). Washington, DC, US: American Psychological Association.
- Edleson, J. L., & Tolman, R. M. (1992). *Intervention for men who batter: An ecological approach*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Follingstad, D., Wright, S., Lloyd, S., & Sebastian, J. (1991). Sex differences in motivations and effects in dating violence. *Family Relations*, 40, 51–57.
- Follingstad, D. R., Brennan, A. F., Hause, E. S., Polek, D. S., & Rutledge, L. L. (1991). Factors moderating physical and psychological symptoms of battered women. *Journal of Family Violence*, 6, 81–95.
- French, J. R. P., Jr., & Raven, B. (1959). The bases of social power. In *Studies in Social Power*. (pp. 150–167). Oxford, England: University of Michigan, Oxford, England.
- Gelles, R., & Straus, M. (1988). *Intimate violence: The causes and consequences of abuse in the American family*. New York: Touchstone.
- Gold, S. N. (2000). *Not trauma alone: Therapy for child abuse survivors in family and social context*. New York, NY: Brunner-Routledge.
- Gondolf, E. W. (1999). MCMI-III results for batterer program participants in four cities: Less "pathological" than expected. *Journal of Family Violence*, 14(1), 1–17.
- Gondolf, E. W., & Heckert, D. A. (2003). Determinants of women's perceptions of risk in battering relationships. *Violence & Victims*, 18(4), 371–386.
- Goodman, L. A., Dutton, M. A., Weinfurt, K., & Cook, S. (2003). The intimate partner violence strategies index: Development and application. *Violence & Victims*, 9(2), 163–186.
- Hamberger, L. K., Lohr, J. M., Bonge, D., & Tolin, D. F. (1996). A large sample empirical typology of male spouse abusers and its relationship to dimensions of abuse. *Violence & Victims*, 11(4), 277–292.
- Hamberger, L. K., Lohr, J. M., Bonge, D., & Tolin, D. F. (1997). An empirical classification of motivations for domestic violence. *Violence Against Women*, 3(4), 401–423.
- Hass, G. A., Dutton, M. A., & Orloff, L. E. (2000). Lifetime prevalence of violence against Latina immigrants: Legal and policy implications. *International Review of Victimology*, 7(1–3), 93–113.
- Holtzworth-Munroe, A., Smutzler, N., & Bates, L. (1997). A brief review of the research on husband violence. *Aggression and Violent Behavior*, 2(3), 285–307.
- Holtzworth-Munroe, A., Meehan, J. C., Herron, K., Rehman, U., & Stuart, G. L. (2003). Do subtypes of maritally violent men continue to differ over time? *Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology*, 71, 728–740. US: American Psychological Assn, US, <http://www.apa.org>.
- Holtzworth-Munroe, A., Rehman, U., & Herron, K. (2000). General and spouse-specific anger and hostility in subtypes of maritally violent men and nonviolent men. *Behavior Therapy*, 31(4), 603–630.
- Hudek-Knezevic, J., & Kardum, I. (2000). The effects of dispositional and situational coping, perceived social support, and cognitive appraisal on immediate outcome. *European Journal of Psychological Assessment*, 16(3), 190–201.

- Johnson, M. (1995). Patriarchal terrorism and common couple violence: Two forms of violence against women. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 57, 283-294.
- Johnson, M. P., & Ferraro, K. J. (2000). Research on domestic violence in the 1990s: Making distinctions. *Journal of Marriage & the Family*, 62(4), 948-963.
- Kilpatrick, D. G., Acienro, R., Resnick, H. S., Saunders, B. E., & Best, C. L. (1997). A 2-year longitudinal analysis of the relationships between violent assault and substance use in women. *Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology*, 65(5), 834-847.
- Lazarus, R. S. (1999). *Stress and emotion: A new synthesis*. New York, NY: Springer.
- Lobel, T. E., & Gilat, I. (1998). The relationship between perceived probability of personal harm and distressful reactions during the Gulf War. *International Journal of Stress Management*, 5(2), 93-102.
- Loewenstein, G. F., Weber, E. U., Hsee, C. K., & Welch, N. (2001). Risk as feelings. *Psychological Bulletin*, 127(2), 267-286.
- Mechanic, M. B., Weaver, T. L., & Resick, P. A. (2000). Intimate partner violence and stalking behavior: Exploration of patterns and correlates in a sample of acutely battered women. *Violence & Victims*, 15, 55-72. US: Springer Publishing, <http://www.springerpub.com>.
- Molidor, C., & Tolman, R. (1998). Gender and contextual factors in adolescent dating violence. *Violence Against Women*, 4(2), 180-194.
- Molm, L. D. (1997). *Coercive poser in social exchange*. Cambridge, United Kingdom: Cambridge University Press.
- O'Leary, D. (2000). Are women really more aggressive than men in intimate relationships: Comment on Archer. *Psychological Bulletin*, 126, 685-689.
- O'Leary, K. D., Malone, J., & Tyree, A. (1994). Physical aggression in early marriage: Prerelationship and relationship effects. *Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology*, 62(3), 594-602.
- Piotrkowski, C. S., & Brannen, S. J. (2002). Exposure, threat appraisal, and lost confidence as predictors of PTSD symptoms following September 11, 2001. *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 72(4), 476-485.
- Raven, B. H. (1992). A power/interaction model of interpersonal influence: French and Raven thirty years later. *Journal of Social Behavior & Personality*, 7(2), 217-244.
- Raven, B. H. (1993). The bases of power: Origins and recent developments. *Journal of Social Psychology*, 49(4), 227-251.
- Riger, S., Ahrens, C., & Blickenstaff, A. (2001). Measuring interference with employment and education reported by women with abusive partners: Preliminary data. In *Psychological Abuse in Violent Domestic Relations*. (pp. 119-133). New York, NY: Springer, <http://www.springerpub.com>.
- Rusbult, C. E., Olsen, N., Davis, J. L., & Hannon, P. A. (2001). Commitment and relationship maintenance mechanisms. In *Close Romantic Relationships: Maintenance and Enhancement*. (pp. 87-113). Mahwah, NJ, US: Erlbaum.
- Stein, M. B., & Kennedy, C. (2001). Major depressive and post-traumatic stress disorder comorbidity in female victims of intimate partner violence. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 66(2, 3), 133-138.
- Tolman, R. (1989). The development of a measure of psychological maltreatment of women by their male partners. *Violence and Victims*, 4, 173-189.
- Tolman, R. (1999). The validation of the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory. *Violence and Victims*, 14, 25-37.
- Walsh, F. (1982). *Normal family processes*. New York, NY, US: Guilford.
- Zlotnick, C., Kohn, R., Peterson, J., & Pearlstein, R. (1998). Partner physical victimization in a national sample of American families. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 13(1), 156-166.

**Queries to Author:**

- A1: Au: Please provide key words of this article.  
A2: Au: Please include this reference in the reference list.